



OpenEnglish**Bible**
New Testament

Open English Bible.
Built Thursday, 30 August 2012.
Version: OEB-NT-Current-US

TABLE OF CONTENTS

1	Matthew	5
2	Mark	59
3	Luke	95
4	John	157
5	Acts	205
6	Romans	267
7	1 Corinthians	293
8	2 Corinthians	317
9	Galatians	335
10	Ephesians	345
11	Philippians	355
12	Colossians	361
13	1 Thessalonians	369
14	2 Thessalonians	375
15	1 Timothy	379
16	2 Timothy	387
17	Titus	393
18	Philemon	397
19	Hebrews	399
20	James	421
21	1 Peter	429
22	2 Peter	437

23	1 John	443
24	2 John	451
25	3 John	453
26	Jude	455
27	Revelation	459

THE GOOD NEWS ACCORDING TO MATTHEW

The Birth, Parentage and Infancy

A GENEALOGY OF JESUS CHRIST, a descendant of David and Abraham. Abraham was the father of Isaac, Isaac of Jacob, Jacob of Judah and his brothers, Judah of Perez and Zerah, whose mother was Tamar, Perez of Hezron, Hezron of Ram, Ram of Amminadab, Amminadab of Nashon, Nashon of Salmon, Salmon of Boaz, whose mother was Rahab, Boaz of Obed, whose mother was Ruth, Obed of Jesse, Jesse of David the King. David was the father of Solomon, whose mother was Uriah's widow, Solomon of Rehoboam, Rehoboam of Abijah, Abijah of Asa, Asa of Jehoshaphat, Jehoshaphat of Jehoram, Jehoram of Uzziah, Uzziah of Jotham, Jotham of Ahaz, Ahaz of Hezekiah, Hezekiah of Manasseh, Manasseh of Ammon, Ammon of Josiah, Josiah of Jeconiah and his brothers, at the time of the Exile to Babylon. After the Exile to Babylon — Jeconiah was the father of Shealtiel, Shealtiel of Zerubbabel, Zerubbabel of Abiud, Abiud of Eliakim, Eliakim of Azor, Azor of Zadok, Zadok of Achim, Achim of Eliud, Eliud of Eleazar, Eleazar of Matthan, Matthan of Jacob, Jacob of Joseph, the husband of Mary, who was the mother of Jesus, who is called 'Christ'. So the whole number of generations from Abraham to David is fourteen; from David to the Exile to Babylon fourteen; and from the Exile to Babylon to the Christ fourteen.

This is how Jesus Christ was born: 18
His mother Mary was engaged to Joseph, but, before the marriage took place, she found herself to be pregnant by the power of the Holy Spirit. Her husband, Joseph, was a religious man and, since 19
he did not want to disgrace her publicly, he resolved to put an end

20 to their engagement privately. He had been thinking this over, when an angel of the Lord appeared to him in a dream.

“Joseph, son of David,” the angel said, “do not be afraid to take Mary for your wife, for her child has been conceived by the power of the Holy Spirit. She will give birth to a son; name him Jesus, for he will save his people from their sins.”

22 All this happened in fulfillment of these words of the Lord in the prophet, where he says —

23 ‘The virgin will conceive and will give birth to a son, and they will give him the name Immanuel’

24 — a word which means ‘God is with us.’ When Joseph woke up, he did as the angel of the Lord had directed him. He made Mary his wife, but they did not sleep together before the birth of her son; and to this son he gave the name Jesus.

2 After the birth of Jesus at Bethlehem in Judea, in the reign of King Herod, some astrologers from the East arrived in Jerusalem, asking: “Where is the newborn king of the Jews? For we saw his star in the east, and have come to worship him.” When King Herod heard of this, he was much troubled, and so, too, was all Jerusalem. He called together all the chief priests and teachers of the law in the nation, and questioned them as to where the Christ was to be born.

5 “At Bethlehem in Judea,” was their answer; “for it is said in the prophet —

6 ‘And you, Bethlehem in Judah’s land,
are in no way least among the chief cities of Judah;
for out of you will come a ruler —
who will shepherd my people Israel.’”

7 Then Herod secretly sent for the astrologers, and found out from them the date of the appearance of the star; and, sending them to Bethlehem, he said: “Go and make careful inquiries about the child, and, as soon as you have found him, bring me word so that I, too, can go and worship him.” The astrologers heard what the king had to say, and then continued their journey. The star which they had seen in the east led them on, until it reached, and stood over, the place where the child was. At the sight of the star 10 they were filled with joy. Entering the house, they saw the child

with his mother, Mary, and fell at his feet and worshipped him. Then they opened their treasure chests, and offered to the child presents of gold, frankincense, and myrrh. But afterwards, having been warned in a dream not to go back to Herod, they returned to their own country by another road. 12

After they had left, an angel of the Lord appeared to Joseph in a dream, and said: 13

“Get up, take the child and his mother, and seek refuge in Egypt; and stay there until I tell you to return, for Herod is about to search for the child, to put him to death.” Joseph woke up, and taking the child and his mother by night, went into Egypt, and there he stayed until Herod’s death; in fulfillment of these words of the Lord in the prophet, where he says — 14 15

‘Out of Egypt I called my Son.’

When Herod found out that the astrologers had tricked him, he flew into a rage. He sent and put to death all the boys in Bethlehem and the whole of that neighborhood, who were two years old or under, guided by the date which he had learned from the astrologers. Then were fulfilled these words spoken in the prophet Jeremiah, where he says — 16 17

‘A voice was heard in Ramah, 18
weeping and mourning loudly;
Rachel, weeping for her children,
refusing all comfort for they were dead.’

But, on the death of Herod, an angel of the Lord appeared in a dream to Joseph in Egypt, and said: “Get up, take the child and his mother, and go into the Land of Israel, for those who sought to take the child’s life are dead.” He woke up, and taking the child and his mother, went into the Land of Israel. But, hearing that Archelaus had succeeded his father Herod as king of Judea, he was afraid to go back there; and having been warned in a dream, he went into the part of the country called Galilee. There he settled in the town of Nazareth, in fulfillment of these words in the prophets — ‘He will be called a Nazarene.’ 19 20 21 22 23

The Preparation

3 ABOUT THAT TIME JOHN THE BAPTIST FIRST APPEARED, proclaiming in
2 the wilderness of Judea: "Repent, for the kingdom of heaven is
3 at hand." John was the one who was spoken of in the prophet
Isaiah, where he says —

"The voice of one crying aloud in the wilderness:
"Make ready the way of the Lord,
make his paths straight.""

4 John's clothes were made of camels' hair, with a leather strap
5 around his waist, and his food was locusts and wild honey. At
that time Jerusalem, and all Judea, as well as the whole district
6 of the Jordan, went out to him and were baptized by him in the
Jordan River, confessing their sins.

7 But when John saw many of the Pharisees and Sadducees coming
to receive his baptism, he said to them:

"You children of snakes! Who has prompted you to seek refuge
8 from the coming judgment? Let your life, then, prove your re-
9 pentance; and do not think that you can say among yourselves
'Abraham is our ancestor,' for I tell you that out of these stones
10 God is able to raise descendants for Abraham! Already the axe
is lying at the root of the trees. Therefore every tree that fails to
11 bear good fruit will be cut down and thrown into the fire. I, in-
deed, baptize you with water to teach repentance; but he who is
coming after me is more powerful than I, and I am not fit even to
carry his sandals. He will baptize you with the Holy Spirit and
12 with fire. His winnowing-fan is in his hand, and he will clear his
threshing-floor, and store his grain in the barn, but the chaff he
will burn with a fire that cannot be put out."

13 Then Jesus came from Galilee to the Jordan, to John, to be bap-
14 tized by him. But John tried to prevent him.

"I need to be baptized by you," he said, "so why have you come
to me?"

15 "This is the way it should be for now," Jesus answered,
"because we should do everything that God requires." So John
agreed.

16 After the baptism of Jesus, and just as he came up from the
water, the heavens opened, and he saw the Spirit of God coming
17 down like a dove and resting on him, and from the heavens there

came a voice which said: "This is my dearly loved son, who brings me great joy."

Then Jesus was led up into the wilderness by the Spirit to be 4
tempted by the devil. And, after he had fasted for forty days and 2
forty nights, he became hungry. The Tempter came to him, and 3
said:

"If you are God's Son, tell these stones to become loaves of bread."

But Jesus answered: "Scripture says — 4

'It is not on bread alone that a person is to live, but on every word that comes from the mouth of God.'"

Then the devil took him to the Holy City, and, placing him on the 5
parapet of the temple, said to him: "If you are God's Son, throw 6
yourself down, for scripture says —

'He will give his angels commands about you,
and on their hands they will lift you up,
so you do not even strike your foot against a stone.'"

"Scripture also says," answered Jesus, 7

"You must not tempt the Lord your God."

The third time, the devil took Jesus to a very high mountain, and, 8
showing him all the kingdoms of the world and their splendor,
said to him:

"All these I will give you, if you will fall at my feet and 9
worship me."

Then Jesus said to him: "Go away, Satan! For scripture says — 10

'You must worship the Lord your God, and worship him only.'"

Then the devil left him alone, and angels came and helped him. 11

The Work in Galilee

12 WHEN JESUS HEARD THAT JOHN HAD BEEN ARRESTED, he returned to
 13 Galilee. Afterwards, leaving Nazareth, he went and settled at Capernaum, which is by the side of the Sea, within the borders of Zebulun and Naphtali; in fulfillment of these words in the prophet Isaiah —

15 ‘The land of Zebulun and the land of Naphtali,
 the land of the Road by the Sea, and beyond the Jordan,
 with Galilee of the Gentiles —
 16 The people who were living in darkness
 have seen a great light,
 and, for those who were living in the shadow-land of
 death,
 a light has dawned!’

17 At that time Jesus began to proclaim —

 “Repent, for the kingdom of heaven is at hand.”

18 As Jesus was walking along the shore of the Sea of Galilee, he saw two brothers — Simon, also known as Peter, and his brother Andrew — casting a net into the Sea; for they were fishermen.

19 “Come and follow me,” Jesus said, “and I will teach you to fish for people.” The two men left their nets at once and followed him.
 20
 21 Going further on, he saw two other men who were also brothers, James, Zebedee’s son, and his brother John, in their boat with
 22 their father, mending their nets. Jesus called them, and they at once left their boat and their father, and followed him.

23 Jesus went all through Galilee, teaching in their Synagogues, proclaiming the good news of the kingdom, and curing every kind of disease and every kind of sickness among the people; and
 24 his fame spread all through Syria. They brought to him all who were ill with any form of disease, or who were suffering pain — any who were either possessed by demons, or were lunatic, or
 25 paralyzed; and he cured them. He was followed by large crowds from Galilee, the district of the Ten Towns, Jerusalem, Judea, and from beyond the Jordan.

On seeing the crowds of people, Jesus went up the hill; and, 5
when he had taken his seat, his disciples came up to him; and he 2
began to teach them, saying

“Blessed are the poor in spirit, 3
for theirs is the kingdom of heaven.

Blessed are the mourners, 4
for they will be comforted.

Blessed are the gentle, 5
for they will inherit the earth.

Blessed are those who hunger and thirst for righteousness, 6
for they will be satisfied.

Blessed are the merciful, 7
for they will find mercy.

Blessed are the pure in heart, 8
for they will see God.

Blessed are the peacemakers, 9
for they will be called children of God.

Blessed are those who have been persecuted in the cause 10
of righteousness,
for theirs is the kingdom of heaven.

Blessed are you when people insult you, and persecute you, and 11
say all kinds of evil lies about you because of me. Be glad and 12
rejoice, because your reward in heaven will be great; this is the
way they persecuted the prophets who lived before you.

You are salt for the world. But if salt becomes tasteless, how 13
can it be made salty again? It is no longer good for anything, but
is thrown away, and trampled underfoot. It is you who are the 14
light of the world. A town that stands on a hill cannot be hidden.
People do not light a lamp and put it under a basket, but on the 15
lamp-stand, where it gives light to everyone in the house. Let 16
your light so shine before the eyes of others so that, seeing your
good actions, they will praise your Father who is in heaven.

Do not think that I have come to do away with the law or the 17
prophets; I have not come to do away with them, but to complete
them. For I tell you, until the heavens and the earth disappear, not 18
even the smallest letter, nor one stroke of a letter, will disappear
from the law until all is done. Whoever, therefore, breaks one of 19
these commandments, even the least of them, and teaches oth-
ers to do so, will be the least esteemed in the kingdom of heaven;

20 but whoever keeps them, and teaches others to do so, will be esteemed great in the kingdom of heaven. Indeed I tell you that, unless you obey God's commands better than of the teachers of the law, and Pharisees, you will never enter the kingdom of heaven.

21 You have heard that to our ancestors it was said — 'You must not commit murder,' and 'Whoever commits murder will be brought to trial.' But I say to you that anyone who is angry at their brother or sister will be brought to trial; and whoever insults their brother or sister will be brought before the High Council, while whoever calls them a fool will be in danger of the fires of Gehenna. Therefore, when presenting your gift at the altar, if even there you remember that your brother or sister has something against you, leave your gift there, before the altar, go and be reconciled to them, first, then come and present your gift.
22 Be ready to make friends with your opponent, even when you meet them on your way to the court; otherwise they might hand you over to the judge, and the judge to the judicial officer, and you will be thrown into prison. I tell you, you will not come out until you have paid the last cent.

23 You have heard that it was said — 'You must not commit adultery.' But I say to you that anyone who looks at a woman and desires her has already committed adultery with her in his heart.
24 If your right eye causes you to sin, take it out and throw it away. It would be best for you to lose one part of your body, and not to have the whole of it thrown into Gehenna. And, if your right hand causes you to sin, cut it off and throw it away. It would be best for you to lose one part of your body, and not to have the whole of it go down to Gehenna.

25 It was also said — 'Let anyone who divorces his wife serve her with a notice of separation.' But I say to you that anyone who divorces his wife, except on the ground of some serious sexual sin, leads to her committing adultery; while anyone who marries her after her divorce is guilty of adultery. Again, you have heard that our ancestors were told — 'Do not break your oaths, keep your vows to the Lord.' But I say to you that you must not swear at all, either by heaven, since that is God's throne, or by the earth, since that is his footstool, or by Jerusalem, since that is the city of the Great King. Nor should you swear by your head, since you cannot make a single hair either white or black. Let your words

be simply 'Yes' or 'No'; anything beyond this comes from what is evil.

You have heard that it was said — 'An eye for an eye and a tooth for a tooth.' But I say to you that you must not resist those who wrong you; but, if anyone strikes you on the right cheek, turn the other to them also. If someone sues you for your shirt, let them have your cloak as well. If you are forced to carry a soldier's pack for one mile, carry it two. Give to anyone who asks and, if someone wants to borrow from you, do not turn them away.

You have heard that it was said — 'You must love your neighbor and hate your enemy.' But what I tell you is this: love your enemies, and pray for those who persecute you, so that you may become children of your Father who is in heaven; for he causes his sun to rise on bad and good alike, and sends rain on the righteous and on the unrighteous. For, if you love only those who love you, what reward will you have? Even the tax-gatherers do this! And, if you only welcome your brothers and sisters, what are you doing more than others? Even the Gentiles do this! You, then, must become perfect — as your heavenly Father is perfect.

Take care not to perform your religious duties in public in order to be seen by others; if you do, your Father who is in heaven has no reward for you. Therefore, when you do acts of charity, do not have a trumpet blown in front of you, as hypocrites do in the Synagogues and in the streets so that people will praise them. There, I tell you, is their reward! But, when you do acts of charity, do not let your left hand know what your right hand is doing, so that your charity may be secret; and your Father, who sees what is in secret, will reward you.

And, when you pray, you are not to behave as hypocrites do. They like to pray standing in the Synagogues and at the corners of the streets, so that people will see them. There, I tell you, is their reward! But, when one of you prays, let them go into their own room, shut the door, and pray to their Father who dwells in secret; and their Father, who sees what is secret, will reward them. When praying, do not repeat the same words over and over again, as is done by the Gentiles, who think that by using many words they will obtain a hearing. Do not imitate them; for God, your Father, knows what you need before you ask him. You, therefore, should pray like this —

- ‘Our Father, who is in heaven,
may your name be held holy,
10 your kingdom come, your will be done —
on earth, as in heaven.
11 Give us today
the bread that we will need;
12 and forgive us our wrong-doings,
as we have forgiven those who have wronged us;
13 and take us not into temptation,
but deliver us from evil.’
- 14 For, if you forgive others their offenses, your heavenly Father will
15 forgive you also; but, if you do not forgive others their offenses,
not even your Father will forgive your offenses.
- 16 And, when you fast, do not put on gloomy looks, as hypocrites
do who disfigure their faces so that they may be seen by people
17 to be fasting. That, I tell you, is their reward! But, when one of
18 you fasts, let them anoint their head and wash their face, so that
they may not be seen by people to be fasting, but by their Father
who dwells in secret; and their Father, who sees what is secret,
will reward them.
- 19 Do not store up treasures for yourselves on earth, where moth
20 and rust destroy, and where thieves break in and steal. But store
up treasures for yourselves in heaven, where neither moth nor
21 rust destroys, and where thieves do not break in or steal. For
22 where your treasure is, there will your heart be also. The lamp
of the body is the eye. If your eye is unclouded, your whole body
23 will be lit up; but, if your eye is diseased, your whole body will
be darkened. And, if the inner light is darkness, how intense must
24 that darkness be! No one can serve two masters, for either they
will hate one and love the other, or else they will attach them-
selves to one and despise the other. You cannot serve both God
and Money.
- 25 This is why I say to you: Do not be anxious about your life —
what you can get to eat or drink, or about your body — what you
can get to wear. Is not life more than food, and the body more than
26 clothing? Look at the wild birds — they neither sow, nor reap,
nor gather into barns; and yet your heavenly Father feeds them!
27 Aren’t you more precious than they? But which of you, by being
28 anxious, can prolong their life a single moment? And why be

anxious about clothing? Study the wild lilies, and how they grow. They neither toil nor spin; yet I tell you that even Solomon in all his splendor was not robed like one of these. If God so clothes even the grass of the field, which is living today and tomorrow will be thrown into the oven, will not he much more clothe you, you of little faith? Do not then ask anxiously 'What can we get to eat?' or 'What can we get to drink?' or 'What can we get to wear?' All these are the things for which the nations are seeking, and your heavenly Father knows that you need them all. But first seek his kingdom and the righteousness that he requires, and then all these things will be added for you. Therefore do not be anxious about tomorrow, for tomorrow will bring its own anxieties. Every day has trouble enough of its own.

Do not judge and you will not be judged. For, just as you judge others, you will yourselves be judged, and the standard that you use will be used for you. Why do you look at the speck of sawdust in your friend's eye, while you pay no attention at all to the plank of wood in yours? How will you say to your friend 'Let me take out the speck from your eye,' when all the time there is a plank in your own? Hypocrite! Take out the plank from your own eye first, and then you will see clearly how to take out the speck from your friend's.

Do not give what is sacred to dogs; they will turn and maul you. Do not throw your pearls before pigs; they will trample them underfoot. Ask, and it will be given to you; search, and you will find; knock, and the door will be opened to you. For the person who asks receives, the person who searches finds, and to the door will be opened to the person who knocks. Who among you, when their child asks them for bread, will give them a stone, or when they ask for a fish, will give them a snake? If you, then, wicked though you are, know how to give good gifts to your children, how much more will your Father who is in heaven give what is good to those who ask him!

Do to others whatever you would wish them to do to you; for that is the teaching of both the law and the prophets. Go in by the small gate. Broad and spacious is the road who leads to destruction, and those that go in by it are many; for small is the gate, and narrow the road, who leads to life, and those that find it are few.

Beware of false teachers — people who come to you in the guise of sheep, but at heart they are ravenous wolves. By the fruit of

17 their lives you will know them. Do people pick grapes from thorn
18 bushes, or figs from thistles? So, too, every sound tree bears good
19 fruit, while a worthless tree bears bad fruit. A sound tree cannot
20 produce bad fruit, nor can a worthless tree bear good fruit. Every
21 tree that fails to bear good fruit is cut down and thrown into the
22 fire. So it is by the fruit of their lives that you will know such peo-
23 ple. Not everyone who says to me 'Master! Master!' will enter the
24 kingdom of heaven, but only he who does the will of my Father
25 who is in heaven. On 'that day' many will say to me 'Master, Mas-
26 ter, was not it in your name that we taught, and in your name that
27 we drove out demons, and in your name that we did many mira-
28 cles?' And then I will say to them plainly 'I never knew you. Go
29 from my presence, you who live in sin.'

24 Everyone, therefore, who listens to this teaching of mine and
25 acts on it may be compared to a prudent person, who built their
26 house on the rock. The rain poured down, the rivers rose, the
27 winds blew and beat on that house, but it did not fall, for its founda-
28 tions were on the rock. Everyone who listens to this teaching
29 of mine and does not act on it may be compared to a foolish per-
30 son, who built their house on the sand. The rain poured down,
31 the rivers rose, the winds blew and struck against that house, and
32 it fell; and great was its downfall."

28 By the time that Jesus had finished speaking, the crowd was
29 filled with amazement at his teaching. For he taught them like
30 one who had authority, and not like their teachers of the law.

8 When Jesus had come down from the hill, great crowds
2 followed him. He saw a leper who came up, and bowed to the
3 ground before him, and said: "Master, if only you are willing,
4 you are able to make me clean." Stretching out his hand, Jesus
5 touched him, saying as he did so: "I am willing; become clean."
6 Instantly he was made clean from his leprosy; and then Jesus
7 said to him: "Be careful not to say a word to anyone, but go and
8 show yourself to the priest, and offer the gift directed by Moses,
9 as evidence of your cure." After Jesus had entered Capernaum,
10 a captain in the Roman army came up to him, entreating his
11 help. "Sir," he said, "my manservant is lying ill at my house
12 with a stroke of paralysis, and is suffering terribly."

"I will come and cure him," answered Jesus. "Sir," the captain 7
 went on, "I am unworthy to receive you under my roof; but only 8
 speak, and my manservant will be cured. For I myself am a man 9
 under the orders of others, with soldiers under me; and, if I say to
 one of them 'Go,' he goes, and to another 'Come,' he comes, and
 to my slave 'Do this,' he does it." Jesus was surprised to hear this, 10
 and said to those who were following him: "Never I tell you, in
 any Israelite have I met with such faith as this! Yes, and many will 11
 come in from East and West and take their places beside Abra-
 ham, Isaac, and Jacob, in the kingdom of heaven; while the heirs 12
 to the kingdom will be 'banished into the darkness' outside; there,
 there will be weeping and grinding of teeth." Then Jesus said to 13
 the captain: "Go now, and it will be according to your faith." And
 the man was cured that very hour.

When Jesus went into Peter's house, he saw Peter's 14
 mother-in-law prostrated with fever. On his taking her hand, 15
 the fever left her, and she rose and began to take care of him. In 16
 the evening the people brought to Jesus many who were
 possessed by demons; and he drove out the spirits with a word,
 and cured all who were ill, in fulfillment of these words in the 17
 prophet Isaiah — 'He took our infirmities on himself, and bore
 the burden of our diseases.'

Seeing a crowd around him, Jesus gave orders to go across. 18
 A teacher of the law came up to him, and said: "Teacher, I will 19
 follow you wherever you go."

"Foxes have holes," answered Jesus, "and wild birds their 20
 nests, but the Son of Man has nowhere to lay his head."
 "Master," said another, who was a disciple, "let me first go and 21
 bury my father." But Jesus answered: "Follow me, and leave the 22
 dead to bury their dead." Then he got into the boat, followed by 23
 his disciples. Suddenly so great a storm came up on the Sea, 24
 that the waves broke right over the boat. But Jesus was asleep;
 and the disciples came and roused him. "Master," they cried, 25
 "save us; we are lost!"

"Why are you so timid?" he said. "You of little faith!" Then 26
 Jesus rose and rebuked the winds and the sea, and a great calm
 followed. The men were amazed, and exclaimed: "What kind of 27
 man is this, that even the winds and the sea obey him!"

On getting to the other side — the country of the Gadarenes — 28
 Jesus met two men who were possessed by demons, coming out

of the tombs. They were so violent that no one was able to pass
29 that way. Suddenly they shrieked out: "What do you want with
us, Son of God? Have you come here to torment us before our
30 time?" A long way off, there was a drove of many pigs, feeding;
31 and the foul spirits began begging Jesus: "If you drive us out,
send us into the drove of pigs."

32 "Go," he said. The spirits came out, and entered the pigs; and
the whole drove rushed down the steep slope into the Sea, and
33 died in the water. At this the men who tended them ran away
and went to the town, carrying the news of all that had occurred,
34 and of what had happened to the possessed men. At the news
the whole town went out to meet Jesus, and, when they saw him,
they entreated him to go away from their neighborhood.

9 Afterwards Jesus got into a boat, and, crossing over, came
2 to his own city. There some people brought to him a paralyzed
man on a bed. When Jesus saw their faith, he said to the man:
3 "Courage, child! Your sins are forgiven." Then some of the teach-
ers of the law said to themselves: "This man is blaspheming!"
4 Knowing their thoughts, Jesus exclaimed: "Why do you cherish
5 such wicked thoughts? Which, I ask, is the easier? — to say 'Your
6 sins are forgiven'? Or to say 'Get up, and walk'? But to show you
that the Son of Man has power on earth to forgive sins" — then he
7 said to the paralyzed man — "Get up, take up your bed, and re-
turn to your home." The man got up and went to his home. When
8 the crowd saw this, they were awe-struck, and praised God for
giving such power to human beings.

9 As Jesus went along, he saw a man, called Matthew, sitting in
the tax office, and said to him: "Follow me." Matthew got up and
followed him.

10 And, later on, when he was having dinner in the house, a num-
ber of tax-gatherers and outcasts came in and took their places at
11 the table with Jesus and his disciples. When the Pharisees saw
this, they said to his disciples: "Why does your teacher eat in the
12 company of tax-gatherers and outcasts?" On hearing this, Jesus
said: "It is not those who are healthy who need a doctor, but those
13 who are ill. Go and learn what this means — 'I desire mercy, and
not sacrifice'; for I did not come to call the religious, but the out-
14 cast." Then John's disciples came to Jesus, and asked: "Why do
15 we and the Pharisees fast while your disciples do not?" Jesus an-
swered: "Can the groom's friends mourn as long as the groom is

with them? But the days will come, when the groom will be taken away from them, and they will fast then. Nobody ever puts a piece of unshrunk cloth on an old garment; for such a patch tears away from the garment, and a worse tear is made. Nor do people put new wine into old wine-skins; for, if they do, the skins burst, and the wine runs out, and the skins are lost; but they put new wine into fresh skins, and so both are preserved.”

While Jesus was saying this, a synagogue leader came up and bowed to the ground before him. “My daughter,” he said, “Has just died; but come and place your hand on her, and she will be restored to life.” So Jesus rose and followed him, and his disciples went also. But meanwhile a woman, who had been suffering from hemorrhage for twelve years, came up behind and touched the tassel of his cloak. “If I only touch his cloak,” she said to herself, “I will get well.” Turning and seeing her, Jesus said: “Courage, daughter! Your faith has delivered you.” And at that very moment she became well. When Jesus reached the leader’s house, seeing the flute players, and a number of people all in confusion, he said: “Go away, the little girl is not dead; she is asleep.” They began to laugh at him; but, when the people had been sent out, Jesus went in, and took the little girl’s hand, and she rose. The report of this spread through all that part of the country.

As Jesus was passing on from there, he was followed by two blind men, who kept calling out: “Take pity on us, Son of David!” When he had gone indoors, the blind men came up to him; and Jesus asked them: “Do you believe that I am able to do this?” “Yes, Master!” they answered. Then he touched their eyes, and said: “It will be according to your faith.” Then their eyes were opened. Jesus sternly cautioned them. “See that no one knows of it,” he said. But the men went out, and spread the news about him through all that part of the country. Just as they were going out, some people brought up to Jesus a dumb man who was possessed by a demon; and, as soon as the demon had been driven out, the dumb man spoke. The people were astonished at this, and exclaimed: “Nothing like this has ever been seen in Israel!” But the Pharisees said: “He drives out the demons by the help of the chief of the demons.”

Jesus went around all the towns and the villages, teaching in their Synagogues, proclaiming the good news of the kingdom, and curing every kind of disease and every kind of sickness. But,

36 when he saw the crowds, his heart was moved with compassion
37 for them, because they were distressed and harassed, 'like sheep
38 without a shepherd'; and he said to his disciples: "The harvest is
abundant, but the laborers are few. Therefore pray to the owner
of the harvest to send laborers to gather in his harvest."

10 Calling his twelve Disciples to him, Jesus gave them author-
ity over foul spirits, so that they could drive them out, as well
as the power of curing every kind of disease and every kind of
2 sickness. The names of the twelve apostles are these: First Si-
3 mon, also known as Peter, and his brother Andrew; James the
4 son of Zebedee, and his brother John; Philip and Bartholomew;
Thomas and Matthew the tax-gather; James the son of Alphaeus,
and Thaddaeus; Simon the Zealot, and Judas Iscariot — the apos-
tle who betrayed him.

5 These twelve Jesus sent out as his messengers, after giving
them these instructions — "Do not go to the Gentiles, nor enter
6 any Samaritan town, but make your way rather to the lost sheep
7 of Israel. On your way proclaim that the kingdom of heaven is
8 at hand. Cure the sick, raise the dead, make the lepers clean,
drive out demons. You have received free of cost, give free of cost.
9 Do not provide yourselves with gold, or silver, or coins in your
10 purses; not even with a bag for the journey, or a change of clothes,
or sandals, or even a staff; for the worker is worth his food. What-
11 ever town or village you visit, find out who is worthy in that
12 place, and remain there until you leave. As you enter the house,
13 greet it. Then, if the house is worthy, let your blessing rest on it,
14 but, if it is unworthy, let your blessing return on yourselves. If
no one welcomes you, or listens to what you say, as you leave that
15 house or that town, shake off its dust from your feet. I tell you, the
doom of the land of Sodom and Gomorrah will be more bearable
in the 'day of judgment' than the doom of that town.

16 Remember, I am sending you out as my messengers like sheep
among wolves. So be as wise as snakes, and as blameless as doves.
17 Be on your guard against others, for they will betray you to courts
18 of law, and scourge you in their Synagogues; and you will be
brought before governors and kings for my sake so that you may
19 witness for me before them and the nations. Whenever they be-
tray you, do not be anxious as to how you will speak or what you
will say, for what you will say will be given you at the moment;
20 for it will not be you who speak, but the Spirit of your Father that

speaks within you. Brother will betray brother to death, and the father his child; and children will turn against their parents, and cause them to be put to death; and you will be hated by everyone because of me. Yet the person who endures to the end will be saved. But, when they persecute you in one town, escape to the next; for, I tell you, you will not have come to the end of the towns of Israel before the Son of Man comes. A scholar is not above his teacher, nor a servant above his master. It is enough for a scholar to be treated like his teacher, and a servant like his master. If the head of the house has been called Beelzebul, how much more the members of his household! Do not, therefore, be afraid of them. There is nothing concealed which will not be revealed, nor anything hidden which will not become known. What I tell you in the dark, say again in the light; and what is whispered in your ear, proclaim on the housetops. Do not be afraid of those who kill the body, but are unable to kill the soul; rather be afraid of him who is able to destroy both soul and body in Gehenna. Are not two sparrows sold for a one copper coin? Yet not one of them will fall to the ground without your Father's knowledge. While as for you, even the hairs of your head are numbered. Do not, therefore, be afraid; you are of more value than many sparrows. Everyone, therefore, who will publicly acknowledge me, I, too, will acknowledge before my Father who is in heaven; but, if anyone publicly disowns me, I, too, will disown him before my Father who is in heaven.

Do not imagine that I have come to bring peace to the earth. I have come to bring, not peace, but the sword. For I have come to set — 'a man against his father, and a daughter against her mother, and a daughter-in-law against her mother-in-law. A person's enemies will be the members of their own household.' Anyone who loves father or mother more than me is not worthy of me; and anyone who loves son or daughter more than me is not worthy of me. Anyone who does not take their cross and follow in my steps is not worthy of me. The person who has found their life will lose it, while the person who, for my sake, has lost their life will find it.

Anyone who welcomes you is welcoming me; and anyone who welcomes me is welcoming him who sent me as his messenger. The person who welcomes a prophet, because they are a prophet, will receive a prophet's reward; and anyone who

42 welcomes a good person, because they are a good person, will
receive a good person's reward. And, if anyone gives but a cup
of cold water to one of these little ones because they are a
disciple, I tell you that they will assuredly not lose their reward."

11 After Jesus had finished giving directions to his twelve Disciples, he left that place in order to teach and preach in their towns.

2 Now John had heard in prison what the Christ was doing, and
3 he sent a message by his disciples, and asked — "Are you 'the
4 coming one,' or are we to look for someone else?" The answer
of Jesus to the question was — "Go and report to John what you
5 hear and see — the blind recover their sight and the lame walk,
the lepers are made clean and the deaf hear, the dead, too, are
6 raised to life, and the good news is told to the poor. Blessed is the
person who finds no hindrance in me."

7 While John's disciples were going back, Jesus began to say to
8 the crowds with reference to John: "What did you go out into the
wilderness to look at? A reed waving in the wind? If not, what did
you go out to see? A man richly dressed? Why, those who wear
9 rich things are to be found in the courts of kings! What, then, did
you go for? To see a prophet? Yes, I tell you, and far more than a
10 prophet. This is the man of whom scripture says — 'I am sending
my messenger ahead of you, and he will prepare your way before
11 you.' I tell you, no one born of a woman has yet appeared who
is greater than John the Baptist; and yet the least in the kingdom
12 of heaven is greater than he. From the time of John the Baptist
to this very hour, the kingdom of heaven has been taken by force,
13 and people using force have been seizing it. For the teaching of all
the prophets and of the law continued until the time of John; and
14 — if you are ready to accept it — John is himself the Elijah who
was destined to come. Let him who has ears hear. But to what will
15 I compare the present generation? It is like little children sitting in
the market-places and calling out to their playmates — 'We have
16 played the flute for you, but you have not danced; We have wailed,
17 but you have not mourned.' For, when John came, neither eating
nor drinking, people said 'He has a demon in him'; and now that
18 the Son of Man has come, eating and drinking, they are saying
'Here is a glutton and a wine-drinker, a friend of tax-gatherers
19 and outcasts!' And yet wisdom is vindicated by her actions."

20 Then Jesus began to reproach the towns in which most of his
21 miracles had been done, because they had not repented: "Alas for

you, Chorazin! Alas for you, Bethsaida! For, if the miracles which were done in you had been done in Tyre and Sidon, they would have repented long ago in sackcloth and ashes. Yet, I tell you, the doom of Tyre and Sidon will be more bearable in the 'day of judgment' than yours. And you, Capernaum! Will you 'exalt yourself to heaven'? 'You will go down to the place of death.' For, if the miracles which have been done in you had been done in Sodom, it would have been standing to this day. Yet, I tell you, the doom of Sodom will be more bearable in the 'day of judgment' than yours." At that same time Jesus uttered the words: "I thank you, Father, Lord of heaven and earth, that, though you have hidden these things from the wise and learned, you have revealed them to the child-like! Yes, Father, I thank you that this has seemed good to you. Everything has been committed to me by my Father; nor does anyone fully know the Son, except the Father, or fully know the Father, except the Son and those to whom the Son may choose to reveal him. Come to me, all you who toil and are burdened, and I will give you rest! Take my yoke on you, and learn from me, for I am gentle and humble, and 'you will find rest for your souls'; for my yoke is easy, and my burden is light."

About the same time Jesus walked through the cornfields one Sabbath. His disciples were hungry, and began to pick some ears of wheat and eat them. But, when the Pharisees saw this, they said: "Look! Your disciples are doing what it is not allowable to do on a Sabbath!"

"Haven't you read," replied Jesus, "what David did, when he and his companions were hungry — how he went into the house of God, and how they ate the consecrated bread, through it was not allowable for him or his companions to eat it, but only for the priests? And haven't you read in the law that, on the Sabbath, the priest in the Temple break the Sabbath and yet are not guilty? Here, however, I tell you, there is something greater than the Temple! Had you learned the meaning of the words — 'I desire mercy, and not sacrifice,' you would not have condemned those who are not guilty. For the Son of Man is lord of the Sabbath."

Passing on, Jesus went into their synagogue, and there he saw a man with a withered hand. Some people asked Jesus whether it was allowable to work a cure on the Sabbath — so that they might have a charge to bring against him. But Jesus said to them: "Which of you, if he had only one sheep, and that sheep fell into

a pit on the Sabbath, would not lay hold of it and pull it out? How
12 much more precious a person is than a sheep! Therefore it is al-
13 lowable to do good on the Sabbath." Then he said to the man.
"Stretch out your hand." The man stretched it out; and it had be-
14 come as sound as the other. On coming out, the Pharisees plotted
against Jesus, to put him to death.

15 Jesus, however, became aware of it, and went away from that
place. A number of people followed him, and he cured them all;
16 but he warned them not to make him known, in fulfillment of
18 these words in the prophet Isaiah — 'Here is my chosen servant,
who I love and who pleases me! I will breathe my spirit on him,
19 and he will announce a time of judgment to the Gentiles. He will
not contend, nor cry aloud, Neither will anyone hear his voice in
20 the streets; a bruised reed he will not break, and a smoldering
wick he will not quench, until he has brought the judgment to
21 a victorious issue, and on his name will the Gentiles rest their
hopes."

22 Then some people brought to Jesus a possessed man, who was
blind and dumb; and he cured him, so that the man who had
23 been dumb both talked and saw. At this all the people were as-
tounded. "Is it possible that this is the son of David?" they ex-
24 claimed. But the Pharisees heard of it and said: "He drives out
demons only by the help of Beelzebul the chief of the demons."
25 Jesus, however, was aware of what was passing in their minds,
and said to them: "Any kingdom divided against itself becomes
a desolation, and any town or household divided against itself
26 will not last. So, if Satan drives Satan out, he must be divided
27 against himself; and how, then, can his kingdom last? And, if it
is by Beelzebul's help that I drive out demons, by whose help is
it that your own sons drive them out? Therefore they will them-
28 selves be your judges. But, if it is by the help of the Spirit of God
that I drive out demons, then the kingdom of God must already
29 be upon you. How, again, can anyone get into a strong man's
house and carry off his goods, without first securing him? Not
30 until then will he plunder his house. Anyone who is not with me
is against me, and the person who does not help me to gather is
31 scattering. Therefore, I tell you, people will be forgiven every sin
and slander; but slander against the Holy Spirit will not be for-
32 given. Whoever speaks against the Son of Man will be forgiven,

but whoever speaks against the Holy Spirit will not be forgiven, either in the present age, or in the age to come.

You must assume either that both tree and fruit are good, or that both tree and fruit are worthless; since it is by its fruits that a tree is known. You children of snakes! How can you, evil as you are, say anything good? For what fills the heart will rise to the lips. A good person, from his good stores, produces good things; while an evil person, from his evil stores, produces evil things. I tell you that for every careless thing that people say, they must answer on the 'day of judgment.' For it is by your words that you will be acquitted, and by your words that you will be condemned."

At this point, some teachers of the law and Pharisees spoke up. "Teacher," they said, "we want to see some sign from you."

"It is a wicked and unfaithful generation," answered Jesus, "that is asking for a sign, and no sign will be given it except the sign of the prophet Jonah. For, just as 'Jonah was inside the sea-monster three days and three nights,' so will the Son of Man be three days and three nights in the heart of the earth. At the judgment, the people of Nineveh will stand up with this generation, and will condemn it, because they repented at Jonah's proclamation; and here is more than a Jonah! At the judgment the Queen of the South will rise up with the present generation, and will condemn it, because she came from the ends of the earth to listen to the wisdom of Solomon; and here is more than a Solomon! No sooner does a foul spirit leave a person, than it passes through places where there is no water, in search of rest, and does not find it. Then it says 'I will go back to the home which I left'; but, on coming there, it finds it unoccupied, and swept, and put in order. Then it goes and brings with it seven other spirits more wicked than itself, and they go in, and make their home there; and the last state of that man proves to be worse than the first. So, too, will it be with this wicked generation."

While he was still speaking to the crowds, his mother and brothers were standing outside, asking to speak to him. Someone told him this, and Jesus replied: "Who is my mother? And who are my brothers?" Then, stretching out his hands towards his disciples, he said: "Here are my mother and my brothers! For

50 anyone who does the will of my Father who is in heaven is my brother and sister and mother."

13 That same day, when Jesus had left the house and was sitting
 2 by the Sea, such great crowds gathered around him, that he got
 into a boat, and sat in it, while all the people stood on the beach.
 3 Then he told them many truths in parables. "The sower," he be-
 4 gan, "went out to sow; and, as they were sowing, some seed fell
 5 along the path, and the birds came and ate it up. Some fell on
 rocky places, where it had not much soil, and, because the soil
 6 wasn't deep, sprang up at once. As soon as the sun had risen,
 it was scorched, and, because their roots were not deep enough,
 7 withered away. Some, again, fell into the brambles; but the bram-
 8 bles shot up and choked it. Some, however, fell on good soil, and
 yielded a return, sometimes one hundred, sometimes sixty, some-
 9 times thirty fold. Let those who have ears hear."

10 Afterwards his disciples came to him, and said: "Why do you speak to them in parables?"

11 "To you," answered Jesus, "the knowledge of the hidden truths of the kingdom of heaven has been imparted, but not to those. For,
 12 to all who have, more will be given, and they will have abundance; but, from all who have nothing, even what they have will
 13 be taken away. That is why I speak to them in parables, because, though they have eyes, they do not see, and though they have
 14 ears, they do not hear or understand. In them is being fulfilled that prophecy of Isaiah which says —

'You will hear with your ears without ever understanding,
 and, though you have eyes, you will see without ever perceiving,

15 for the mind of this nation has grown dense,
 and their ears are dull of hearing,
 their eyes also have they closed;

Otherwise some day they might perceive with their eyes,
 and with their ears they might hear,
 and in their mind they might understand,
 and might turn —

and I might heal them.'

16 But blessed are your eyes, for they see, and your ears, for they
 17 hear; for I tell you that many prophets and good people have longed for the sight of the things which you are seeing, yet never

saw them, and to hear the things which you are hearing, yet never heard them.

Listen, then, yourselves to the parable of the sower. When any- 18
one hears the message of the kingdom without understanding it, 19
the evil one comes and snatches away what has been sown in their
mind. This is the person meant by the seed which was sown along
the path. By the seed which was sown on rocky places is meant 20
the person who hears the message, and at once accepts it joyfully;
but, as they have no root, they stand for only a short time; and, 21
when trouble or persecution arises because of the message, they
fall away at once. By the seed which was sown among the bram- 22
bles is meant the person who hears the message, but the cares of
life and the glamour of wealth completely choke the message, so
that it gives no return. But by the seed which was sown on the 23
good ground is meant the person who hears the message and un-
derstands it, and really yields a return, sometimes one hundred,
sometimes sixty, sometimes thirty fold."

Another parable which Jesus told them was this — "The king- 24
dom of heaven is compared to a person who sowed good seed in
their field. But, while everyone was asleep, their enemy came and 25
sowed weeds among the wheat, and then went away. So, when 26
the blades of corn shot up, and came into ear, the weeds made
their appearance also. The owner's servants came to them, and 27
said 'Was not it good seed that you sowed in your field? Where,
then, do the weeds in it come from?' 'An enemy has done this,' 28
was the owner's answer. 'Do you wish us, then,' they asked, 'to
go and gather them together?' 'No,' said he, 'because while you 29
are pulling up the weeds you might uproot the wheat with them.
Let both grow side by side until harvest; and then I will say to the 30
reapers, Gather the weeds together first, and tie them in bundles
for burning; but bring all the wheat into my barn.'"

Another parable which he told them was this — "The kingdom 31
of heaven is like a mustard seed, which a person took and sowed
in his field. This seed is smaller than all other seeds, but, when 32
it has grown up, it is larger than the herbs and becomes a tree, so
that 'the wild birds come and roost in its branches.'"

This was another parable which Jesus related — "The kingdom 33
of heaven is like some yeast which a woman took and covered up
in three pecks of flour, until the whole had risen." Of all this Jesus 34
spoke to the crowd in parables; indeed to them he used never to

35 speak at all except in parables, in fulfillment of these words in
the prophet — ‘I will speak to them in parables; I will utter things
kept secret since the foundation of the world.’

36 Then Jesus left the crowd, and went into the house. Presently
his disciples came to him, and said: “Explain to us the parable of
37 the weeds in the field.” He answered: “The sower of the good
38 seed is the Son of Man. The field is the world. By the good seed
is meant the people of the kingdom. The weeds are the wicked,
39 and the enemy who sowed them is the devil. The harvest time
40 is the close of the age, and the reapers are angels. And, just as
the weeds are gathered and burnt, so it will be at the close of the
41 age. The Son of Man will send his angels, and they will gather
from his kingdom all that hinders and those who live in sin, and
42 ‘will throw them into the blazing furnace,’ where there will be
43 weeping and grinding of teeth. Then will the righteous shine,
like the sun, in the kingdom of their Father. Let him who has ears
hear.

44 The kingdom of heaven is like a treasure hidden in a field,
which a person found and hid again, and then, in their delight,
went and sold everything that they had, and bought that field.

45 Again, the kingdom of heaven is like a merchant in search of
46 choice pearls. Finding one of great value, they went and sold
47 everything that they had, and bought it. Or again, the kingdom
of heaven is like a net which was cast into the sea, and caught
48 fish of all kinds. When it was full, they hauled it up on the beach,
and sat down and sorted the good fish into baskets, but threw the
49 worthless ones away. So will it be at the close of the age. The an-
gels will go out and separate the wicked from the righteous, and
50 ‘will throw them into the blazing furnace,’ where there will be
weeping and grinding of teeth.

51 Have you understood all this?” Jesus asked. “Yes,” they an-
52 swered. Then he added: “So every teacher of the law, who has
received instruction about the kingdom of heaven, is like a house-
holder who produces from his stores things both new and old.”

53 When Jesus had finished these parables, he withdrew from that
54 place. Going to his own part of the country, he taught the peo-
ple in their synagogue in such a manner that they were deeply
impressed. “Where did he get this wisdom?” they said, “and the
55 miracles? Is not he the carpenter’s son? Is not his mother called
Mary, and his brothers James, and Joseph, and Simon, and Judas?

And his sisters, too — are not they all living among us? Where, 56
 then did he get all this?" These things proved a hindrance to their 57
 believing in him. But Jesus said: "A prophet is not without honor,
 except in his own country and in his own house." He did not 58
 work many miracles there, because of their want of faith.

At that time Prince Herod heard of the fame of Jesus, and 14
 said to his attendants: "This must be John the Baptist; he must 2
 be risen from the dead, and that is why these miraculous pow-
 ers are active in him." For Herod had arrested John, put him in 3
 chains, and shut him up in prison, to please Herodias, the wife
 of Herod's brother Philip. For John had said to him 'You have 4
 no right to be living with her.' Yet, though Herod wanted to put 5
 him to death, he was afraid of the people, because they looked on
 John as a prophet. But, when Herod's birthday came, the daugh- 6
 ter of Herodias danced before his guests, and so pleased Herod,
 that he promised with an oath to give her whatever she asked. 7
 Prompted by her mother, the girl said 'Give me here, on a dish,
 the head of John the Baptist.' The king was distressed at this; yet, 8
 because of his oath and of the guests at his table, he ordered it to 9
 be given her. He sent and beheaded John in the prison; and his
 head was brought on a dish and given to the girl, and she took 11
 it to her mother. Then John's disciples came, and took the body 12
 away, and buried it; and went and told Jesus.

When Jesus heard of it, he left privately in a boat to a lonely 13
 spot. The people, however, heard of his going, and followed him
 in crowds from the towns on foot. On getting out of the boat, 14
 Jesus saw a great crowd, and his heart was moved at the sight of
 them; and he cured all the sick among them. In the evening the 15
 disciples came up to him, and said: "This is a lonely spot, and the
 day is now far advanced; send the crowds away so that they can
 to the villages, and buy themselves food." But Jesus said: "They 16
 need not go away, it is for you to give them something to eat."
 "We have nothing here," they said, "except five loaves and two 17
 fishes."

"Bring them here to me," was his reply. Jesus ordered the peo- 18
 ple to take their seats on the grass; and, taking the five loaves 19
 and the two fishes, he looked up to heaven, and said the bless-
 ing, and, after he had broken the loaves, gave them to his disci-
 ples; and they gave them to the crowds. Everyone had sufficient 20
 to eat, and they picked up enough of the broken pieces that were

21 left to fill twelve baskets. The men who ate were about five thousand
22 in number, without counting women and children. Immediately afterwards
23 Jesus made the disciples get into a boat and cross over in advance of him,
24 while he dismissed the crowds. After dismissing the crowds, he went up
25 the hill by himself to pray; and, when evening fell, he was there alone.
26 The boat was by this time some miles from shore, laboring in the waves,
27 for the wind was against her. Three hours after midnight, however, Jesus
28 came towards the disciples, walking on the water. But, when they saw
29 him walking on the water, they were terrified. "It is a ghost," they
30 exclaimed, and cried out in fear. But Jesus at once spoke to them.
31 "Courage!" he said, "It is I; do not be afraid!" "Master," Peter
32 exclaimed, "if it is you, tell me to come to you on the water." Jesus
33 said: "Come." So Peter got down from the boat, and walked on the water,
34 and went towards Jesus; but, when he felt the wind, he was frightened,
35 and, beginning to sink, cried out: "Master! Save me!" Instantly Jesus
36 stretched out his hand, and caught hold of him. "You of little faith!"
he said, "Why did you falter?" When they had got into the boat, the
wind dropped. But the men in the boat threw themselves on their faces
before him, and said: "You are indeed God's Son."

34 When they had crossed over, they landed at Gennesaret. But
35 the people of that place, recognizing Jesus, sent out to the whole
36 country around, and brought to him all who were ill, begging him
merely to let them touch the tassel of his cloak; and all who touched
were made perfectly well.

15 Then some Pharisees and teachers of the law came to Jesus,
2 and said: "How is it that your disciples break the traditions of our
3 ancestors? For they do not wash their hands when they eat food." His
4 reply was: "How is it that you on your side break God's commandments
5 out of respect for your own traditions? For God said — 'Honor your
6 father and mother,' and 'Let him who abuses his father or mother suffer
7 death,' but you say 'Whenever anyone says to his father or mother
8 "Whatever of mine might have been of service to you is 'Given to God,'" he
9 is in no way bound to honor his father.' In this way you have nullified
the words of God for the sake of your traditions. Hypocrites! It was well
said by Isaiah when he prophesied about you — 'This is a people that
honor me with their lips, While their hearts are far removed from me;
but vainly do they worship me, For they teach but human precepts.'"

Then Jesus called the people to him, and said: "Listen, and mark my words. It is not what enters a person's mouth that 'defiles' them, but what comes out from their mouth — that does defile them!" His disciples came up to him, and said: "Do you know that the Pharisees were shocked on hearing what you said?"

"Every plant," Jesus replied, "that my heavenly Father has not planted will be rooted up. Let them be; they are but blind guides; and, if one blind person guides another, both of them will fall into a ditch." Peter spoke up: "Explain this saying to us."

"What, do even you understand nothing yet?" Jesus exclaimed. "Don't you see that whatever goes into the mouth passes into the stomach, and is afterwards expelled? But the things that come out of the mouth proceed from the heart, and it is these that defile a person; for out of the heart proceed evil thoughts — murder, adultery, sexual immorality, theft, perjury, slander. These are the things that defile a person; but eating with unwashed hands does not defile a person."

On going away from that place, Jesus went to the country around Tyre and Sidon. There, a Canaanite woman of that district came out and began calling to Jesus: "Take pity on me, Master, Son of David; my daughter is grievously possessed by a demon." But Jesus did not answer her a word; and his disciples came up and begged him to send her away. "She keeps calling out after us," they said. "I was not sent," replied Jesus, "to anyone except the lost sheep of Israel." But the woman came, and, bowing to the ground before him, said: "Master, help me."

"It is not fair," replied Jesus, "to take the children's food and throw it to dogs." "Yes, Master," she said, "for even dogs do feed on the scraps that fall from their owners' table."

"Your faith is great," was his reply to the woman; "it will be as you wish!" And her daughter was cured that very hour.

On leaving that place, Jesus went to the shore of the Sea of Galilee; and then went up the hill, and sat down., you will do what not only what has been done to the fig tree, but, even if you should say to this hill 'Be lifted up and hurled into the sea' it would be done. Great crowds of people came to him, bringing with them those who were lame, crippled, blind, or dumb, and many others. They put them down at his feet, and he cured them; and the crowds were astonished, when they saw the dumb talking, the cripples made sound, the lame walking about, and the

blind with their sight restored; and they praised the God of Israel. Afterwards Jesus called his disciples to him, and said: "My heart is moved at the sight of all these people, for they have already been with me three days and they have nothing to eat; and I am unwilling to send them away hungry; they might faint on the way home." "Where can we," his disciples asked, "in a lonely place find enough bread for such a crowd as this?"

"How many loaves have you?" said Jesus. "Seven," they answered, "and a few small fish." Telling the crowd to sit down on the ground, Jesus took the seven loaves and the fish, and, after saying the thanksgiving, broke them, and gave them to the disciples; and the disciples gave them to the crowds. Everyone had sufficient to eat, and they picked up seven baskets full of the broken pieces left. The men who ate were four thousand in number without counting women and children. Then, after dismissing the crowds, Jesus got into the boat, and went to the neighborhood of Magadan.

16 Here the Pharisees and Sadducees came up, and, to test Jesus, requested him to show them some sign from the heavens. But Jesus answered: "In the evening you say 'It will be fine weather, for the sky is as red as fire.' But in the morning you say 'Today it will be stormy, for the sky is as red as fire and threatening.' You learn to read the sky; yet you are unable to read the signs of the times! A wicked and unfaithful generation is asking for a sign, but no sign will be given it except the sign of Jonah." So he left them and went away.

Now the disciples had crossed to the opposite shore, and had forgotten to take any bread. Presently Jesus said to them: "Take care and be on your guard against the leaven of the Pharisees and Sadducees." But the disciples began talking among themselves about their having brought no bread. On noticing this, Jesus said: "Why are you talking among yourselves about your being short of bread, you of little faith? Don't you yet see, nor remember the five loaves for the five thousand, and how many baskets you took away? Nor yet the seven loaves for the four thousand, and how many basketfuls you took away? How is it that you do not see that I was not speaking about bread? Be on your guard against the leaven of the Pharisees and Sadducees." Then they understood that he had told them to be on their guard, not against the leaven of bread, but against the teaching of the Pharisees and Sadducees.

On coming into the neighborhood of Caesarea Philippi, Jesus 13
asked his disciples this question — “Who do people say that the
Son of Man is?” “Some say John the Baptist,” they answered, 14
“Others, however, say that he is Elijah, while others again say Je-
remiah, or one of the prophets.”

“But you,” he said, “who do you say that I am?” To this Simon 15
Peter answered: “You are the Christ, the Son of the living God.” 16

“Blessed are you, Simon, Son of Jonah,” Jesus replied. “For no 17
human being has revealed this to you, but my Father who is in
heaven. Yes, and I say to you, Your name is ‘Peter — a Rock, and 18
on this rock I will build my church, and the powers of the place
of death will not prevail over it. I will give you the keys of the 19
kingdom of heaven. Whatever you forbid on earth will be held in
heaven to be forbidden, and whatever you allow on earth will be
held in heaven to be allowed.” Then he charged his disciples not 20
to tell anyone that he was the Christ.

At that time Jesus Christ began to explain to his disciples that 21
he must go to Jerusalem, and undergo much suffering at the
hands of the councillors, and chief priests, and teachers of the
law, and be put to death, and rise on the third day. But Peter 22
took Jesus aside, and began to rebuke him. “Master,” he said,
“please God that will never be your fate!” Jesus, however, 23
turning to Peter, said: “Out of my way, Satan! You are a
hindrance to me; for you look at things, not as God does, but as
person does.” Then Jesus said to his disciples: “If anyone wishes 24
to walk in my steps, let him renounce self, and take up his cross,
and follow me. For whoever wishes to save his life will lose it, 25
and whoever, for my sake, loses his life will find it. What good
will it do a person to gain the whole world, if he forfeits his life? 26
Or what will a person give that is of equal value with his life?
For the Son of Man is to come in his Father’s glory, with his 27
angels, and then he ‘will give to everyone what his actions
deserve.’ I tell you, some of those who are standing here will 28
not know death until they have seen the Son of Man coming into
his kingdom.”

Six days later, Jesus took with him Peter, and the brothers 17
James and John, and led them up a high mountain alone. There
his appearance was transformed before their eyes; his face shown 2
like the sun, and his clothes became as white as the light. All
at once Moses and Elijah appeared to them, talking with Jesus. 3

- 4 "Master," exclaimed Peter, interposing, "it is good to be here; if
5 you wish, I will make three tents here, one for you, one for Moses,
6 and one for Elijah." While he was still speaking, a bright cloud
7 enveloped them, and there was a voice from the cloud that said
8 — "This is my dearly loved son, who brings me great joy; listen
9 to him." The disciples, on hearing this, fell on their faces, greatly
10 afraid. But Jesus came and touched them, saying as he did so:
11 "Rise up, and do not be afraid." When they raised their eyes, they
12 saw no one but Jesus himself alone. As they were going down the
13 mountain side, Jesus gave them this warning — "Do not speak
14 of this vision to anyone, until the Son of Man has risen from the
15 dead." "How is it," his disciples asked, "that our teachers of the
16 law say that Elijah has to come first?"
- 17 "Elijah indeed does come," Jesus replied, "and will restore
18 everything; and I tell you that Elijah has already come, and peo-
19 ple have not recognized him, but have treated him just as they
20 pleased. In the same way, too, the Son of Man is destined to un-
21 dergo suffering at people's hands." Then the disciples under-
22 stood that it was of John the Baptist that he had spoken to them.
- 23 When they came to the crowd, a man came up to Jesus, and,
24 kneeling down before him, said: "Master, take pity on my son,
25 for he is epileptic and suffers terribly; indeed, he often falls into
26 the fire and into the water; I brought him to your disciples, but
27 they could not cure him."
- 28 "Faithless and perverse generation!" Jesus exclaimed, "how
29 long must I be among you? How long must I have patience with
30 you? Bring the boy here to me." Then Jesus rebuked the demon,
31 and it came out of the boy; and he was cured from that very hour.
32 Afterwards the disciples came up to Jesus, and asked him pri-
33 vately: "Why was it that we could not drive it out?"
- 34 "Because you have so little faith," he answered; "for, I tell you,
35 if your faith were only like a mustard seed, you could say to this
36 mountain 'Move from this place to that!' and it would be moved;
37 and nothing would be impossible to you."
- 38 While Jesus and his disciples were together in Galilee, he said
39 to them: "The Son of Man is destined to be betrayed into human
40 hands, and they will put him to death, but on the third day he
41 will rise." The disciples were greatly distressed.

After they had reached Capernaum, the collectors of the Temple-rate came up to Peter, and said: "Does not your Master pay the Temple-rate?" 24

"Yes," answered Peter. But, on going into the house, before he could speak, Jesus said: "What do you think, Simon? From whom do earthly kings take taxes or tribute? From their sons, or from others?" "From others," answered Peter. "Well then," continued Jesus, "their sons go free. Still, so we don't offend them, go and throw a line into the Sea; take the first fish that rises, open its mouth, and you will find in it a piece of money. Take that, and give it to the collectors for both of us." 25 26 27

On the same occasion the disciples came to Jesus, and asked him: "Who is really the greatest in the kingdom of heaven?" Jesus called a little child to him, and placed it in the middle of them, and then said: "I tell you, unless you change and become like little children, you will not enter the kingdom of heaven at all. Therefore, anyone who will humble themselves like this child — that person will be the greatest in the kingdom of heaven. And anyone who, for the sake of my name, welcomes even one little child like this, is welcoming me. But, if anyone puts temptation in the way of one of these little ones who believe in me, it would be best for them to be sunk in the depths of the sea with a great millstone hung around their neck. Alas for the world because of such temptations! There cannot but be temptations but sorrow awaits the person who does the tempting!" 18 19 20 21 22 23 24 25 26 27

If your hand or your foot causes you to sin, cut it off, and throw it away. It would be better for you to enter the life maimed or lame, than to have both hands, or both feet, and be thrown into the fire that never goes out. If your eye causes you to sin, take it out, and throw it away. It would be better for you to enter the life with only one eye, than to have both eyes and be thrown into the fires of Gehenna. Beware of despising one of these little ones, for in heaven, I tell you, their angels always see the face of my Father who is in heaven. 8 9 10 11

What think you? If a person owns a hundred sheep, and one of them strays, will the person not leave the ninety-nine on the hills, and go and search for the one that is straying? And, if they succeed in finding it, I tell you that they rejoice more over that one sheep than over the ninety-nine which did not stray. So, too, 12 13 14

it is the will of my Father who is in heaven that not one of these little ones should be lost.

15 If your brother or sister does wrong, go to them and convince
them of their fault when you are both alone. If they listen to you,
16 you have won them over. But, if they do not listen to you, take
with you one or two others, so that 'on the evidence of two or
17 three witnesses, every word may be put beyond dispute.' If they
refuse to listen to them, speak to the church; and, if they also
refuse to listen to the church, treat him as you would a Gentile
or a tax-gatherer.

18 I tell you, all that you forbid on earth will be held in heaven
to be forbidden, and all that you allow on earth will be held in
19 heaven to be allowed. Again, I tell you that, if but two of you on
earth agree as to what they will pray for, whatever it be, it will be
20 granted them by my Father who is in heaven. For where two or
three have come together in my name, I am present with them."

21 Then Peter came up, and said to Jesus: "Master, how often am
I to forgive someone who wrongs me? As many as seven times?"
22 But Jesus answered: "Not seven times, but 'seventy times seven.'
23 Therefore the kingdom of heaven may be compared to a king who
wished to settle accounts with his servants. When he had begun
24 to do so, one of them was brought to him who owed him ten thou-
25 sand bags of gold; and, as he could not pay, his master ordered
him to be sold towards the payment of the debt, together with his
26 wife, and his children, and everything that he had. The servant
threw himself down on the ground before him and said 'Have
27 patience with me, and I will pay you all.' The master was moved
with compassion; and he let him go, and forgave him the debt.
28 But, on going out, that same servant came upon one of his fellow
servants who owed him a hundred silver coins. Seizing him by the
29 throat, he said 'Pay what you owe me.' His fellow servant threw
himself on the ground and begged for mercy. 'Have patience with
30 me,' he said, 'and I will pay you.' But the other would not, but
went and put him in prison until he should pay his debt. When
31 his fellow servants saw what had happened, they were greatly
distressed, and went to their master and laid the whole matter be-
32 fore him. So the master sent for the servant, and said to him 'You
wicked servant! When you begged me for mercy, I forgave you
33 the whole of that debt. Shouldn't you, also, to have shown mercy
34 to your fellow servant, just as I showed mercy to you?' Then his

master, in anger, handed him over to the jailers, until he should pay the whole of his debt. So, also, will my heavenly Father do to you, unless each one of you forgives his brother or sister from your heart." 35

The Journey to Jerusalem

AT THE CONCLUSION OF THIS TEACHING, Jesus withdrew from Galilee, and went into that district of Judea which is on the other side of the Jordan. Great crowds followed him, and he cured them there. Presently some Pharisees came up to him, and, to test him, said: "Has a man the right to divorce his wife for every cause?" 19 2 3

"Haven't you read," replied Jesus, "that at the beginning the Creator 'made them male and female,' and said — 'For this reason a man will leave his father and mother, and be united to his wife, and the man and his wife will become one'? So that they are no longer two, but one. What God himself, then, has yoked together people must not separate." "Why, then," they said, "did Moses direct that a man should 'serve his wife with a notice of separation and divorce her'?" 4 5 6 7

"Moses, owing to the hardness of your hearts," answered Jesus, "permitted you to divorce your wives, but that was not so at the beginning. But I tell you that anyone who divorces his wife, except on the ground of some serious sexual sin, and marries another woman, is guilty of adultery." "If that," said the disciples, "is the position of a man with regard to his wife, it is better not to marry." 8 9 10

"It is not everyone," replied Jesus, "who can accept this teaching, but only those who have been enabled to do so. Some men, it is true, have from birth been disabled for marriage, while others have been disabled by their fellow men, and others again have disabled themselves for the sake of the kingdom of heaven. Let him accept it who can." 11 12

Then some little children were brought to Jesus, for him to place his hands on them, and pray; but the disciples found fault with those who had brought them. Jesus, however, said: "Let the little children come to me, and do not hinder them, for it is to the 13 14

15 childlike that the kingdom of heaven belongs." So he placed his hands on them, and then went on his way.

16 A man came up to Jesus, and said: "Teacher, what good thing must I do to obtain eternal life?"

17 "Why ask me about goodness?" answered Jesus. "There is but One who is good. If you want to enter the life, keep the commandments." "What commandments?" asked the man. "These," answered Jesus: — "'You must not kill. You must not commit adultery. You must not steal. You must not say what is false about others. Honor your father and your mother.' And 'You must love your neighbor as you love yourself.'" "I have observed all these," said the young man. "What is still wanting in me?"

21 "If you wish to be perfect," answered Jesus, "go and sell your property, and give to the poor, and you will have wealth in heaven; then come and follow me." On hearing these words, the young man went away distressed, for he had great possessions.

23 At this, Jesus said to his disciples: "I tell you that a rich person will find it hard to enter the kingdom of heaven! I say again, it is easier for a camel to get through a needle's eye than for a rich person to enter the kingdom of heaven!" On hearing this, the disciples exclaimed in great astonishment: "Who then can possibly be saved?" But Jesus looked at them, and said: "With people this is impossible, but with God everything is possible."

27 Then Peter turned and said to Jesus: "But we — we left everything, and followed you; what, then, will we have?"

28 "I tell you," answered Jesus, "that at the new creation, 'when the Son of Man takes his seat on his throne of glory,' you who followed me will be seated on twelve thrones, as judges of the twelve tribes of Israel. Everyone who has left houses, or brothers, or sisters, or father, or mother, or children, or land, for my sake, will receive many times as much, and will 'gain eternal life.' But many who are first now will then be last, and those who are last will be first. For the kingdom of heaven is like an employer who went out

2 in the early morning to hire laborers for his vineyards. He agreed with the laborers to pay them the standard daily rate of two silver

3 coins, and sent them into his vineyard. On going out again, about nine o'clock, he saw some others standing in the marketplace, doing nothing. 'You also may go into my vineyard,' he said, 'and I will pay you what is fair.' So they went. Going out again about

5 midday and about three o'clock, he did as before. When he went

6

out about five, he found some others standing there, and said to them 'Why have you been standing here all day long, doing nothing?' 'Because no one has hired us,' they answered. 'You also may go into my vineyard,' he said. In the evening the owner of the vineyard said to his steward 'Call the laborers, and pay them their wages, beginning with the last, and ending with the first. Now when those who had been hired about five o'clock went up, they received two silver coins each. So, when the first went up, they thought that they would receive more, but they also received two silver coins each; on which they began to grumble at their employer. 'These last,' they said, 'have done only one hour's work, and yet you have put them on the same footing with us, who have borne the brunt of the day's work, and the heat.' 'My friend,' was his reply to one of them, 'I am not treating you unfairly. Didn't you agree with me for two silver coins? Take what belongs to you, and go. I choose to give to this last man the same as to you. Have not I the right to do as I choose with what is mine? Are you envious because I am liberal?' So those who are last will be first, and the first last."

When Jesus was on the point of going up to Jerusalem, he gathered the twelve disciples around him by themselves, and said to them as they were on their way: "Listen! We are going up to Jerusalem; and there the Son of Man will be betrayed to the chief priests and teachers of the law, and they will condemn him to death, and give him up to the Gentiles for them to mock, and to scourge, and to crucify; and on the third day he will rise."

Then the mother of Zebedee's sons came to him with her sons, bowing to the ground, and begging a favor. "What is it that you want?" he asked. "I want you to say," she replied, "that in your kingdom these two sons of mine may sit, one on your right, and the other on your left."

"You do not know what you are asking," was Jesus' answer. "Can you drink the cup that I am to drink?" "Yes," they exclaimed, "we can."

"You will indeed drink my cup," he said, "but as to a seat at my right and at my left — that is not mine to give, but it is for those for whom it has been prepared by my Father." On hearing of this, the ten others were very indignant about the two brothers. Jesus, however, called the ten to him, and said: "The rulers

26 of the Gentiles lord it over them as you know, and their high officials oppress them. Among you it is not so. No, whoever wants
 27 to become great among you must be your servant, and whoever
 28 wants to take the first place among you, must be your slave; just as the Son of Man came, not to be served, but to serve, and to give his life as a ransom for many."

29 As they were going out of Jericho, a great crowd followed him.
 30 Two blind men who were sitting by the roadside, hearing that Jesus was passing, called out: "Take pity on us, Master, Son of David!" The crowd told them to be quiet; but the men only called
 31 out the louder: "Take pity on us, Master, Son of David!" Then Jesus stopped and called them. "What do you want me to do for
 32 you?" he said. "Master," they replied, "we want our eyes to be opened." So Jesus, moved with compassion, touched their eyes,
 33 and immediately they recovered their sight, and followed him.
 34

The Last Days

21 WHEN THEY HAD ALMOST REACHED JERUSALEM, having come as far as Bethphage, on the Mount of Olives, Jesus sent on two disciples.
 2 "Go to the village facing you," he said, "and you will immediately find an ass tethered, with a foal by her side; untie her, and lead her
 3 here for me. And, if anyone says anything to you, you are to say this — 'The Master wants them'; and he will send them at once."
 4 This happened in fulfillment of these words in the prophet —
 5 'Say to the people of Zion — "Your King is coming to you, gentle, and riding on an ass, and on the foal of a beast of burden.'"
 6 So the disciples went and did as Jesus had directed them. They led the ass and the foal back, and, when they had put their
 7 cloaks on them, he seated himself on them. The immense crowd of people spread their cloaks in the road, while some cut
 8 branches off the trees, and spread them on the road. The crowds that led the way, as well as those that followed behind, kept shouting: "God save the Son of David! Blessed is he who comes
 9 in the name of the Lord! God save him from on high!" When he had entered Jerusalem, the whole city was stirred, and asked —
 10 "Who is this?", to which the crowd replied — "This is the prophet Jesus from Nazareth in Galilee."
 11

Jesus went into the Temple Courts, and drove out all those who were buying and selling there. He overturned the tables of the money changers, and the seats of the pigeon-dealers, and said to them: "Scripture says 'My house will be called a house of prayer'; but you are making it 'a den of robbers.'" While he was still in the Temple Courts, some blind and some lame people came up to him, and he cured them. But, when the chief priests and the teachers of the law saw the wonderful things that Jesus did, and the boys who were calling out in the Temple Courts "God save the Son of David!", they were indignant, and said to him: "Do you hear what these boys are saying?"

"Yes," answered Jesus; "but did you never read the words — 'Out of the mouths of babes and sucklings you have called forth perfect praise'?"

Then he left them, and went out of the city to Bethany, and spent the night there.

The next morning, in returning to the city, Jesus became hungry; and, noticing a solitary fig tree by the roadside, he went up to it, but found nothing on it but leaves. So he said to it: "Never again will fruit be gathered off you." And suddenly the fruit tree withered up. When the disciples saw this, they exclaimed in astonishment: "How suddenly the fig tree withered up!"

"I tell you," replied Jesus, "if you have faith, without ever a doubt, you will do what not only what has been done to the fig tree, but, even if you should say to this hill 'Be lifted up and hurled into the sea!' it would be done. And whatever you ask for in your prayers will, if you have faith, be granted you."

After Jesus had come into the Temple Courts, the chief priests and the councillors of the Nation came up to him as he was teaching, and said: "What authority have you to do these things? Who gave you this authority?"

"I, too," said Jesus in reply, "will ask you one question; if you will give me an answer to it, then I, also, will tell you what authority I have to act as I do. It is about John's baptism. What was its origin? Divine or human?" But they began arguing among themselves: "If we say 'divine,' he will say to us 'Why then didn't you believe him?' But if we say 'human,' we are afraid of the people, for everyone regards John as a prophet." So the answer they gave Jesus was — "We do not know."

28 “Then I,” he said, “refuse to tell you what authority I have to do
these things. What do you think of this? There was a man who
29 had two sons. He went to the elder and said ‘Go and work in the
vineyard today my son.’ ‘Yes, sir,’ he answered; but he did not go.
30 Then the father went to the second son, and said the same. ‘I will
not,’ he answered; but afterwards he was sorry and went. Which
31 of the two sons did as his father wished?’ “The second,” they said.
“I tell you,” added Jesus, “that tax-gatherers and prostitutes are
32 going into the kingdom of God before you. For when John came
to you, walking in the path of righteousness, you did not believe
him, but tax-gatherers and prostitutes did; and yet you, though
you saw this, even then were not sorry, nor did you believe him.
33 Listen to another parable. A man, who was an employer, once
planted a vineyard, put a fence around it, dug a winepress in it,
34 built a tower, and then let it out to tenants and went abroad. When
the time for the grape harvest drew near, he sent his servants to
35 the tenants, to receive his share of the produce. But the tenants
seized his servants, beat one, killed another, and stoned a third. A
36 second time the owner sent some servants, a larger number than
before, and the tenants treated them in the same way. As a last
37 resource he sent his son to them. ‘They will respect my son,’ he
said. But the tenants, on seeing his son, said to each other ‘Here
38 is the heir! Come, let us kill him, and get his inheritance.’ So they
seized him, and threw him outside the vineyard, and killed him.
39 Now, when the owner of the vineyard comes, what will he do to
those tenants?’ “Miserable wretches!” they exclaimed, “he will
40 put them to a miserable death, and he will let out the vineyard
to other tenants, who will pay him his share of the produce at
41 the proper times.” Then Jesus added: “Have you never read in
the scriptures? — ‘The stone which the builders despised — Has
42 now itself become the corner-stone; This corner-stone has come
from the Lord, and is marvelous in our eyes.’ That, I tell you, is
43 why the kingdom of God will be taken from you, and given to a
nation that does produce the fruit of the kingdom. Yes, and he
44 who falls on this stone will be dashed to pieces, while anyone on
whom it falls — it will scatter him as dust.”
45 After listening to these parables, the chief priests and the Phar-
46 isees saw that it was about them that he was speaking; yet, al-
though eager to arrest him, they were afraid of the crowds, who
regarded him as a prophet.

Once more Jesus spoke to them in parables. "The kingdom of heaven," he said, "may be compared to a king who gave a banquet in honor of his son's wedding. He sent his servants to call those who had been invited to the banquet, but they were unwilling to come. A second time he sent some servants, with orders to say to those who had been invited 'I have prepared my breakfast, my cattle and fat beasts are killed and everything is ready; come to the banquet.' They, however, took no notice, but went off, one to their farm, another to their business; while the rest, seizing his servants, ill-treated them and killed them. The king, in anger, sent his troops, put those murderers to death, and set their city on fire. Then he said to his servants 'The banquet is prepared, but those who were invited were not worthy. So go to the cross-roads, and invite everyone you find to the banquet.' The servants went out into the roads and collected all the people whom they found, whether bad or good; and the bridal-hall was filled with guests. But, when the king went in to see his guests, he noticed there a man who had not put on a wedding-robe. So he said to him 'My friend, how is it that you came in here without a wedding-robe?' The man was speechless. Then the king said to the attendants 'Tie him hand and foot, and 'put him out into the darkness' outside, where there will be weeping and grinding of teeth.' For many are called, but few chosen."

Then the Pharisees went away and conferred together as to how they might lay a trap for Jesus in the course of conversation. They sent their disciples, with the Herodians, to say to him: "Teacher, we know that you are an honest person, and that you teach the way of God honestly, and are not afraid of anyone; for you pay no regard to a person's position. Tell us, then, what you think. Are we right in paying taxes to the Emperor, or not?" Perceiving their malice, Jesus answered: "Why are you testing me, you hypocrites? Show me the coin with which the tax is paid." And, when they had brought him a coin, he asked: "Whose head and title are these?" "The Emperor's," they answered: on which he said to them: "Then pay to the Emperor what belongs to the Emperor, and to God what belongs to God." They wondered at his answer, and left him alone and went away.

That same day some Sadducees came up to Jesus, maintaining that there is no resurrection. Their question was this: — "Teacher, Moses said — 'should a man die without children, the man's

brother will become the husband of the widow, and raise a family
25 for his brother.' Now we had living among us seven brothers; of
whom the eldest married and died, and, as he had no family, left
26 his wife for his brother. The same thing happened to the second
27 and the third brothers, and indeed to all the seven. The woman
28 herself died last of all. At the resurrection, then, whose wife will
she be out of the seven, all of them having been married to her?"

29 "Your mistake," replied Jesus, "is due to your ignorance of the
30 scriptures, and of the power of God. For at the resurrection there
is no marrying or being married, but all who rise are as angels
31 in heaven. As to the resurrection of the dead, have you not read
32 these words of God — 'I am the God of Abraham, and the God
of Isaac, and the God of Jacob'? He is not the God of dead people,
33 but of living." The crowds, who had been listening to him, were
greatly struck with his teaching.

34 When the Pharisees heard that Jesus had silenced the Sad-
35 ducees, they collected together. Then one of them, a Student of
36 the law, to test him, asked this question — "Teacher, what is the
37 great commandment in the law?" His answer was: "'You must
love the Lord your God with all your heart, and with all your soul,
38 and with all your mind.' This is the great first commandment. The
39 second, which is like it, is this — 'You must love your neighbor
40 as you love yourself.' On these two commandments hang all the
41 law and the prophets." Before the Pharisees separated, Jesus put
42 this question to them — "What do you think about the Christ?
43 Whose son is he?" "David's," they said. "How is it, then," Jesus
replied, "that David, speaking under inspiration, calls him 'lord,'
44 in the passage — 'The Lord said to my Lord: "Sit at my right hand,
45 until I put your enemies beneath your feet"'? Since, then, David
46 calls him 'lord,' how is he David's son?" No one could say a word
in answer; nor did anyone after that day venture to question him
further.

23 Then Jesus speaking to the crowds and to his disciples, said:
2 "The teachers of the law and the Pharisees now occupy the chair
3 of Moses. Therefore practice and lay to heart everything that they
4 tell preach but do not practice. While they make up heavy loads
and pile them on other people's shoulder's they decline, them-
5 selves, to lift a finger to move them. All their actions are done to
attract attention. They widen their phylacteries, and increase the
6 size of their tassels, and like to have the place of honor at dinner,

and the best seats in the Synagogues, and to be greeted in the 7
markets with respect, and to be called 'Rabbi' for everybody. But
do not allow yourselves to be called 'Rabbi,' for you have only 8
one teacher, and you yourselves are all brothers and sisters. And
do not call anyone on the earth your 'Father,' for you have only 9
one Father, the heavenly Father. Nor must you allow yourselves 10
to be called 'leaders,' for you have only one leader, the Christ. The 11
person who wants to be the greatest among you must be your ser-
vant. Whoever exalts themselves will be humbled, and whoever 12
humbles themselves will be exalted. But alas for you, teachers 13
of the law and Pharisees, hypocrites that you are! You turn the
key of the kingdom of heaven in people's faces. For you do not go
in yourselves, and do not allow those who try to go in to do so.
Alas for you, teachers of the law and Pharisees, hypocrites that 14
you are! You destroy widow's houses, even while pretending to
make long prayers; therefore you will receive greater condemna-
tion. Alas for you, teachers of the law and Pharisees, hypocrites 15
that you are! You scour land and sea to make a single convert,
and, when they are gained, you make them twice as deserving of
Gehenna as you are yourselves. Alas for you, you blind guides! 16
You say 'if any answer by the Temple, their oath counts for noth-
ing; but, if anyone swears by the gold of the Temple, their oath is
binding them'! Fools that you are and blind! Which is the more 17
important? The gold? Or the Temple which has given sacredness
to the gold? You say, too, 'If anyone swears by the altar, their oath 18
counts for nothing, but, if anyone swears by the offering placed
on it, their oath is binding on them'! Blind indeed! Which is the 19
more important? The offering? Or the altar which gives sacred-
ness to the offering? Therefore a person, swearing by the altar, 20
swears by it and by all that is on it, and a person, swearing by the
Temple, swears by it and by him who dwells in it, while a person, 21
swearing by heaven, swears by the throne of God, and by him who
sits on it. Alas for you, teachers of the law and Pharisees, hyp- 22
ocrites that you are! You pay tithes on mint, fennel, and caraway
seed, and have neglected the weightier matters of the law — jus- 23
tice, mercy, and good faith. These last you ought to have put into
practice, without neglecting the first. You blind guides, to strain 24
out a gnat and to swallow a camel! Alas for you, teachers of the 25
law and Pharisees, hypocrites that you are! You clean the outside
of the cup and the dish, but inside they are filled with the results

26 of greed and self-indulgence. You blind Pharisee! First clean the
27 inside of the cup and the dish, so that the outside may become
28 clean as well. Alas for you, teachers of the law and Pharisees,
29 hypocrites that you are! You are like whitewashed tombs, which
indeed look fair outside, while inside they are filled with dead
30 people's bones and all kinds of filth. It is the same with you. Out-
wardly, and to others, you have the look of religious people, but
31 inwardly you are full of hypocrisy and sin. Alas for you, teachers
of the law and Pharisees, hypocrites that you are! You build the
32 tombs of the prophets, and decorate the monuments of religious
33 people, and say 'Had we been living in the days of our ancestors,
we should have taken part in their murder of the prophets! By
34 doing this you are furnishing evidence against yourselves that
you are true children of the people who murdered the prophets.
35 Fill up the measure of your ancestor's guilt. You snakes and chil-
36 dren of snakes! How can you escape being sentenced to Gehenna?
That is why I send you prophets, wise people, and teachers of the
37 law, some of whom you will crucify and kill, and some of whom
you will scourge in your Synagogues, and persecute from town
38 to town; in order the blood on your heads may fall every drop of
innocent 'blood split on earth,' from the blood of innocent Abel
39 down to that of Zechariah, Barachiah's son, whom you murdered
between the Temple and the altar. All this, I tell you, will come
40 home to the present generation. Jerusalem! Jerusalem! She who
slays the prophets and stones the messengers sent to her — Oh,
41 how often have I wished to gather your children around me, as a
hen gathers her brood under her wings, and you would not come!
42 Verily, your house is left to you desolate! For nevermore, I tell
43 you, will you see me, until you say — 'Blessed is He who comes
in the name of the Lord!'"

24 Leaving the Temple Courts, Jesus was walking away, when his
disciples came up to draw his attention to the Temple buildings.
2 "Do you see all these things?" was his answer. "I tell you, not a
single stone will be left here on another, which will not be thrown
3 down," so, while Jesus was sitting on the Mount of Olives, his dis-
ciples came up to him privately and said: "Tell us when this will
4 be, and what will be the sign of your coming, and of the close of
the age." Jesus replied to them: "See that no one leads you astray;
5 for, many will take my name, and come saying 'I am the Christ,'
6 and will lead many astray. You will hear of wars and rumors of

wars; take care not to be alarmed, for such things must occur; but the end is not yet here. For 'nation will rise against nation and kingdom against kingdom,' and there will be famines and earthquakes in various places. All this, however, will be but the beginning of the birth pangs! When that time comes, they will give you up to persecution, and will put you to death, and you will be hated by all nations because of me. And then many will fall away, and will betray one another, and hate one another. Many false prophets, also, will appear and lead many astray; and, owing to the increase of wickedness, the love of most will grow cold. Yet the person who endures to the end will be saved. This good news of the kingdom will be proclaimed throughout the world as a witness to all nations; and then will come the end. As soon, then, as you see 'the Foul Desecration,' mentioned by the prophet Daniel, standing in the Holy place," (the reader must consider what this means) "then those of you who are in Judea must take refuge in the mountains; and a man on the housetop must not go down to get the things that are in his house; nor must one who is on their farm turn back to get his cloak. Alas for pregnant women, and for those who are nursing infants in those days! Pray, too, that your flight may not take place in winter, nor on a Sabbath; for that will be 'a time of great distress, the like of which has not occurred from the beginning of the world down to the present time' — no, nor ever will again. Had not those days been limited, not a single soul would escape; but for the sake of 'God's people' a limit will be put to them. At that time, if anyone should say to you 'Look! Here is the Christ!' or 'Here he is!'; do not believe it; for false Christs and false prophets will arise, and will display great signs and marvels, so that, were it possible, even God's people would be led astray. Remember, I have told you beforehand. Therefore, if people say to you 'He is in the wilderness!'; do not go out there; or 'He is in an inner room!'; do not believe it; for, just as lightning will start from the east and flash across to the west, so will it be with the coming of the Son of Man. Wherever a dead body lies, there will the vultures flock.' Immediately after the distress of those days, 'the sun will be darkened, the moon will not give her light, the stars will fall from the heavens,' and 'the forces of the heavens will be convulsed.' Then will appear the sign of the Son of Man in the heavens; and all the peoples of the earth will mourn, when they see the Son of Man coming on the clouds of the heavens,'

- 31 with power and great glory; and he will send his angels, with a great trumpet, and they will gather his people around him from the four winds, from one end of heaven to the other.
- 32 Learn the lesson taught by the fig tree. As soon as its branches are full of sap, and it is bursting into leaf, you know that summer is near. And so may you, as soon as you see all these things, know that he is at your doors. I tell you, even the present generation will not pass away, until all these things have taken place. The heavens and the earth will pass away, but my words will never pass away. But about that day and hour, no one knows — not even the angels of heaven, not even the Son — but only the Father himself. For, just as in the days of Noah, so will it be at the coming of the Son of Man. In those days before the flood they went on eating and drinking, marrying and being married, up to the very day on which Noah entered the ark, taking not notice until the flood came and swept them one and all away; and so will it be at the coming of the Son of Man. At that time, of two men on a farm one will be taken and one left; of two women grinding with the hand-mill one will be taken and one left. Therefore watch; for you cannot be sure on what day your Master is coming. But this you do know, that, had the owner of the house known at what time of night the thief was coming, they would have been on the watch, and would not have allowed their house to be broken into.
- 44 Therefore, you must also prepare, since it is just when you are least expecting him that the Son of Man will come. Who, then is that trustworthy, careful servant, who has been placed by their master over his household, to give them their food at the proper time? Happy will that servant be whom their master, when he comes home, will find doing this. I tell you that their master will put them in charge of the whole of his property. But, should the servant be a bad servant, and say to themselves 'My master is a long time in coming,' and begin to beat their fellow servants, and eat and drink with drunkards, that servant's master will come on a day when they do not expect him, and at an hour of which they are unaware, and will flog the servant severely, and assign them their place among the hypocrites, where there will be weeping and grinding of teeth.
- 25 Then the kingdom of heaven will be like ten bridesmaids who took their lamps and went out to meet the groom. Five of them were foolish, and five were prudent. The foolish ones took their

lamps, but took no oil with them; while the prudent ones, besides taking their lamps, took oil in their jars. As the groom was late in coming, they all became drowsy, and slept. But at midnight a shout was raised — ‘The groom is coming! Come out to meet him!’ Then all the bridesmaids woke up and trimmed their lamps, and the foolish said to the prudent ‘Give us some of your oil; our lamps are going out.’ But the prudent ones answered ‘No, There may not be enough for you and for us. Go instead to those who sell it, and buy for yourselves.’ But while they were on their way to buy it, the groom came; and the bridesmaids who were ready went in with him to the banquet, and the door was shut. Afterwards the other bridesmaids came. ‘Sir, Sir,’ they said, ‘open the door to us!’ But the groom answered ‘I tell you, I do not know you.’ Therefore watch, since you know neither the day nor the hour.

For it is as though a man, going on his travels, called his servants, and gave his property into their charge. He gave five bags of gold to one, two to another, and one bag to a third, in proportion to the ability of each. Then he set out on his travels. The servant who had received the five bags of gold went at once and traded with it, and made another five bags. So, too, the servant who had received the two bags of gold made another two bags. But the servant who had received the one bag went and dug a hole in the ground, and hid his master’s money. After a long time the master of those servants returned, and settled accounts with them. The servant who had received the five bags of gold came up and brought five bags more. ‘Sir,’ he said, ‘you entrusted me with five bags of gold; look, I have made another five bags!’ ‘Well done, good, trustworthy servant!’ said his master. ‘You have been trustworthy with a small sum; now I will place a large one in your hands; come and share your master’s joy!’ Then the one who had received the two bags of gold came up and said ‘Sir, you entrusted me with two bags pounds; look, I have made another two!’ ‘Well done, good, trustworthy servant!’ said his master. ‘You have been trustworthy with a small sum; now I will place a large one in your hands; come and share your master’s joy!’ The man who had received the single bag of gold came up, too, and said ‘Sir, I knew that you were a hard man; you reap where you have not sown, and gather up where you have not winnowed; and, in my fear, I went and hid your money in the ground; look, here is what belongs to

26 you!' 'You lazy, worthless servant!' was his master's reply. 'You
27 knew that I reap where I have not sown, and gather up where I
28 have not winnowed? Then you ought to have placed my money in
29 the hands of bankers, and I, on my return, should have received
30 my money, with interest. 'Therefore,' he continued, 'take away
31 from him the one bag of gold, and give it to the one who has the
32 ten bags. For, to him who has, more will be given, and he will
33 have abundance; but, as for him who has nothing, even what he
34 has will be taken away from him. As for the useless servant, 'put
35 him out into the darkness' outside, where there will be weeping
36 and grinding of teeth.'

31 When the Son of Man has come in his glory and all the angels
32 with him, then he 'will take his seat on his throne of glory'; and all
33 the nations will be gathered before him, and he will separate the
34 people — just as a shepherd separates sheep from goats — placing
35 the sheep on his right hand, and the goats on his left. Then the
36 king will say to those on his right 'Come, you who are blessed by
37 my Father, enter into possession of the kingdom prepared for you
38 ever since the beginning of the world. For, when I was hungry,
39 you gave me food; when I was thirsty, you gave me drink; when
40 I was a stranger, you took me to your homes; when I was naked,
41 you clothed me; when I fell ill, you visited me; and when I was in
42 prison, you came to me.' Then the righteous will answer 'Lord,
43 when did we see you hungry, and feed you? Or thirsty, and give
44 you a drink? When did we see you a stranger, and take you to
45 our homes? Or naked, and clothe you? When did we see you ill,
or in prison, and come to you?' And the king will reply 'I tell
you, as often as you did it to one of these my brothers or sisters,
however unimportant they seemed, you did it to me.' Then he
will say to those on his left 'Go from my presence, accursed, into
the 'permanent fire which has been prepared for the devil and
his angels.' For, when I was hungry, you gave me no food; when
I was thirsty, you gave me no drink; when I was a stranger, you
did not take me to your homes; when I was naked, you did not
clothe me; and, when I was ill and in prison, you did not visit me.'
Then they, in their turn, will answer 'Lord, when did we see you
hungry, or thirsty, or a stranger, or naked, or ill, or in prison, and
did not supply your wants?' And then he will reply 'I tell you, as
often as you failed to do it to one of these, however unimportant,

you failed to do it to me.' And these last will go away 'into lasting correction,' but the righteous 'into lasting life.'" 46

When Jesus had finished teaching all of that, he said to his disciples: "You know that in two days time the Festival of the Passover will be here; and that the Son of Man is to be given up to be crucified." Then the chief priests and the councillors of the Nation met in the house of the high priest, who was called Caiaphas, and plotted together to arrest Jesus by stealth and put him to death; but they said: "Not during the Festival, or the people may riot." 26

After Jesus had reached Bethany, and while he was in the house of Simon the leper, a woman came up to him with an alabaster jar of very costly perfume, and poured the perfume on his head as he sat at the table. The disciples were indignant at seeing this. "What is this waste for?" they exclaimed. "It could have been sold for a large sum, and the money given to poor people." 6

"Why are you troubling the woman?" Jesus said, when he noticed it. "For this is a beautiful deed that she has done to me. You always have the poor with you, but you will not always have me. In pouring this perfume on my body, she has done it for my burying. I tell you, wherever, in the whole world, this good news is proclaimed, what this woman has done will be told in memory of her." 7

It was then that one of the Twelve, named Judas Iscariot, made his way to the chief priests, and said "What are you willing to give me, if I betray Jesus to you?" The Priests 'weighed him out thirty pieces of silver' as payment. So from that time Judas looked for an opportunity to betray Jesus. 16

On the first day of the Festival of the unleavened bread, the disciples came up to Jesus, and said: "Where do you wish us to make preparations for you to eat the Passover?" 17

"Go into the city to a certain man," he answered, "and say to him 'The teacher says — My time is near. I will keep the Passover with my disciples at your house.'" The disciples did as Jesus directed them, and prepared the Passover. In the evening Jesus took his place with the twelve disciples, and, while they were eating, he said: "I tell you that one of you will betray me." In great grief they began to say to him, one by one: "Can it be I, Master?" 18

"The one who dipped his bread beside me in the dish," replied Jesus, "is the one who will betray me. True, the Son of Man must 24

go, as scripture says of him, yet alas for that man by whom the Son of Man is being betrayed! For that man 'it would be better never to have been born!'" Judas, who was betraying him, turned to him and said: "Can it be I, Rabbi?"

"It is," answered Jesus.

26 While they were eating, Jesus took some bread, and, after saying the blessing, broke it and, as he gave it to his disciples, said: 27 "Take it and eat it; this is my body." Then he took a cup, and, after saying the thanksgiving, gave it to them, with the words: 28 "Drink from it, all of you; for this is my covenant blood, which is 29 poured out for many for the forgiveness of sins. I tell you that I will never, after this, drink of this juice of the grape, until that day when I will drink it new with you in the kingdom of my Father."

30 They then sang a hymn, and went out to the Mount of Olives. 31 Then Jesus said to them: "Even you will all fall away from me tonight. Scripture says — 'I will strike down the shepherd, and 32 the sheep of the flock will be scattered.' But, after I have risen, I will go before you into Galilee." "If everyone else falls away from 33 you," Peter answered, "I will never fall away!"

34 "I tell you," replied Jesus, "that this very night, before the cock 35 crows, you will disown me three times!" "Even if I must die with you," Peter exclaimed, "I will never disown you!" All the disciples spoke in the same way.

36 Then Jesus came with them to a garden called Gethsemane, and he said to his disciples: "Sit down here while I go and pray 37 over there." Taking with him Peter and the two sons of Zebedee, 38 he began to show signs of sadness and deep distress of mind. "I am sad at heart," he said, "sad even to death; wait here and watch 39 with me." Going on a little further, he threw himself on his face in prayer. "My Father," he said, "if it is possible, let me be spared 40 this cup; only, not as I will, but as you will." Then he came to his disciples, and found them asleep. "What!" he said to Peter, "could 41 none of you watch with me for one hour? Watch and pray so that you don't fall into temptation. True, the spirit is eager, but human 42 nature is weak." Again, a second time, he went away, and prayed. "My Father," he said, "if I cannot be spared this cup, but must 43 drink it, your will be done!" And coming back again he found 44 them asleep, for their eyes were heavy. So he left them, and went away again, and prayed a third time, again saying the same words. 45 Then he came to the disciples, and said: "Sleep on now, and rest

yourselves. Look - my time is close at hand, and the Son of Man is being betrayed into the hands of wicked people. Up, and let us be going. Look! My betrayer is close at hand." And, while he was still speaking, Judas, who was one of the Twelve, came in sight; and with him was a great crowd of people, with swords and clubs, sent from the chief priests and councillors of the nation. Now the betrayer had arranged a signal with them. "The man whom I kiss," he had said, "will be the one; arrest him." So he went up to Jesus at once, and exclaimed: "Welcome, Rabbi!" and kissed him; on which Jesus said to him: "Friend, do what you have come for." The men went up, seized Jesus, and arrested him. Suddenly one of those who were with Jesus stretched out his hand, and drew his sword, and striking the high priest's servant, cut off his ear. "Sheathe your sword," Jesus said, "for all who draw the sword will be put to the sword. Do you think that I cannot ask my Father for help, when he would at once send to my aid more than twelve legions of angels? But in that case how would the scriptures be fulfilled, which say that this must be?" Jesus at the same time said to the crowds: "Have you come out, as if after a robber, with swords and clubs, to take me? I have sat teaching day after day in the Temple Courts, and yet you did not arrest me." The whole of this occurred in fulfillment of the Prophetic scriptures. Then the disciples all forsook him and fled.

Those who had arrested Jesus took him to Caiaphas, the high priest, where the teachers of the law and the councillors had assembled. Peter followed him at a distance as far as the courtyard of the offices, to see the end. Meanwhile the chief priests and the whole of the High Council were trying to get such false evidence against Jesus, as would warrant putting him to death, but they did not find any, although many came forward with false evidence. Later on, however, two men came forward and said: "This man said 'I am able to destroy the Temple of God, and to build it in three days.'" Then the high priest stood up, and said to Jesus: "Have you no answer? What is this evidence which these men are giving against you?" But Jesus remained silent. The high priest said to him: "I order you, by the living God, to tell us whether you are the Christ, the Son of God."

"It is true," Jesus answered; "Moreover I tell you all that hereafter you will 'see the Son of Man sitting on the right hand of the Almighty, and coming on the clouds of the heavens.'" Then

the high priest tore his robes. "This is blasphemy!" he exclaimed. "Why do we want any more witnesses? You have just heard his blasphemy! What is your decision?" They answered: "He deserves death." Then they spat in his face, and struck him, while others dealt blows at him, saying as they did so: "Now play the prophet for us, you Christ! Who was it that struck you?" Peter, meanwhile, was sitting outside in the courtyard; and a maidservant came up to him, and exclaimed: "Why, you were with Jesus the Galilean!" But Peter denied it before them all. "I do not know what you mean," he replied. When he had gone out into the gateway, another maid saw him, and said to those who were there: "This man was with Jesus of Nazareth!" Again he denied it with an oath: "I do not know the man!" But soon afterwards those who were standing by came up and said to Peter: "You also are certainly one of them; why, even your way of speaking proves it!" Then Peter said: "I swear that I do not know the man! May God punish me if I am lying!" At that moment a cock crowed; and Peter remembered the words which Jesus had said — 'Before a cock has crowed, you will disown me three times'; and he went outside, and wept bitterly.

27 At daybreak all the chief priests and the councillors of the nation consulted together against Jesus, to bring about his death.

2 They put him in chains and led him away, and gave him up to the

3 Roman Governor, Pilate. Then Judas, who betrayed him, seeing that Jesus was condemned, repented of what he had done, and returned the thirty pieces of silver to the chief priests and councillors.

4 "I did wrong in betraying a good man to his death," he said. "What has that to do with us?" they replied. "You must see to that yourself." Judas flung down the pieces of silver in the Temple,

6 and left; and went away and hanged himself. The chief priests took the pieces of silver, but they said: "We must not put them

7 into the Temple treasury, because they are blood-money." So, after consultation, they bought with them the 'Potter's Field' for a

8 burial-ground for foreigners; and that is why that field is called

9 the 'Field of Blood' to this very day. Then it was that these words spoken by the prophet Jeremiah were fulfilled — 'They took the thirty pieces of silver, the price of him who was valued, whom

10 some of the people of Israel valued, and gave them for the Potter's field, as the Lord commanded me.' Meanwhile Jesus was

11 brought before the Roman Governor. "Are you the king of the

Jews?" asked the Governor. "It is true," answered Jesus. While 12
 charges were being brought against him by the chief priests and
 councillors, Jesus made no reply. Then Pilate said to him: "Don't 13
 you hear how many accusations they are making against you?"
 Yet Jesus made no reply — not even a single word; at which the 14
 Governor was greatly astonished. Now, at the feast, the Governor 15
 was accustomed to grant the people the release of any one pris-
 oner whom they might choose. At that time they had a notori- 16
 ous prisoner called Barabbas. So, when the people had collected, 17
 Pilate said to them: "Which do you wish me to release for you?
 Barabbas? Or Jesus who is called 'Christ'?" For he knew that it 18
 was out of jealousy that they had given Jesus up to him. While 19
 he was still on the Bench, his wife sent this message to him — "Do
 not have anything to do with that good man, for I have been very 20
 unhappy today in a dream because of him." But the chief priests
 and the councillors persuaded the crowds to ask for Barabbas,
 and to kill Jesus. The Governor, however, said to them: "Which 21
 of these two do you wish me to release for you?"

"Barabbas," they answered. "What then," Pilate asked, 22
 "should I do with Jesus who is called 'Christ'?" "Let him be
 crucified," they all replied. "Why, what harm has he done?" he 23
 asked. But they kept shouting furiously: "Let him be crucified!"
 When Pilate saw that his efforts were unavailing, but that, on 24
 the contrary, a riot was beginning, he took some water, and
 washed his hands in the sight of the crowd, saying as he did so:
 "I am not answerable for this bloodshed; you must see to it 25
 yourselves." And all the people answered: "His blood be on our
 heads and on our children's!" The Pilate released Barabbas to 26
 them; but Jesus he scourged, and gave him up to be crucified.

After that, the Governor's soldiers took Jesus with them into 27
 the Government house, and gathered the whole garrison around
 him. They stripped him, and put on him a red military cloak, and 28
 having twisted some thorns into a crown, put it on his head, and a 29
 rod in his right hand, and then, going down on their knees before
 him, they mocked him. "Long life to you, king of the Jews!" they
 said. They spat at him and, taking the rod, kept striking him on 30
 the head; and, when they had left off mocking him, they took off 31
 the military cloak, and put his own clothes on him, and led him
 away to be crucified.

32 As they were on their way out, they came upon a man from
Cyrene of the name of Simon; and they compelled him to go with
33 them to carry the cross. On reaching a place named Golgotha (a
34 place named from its likeness to a skull), they gave him some
wine to drink which had been mixed with gall; but after tast-
35 ing it, Jesus refused to drink it. When they had crucified him,
36 they divided his clothes among them by casting lots. Then they
37 sat down, and kept watch over him there. Above his head they
fixed the accusation against him written out — 'THIS IS JESUS
38 THE KING OF THE JEWS.' At the same time two robbers were
39 crucified with him, one on the right, the other on the left. The
40 passers-by railed at him, shaking their heads as they said: "You
who 'destroy the Temple and build one in three days,' save your-
41 self! If you are God's Son, come down from the cross!" In the same
way the chief priests, with the Teachers of the law and councillors,
42 said in mockery: "He saved others, but he cannot save himself!
He is the 'king of Israel!' Let him come down from the cross now,
43 and we will believe in him. He has trusted in God; if God wants
him, let him deliver him now; for he said 'I am God's Son.'" Even
44 the robbers, who were crucified with him, insulted him in the
45 same way. After midday a darkness came over all the country,
46 lasting until three in the afternoon. About three Jesus called out
loudly: "Eloi, Eloi, lema sabacthani" — that is to say, 'My God,
47 my God, why have you forsaken me?' Some of those standing by
48 heard this, and said: "The man is calling for Elijah!" One of them
immediately ran and took a sponge, and, filling it with common
wine, put it on the end of a rod, and offered it to him to drink. But
49 the rest said: "Wait and let us see if Elijah is coming to save him."
50 But Jesus, uttering another loud cry, gave up his spirit. Suddenly
51 the Temple curtain was torn in two from top to bottom, the earth
52 shook, the rocks were torn asunder, the tombs opened, and the
bodies of many of God's people who had fallen asleep rose, and
53 they, leaving their tombs, went, after the resurrection of Jesus,
54 into the Holy City, and appeared to many people. The Roman
captain, and the men with him who were watching Jesus, on see-
ing the earthquake and all that was happening, became greatly
55 frightened and exclaimed: "This must indeed have been God's
Son!" There were many women there, watching from a distance,
who had accompanied Jesus from Galilee and had been attending

on him. Among them were Mary of Magdala, Mary the mother of James and Joseph, and the mother of Zebedee's sons. 56

When evening had fallen, there came a rich man belonging to Ramah, named Joseph, who had himself become a disciple of Jesus. He went to see Pilate, and asked for the body of Jesus. Pilate ordered it to be given him. So Joseph took the body, and wrapped it in a clean linen sheet, and laid it in his newly made tomb which he had cut in the rock; and, before he left, he rolled a great stone against the entrance of the tomb. Mary of Magdala and the other Mary remained behind, sitting in front of the grave. 57
58
59
60
61

The next day — that is, the day following the Preparation-day — the chief priests and Pharisees came in a body to Pilate, and said: "Sir, we remember that, during his lifetime, that impostor said 'I will rise after three days.' So order the tomb to be made secure until the third day. Otherwise his disciples may come and steal him, and then say to the people 'He has risen from the dead,' when the latest imposture will be worse than the first." 62
63
64

"You may have a guard," was Pilate's reply; "go and make the tomb as secure as you can." So they went made the tomb secure, by sealing the stone, in presence of the guard. 65
66

The Risen Life

AFTER THE SABBATH, as the first day of the week began to dawn, Mary of Magdala and the other Mary had gone to look at the grave, when suddenly a great earthquake occurred. For an angel of the Lord descended from heaven, and came and rolled away the stone, and seated himself on it. His appearance was as dazzling as lightning, and his clothing was as white as snow; and, in their terror of him, the men on guard trembled violently and became like dead men. But the angel, addressing the women, said; "You need not be afraid. I now that it is Jesus, who was crucified, for whom you are looking. He is not here; for he has risen, as he said he would. Come, and see the place where he was lying; and then go quickly and say to him disciples 'He has risen from the dead, and is going before you into Galilee; there you will see him.' Remember, I have told you." They left the tomb quickly, in awe and great joy, and ran to tell the news to the disciples. Suddenly Jesus met them. "Welcome!" he said. The women went up to him, 28
2
3
4
5
6
7
8
9

10 and clasped his feet, bowing to the ground before him. Then Je-
11 sus said to them: "Do not be afraid; go and tell my brothers and
12 sisters to set out for Galilee, and they will see me there." While
13 they were still on their way, some of the guard came into the city,
14 and reported to the chief priests everything that had happened.
15 So they and the councillors met and, after holding a consulta-
16 tion, gave a large sum of money to the soldiers, and told them to
17 say that his disciples came in the night, and stole him while they
18 were asleep; "And should this matter come before the Governor,"
19 they added, "we will satisfy him, and see that you have nothing
20 to fear." So the soldiers took the money, and did as they were in-
structed. This story spread widely; the people of Judea still tell it
today.

16 The eleven disciples went to Galilee, to the mountain where Jesus
17 told them to meet him; and, when they saw him, they bowed to
18 the ground before him; although some felt doubtful. Then Jesus
came up, and spoke to them, saying:

"All authority in heaven and on the earth has been given to
19 me. Therefore go and make disciples of all the nations, baptiz-
20 ing them into the faith of the Father, the Son, and the Holy Spirit,
and teaching them to lay to heart all the commands that I have
given you; and, remember, I myself am with you every day until
the close of the age."

THE
GOOD NEWS ACCORDING TO
MARK

The Preparation

THE BEGINNING OF THE GOOD NEWS ABOUT JESUS CHRIST. 1
 It is said in the prophet Isaiah — 2
 'I am sending my messenger ahead of you;
 he will prepare your way.
 The voice of one crying aloud in the wilderness: 3
 "Prepare the road for the Lord,
 make a straight path for him."
 John the Baptizer appeared in the wilderness, proclaiming a bap- 4
 tism on repentance, for the forgiveness of sins. The whole of 5
 Judea, as well as all the inhabitants of Jerusalem, went out to him;
 and they were baptized by him in the Jordan River, confessing
 their sins.
 John wore clothes made of camels' hair, with a leather strap 6
 around his waist, and lived on locusts and wild honey; and he 7
 proclaimed — "After me is coming someone more powerful than
 I am, and I am not fit even to stoop down and unfasten his sandals.
 I have baptized you with water, but he will baptize you with the 8
 Holy Spirit."
 Now about that time Jesus came from Nazareth in Galilee, and 9
 was baptized by John in the Jordan. Just as he was coming up out 10
 of the water, he saw the heavens split open and the Spirit coming
 down to him like a dove, and from the heavens came a voice — 11
 "You are my dearly loved son; you bring me great joy."
 Immediately afterwards the Spirit drove Jesus out into the 12
 wilderness; and he was there in the wilderness forty days, 13
 tempted by Satan, and among the wild beasts, while the angels
 helped him.

The Work in Galilee

14 AFTER JOHN HAD BEEN ARRESTED, Jesus went to Galilee, proclaiming
15 the good news of God — “The time has come, and the kingdom
of God is at hand; repent, and believe the good news.”

16 As Jesus was going along the shore of the Sea of Galilee, he saw
Simon and his brother Andrew casting a net in the Sea, for they
17 were fishermen. “Come and follow me,” Jesus said, “and I will
18 teach you to fish for people.” They left their nets at once, and
followed him.

19 Going on a little further, he saw James, Zebedee’s son, and his
20 brother John, who were in their boat mending the nets. Jesus
called them at once, and they left their father Zebedee in the boat
with the crew, and went after him.

21 They walked to Capernaum. On the next Sabbath Jesus went
22 into the synagogue and began to teach. The people were amazed
at his teaching, for he taught them like one who had authority,
23 and not like the teachers of the law. Now there was in their syn-
agogue at the time a man under the power of a foul spirit, who
24 called out: “What do you want with us, Jesus of Nazareth? Have
you come to destroy us? I know who you are — the Holy One of
25 God!” But Jesus rebuked the spirit: “Be silent! Come out from
26 him.” The foul spirit threw the man into a fit, and with a loud
27 cry came out from him. They were all so amazed that they kept
asking each other: “What is this? What is this strange teaching?
He gives his commands with authority even to the foul spirits,
28 and they obey him!” His fame spread at once in all directions,
through the whole neighborhood of Galilee.

29 As soon as they had left the synagogue, they went, with James
30 and John, into the house of Simon and Andrew. Now Simon’s
mother-in-law was lying ill with a fever, and they at once told
31 Jesus about her. Jesus went up to her and, grasping her hand,
raised her up; the fever left her, and she began to take care of them.

32 In the evening, after sunset, the people brought to Jesus all
33 who were ill or possessed by demons; and the whole city was
34 gathered around the door. Jesus cured many who were ill with
various diseases, and drove out many demons, and would not
permit them to speak, because they knew him to be the Christ.

In the morning, long before daylight, Jesus rose and went out, 35
 and, going to a lonely spot, there began to pray. But Simon and 36
 his companions went out searching for him; and, when they 37
 found him, they exclaimed: "Everyone is looking for you!" But 38
 Jesus said to them: "Let us go somewhere else, into the country
 towns nearby so that I can make my proclamation in them also;
 for that was why I came." And he went about making his 39
 proclamation in their Synagogues all through Galilee, and
 driving out the demons.

One day a leper came to Jesus and, falling on his knees, begged 40
 him for help. "If only you are willing," he said, "you are able to 41
 make me clean." Moved with compassion, Jesus stretched out his 42
 hand and touched him, saying as he did so: "I am willing; become 43
 clean." Instantly the leprosy left the man, and he became clean; 44
 and then Jesus, after sternly warning him, immediately sent him
 away, and said to him: "Be careful not to say anything to anyone; 44
 but go and show yourself to the priest, and make the offerings for
 your cleansing directed by Moses, as evidence of your cure." The 45
 man, however, went away, and began to speak about it publicly,
 and to spread the story so widely, that Jesus could no longer go
 openly into a town, but stayed outside in lonely places; and people
 came to him from every direction.

Some days later, when Jesus came back to Capernaum, the 2
 news spread that he was in a house there; and so many peo- 2
 ple collected together, that after a while there was no room for
 them even around the door; and he began to tell them his mes- 3
 sage. Some people came, bringing to him a paralyzed man, who 4
 was being carried by four of them. Being, however, unable to get
 him near to Jesus, owing to the crowd, they removed the roofing 4
 above Jesus; and, when they had made an opening, they let down
 the mat on which the paralyzed man was lying. When Jesus saw 5
 their faith, he said to the man: "Child, your sins are forgiven."

But some of the teachers of the law who were sitting there were 6
 debating in their minds: "Why does this man speak like this? 7
 He is blaspheming! Who can forgive sins except God?" Jesus, at 8
 once intuitively aware that they were debating with themselves
 in this way, said to them: "Why are you debating in your minds
 about this? Which is easier? — to say to the paralyzed man, 'Your 9
 sins are forgiven'? Or to say 'Get up, and take up your mat, and
 walk'? But so you may know that the Son of Man has power to 10

- 11 forgive sins on earth" — here he said to the paralyzed man — "To
12 you I say, Get up, take up your mat, and return to your home."
13 The man got up, and immediately took up his mat, and went out
14 before them all; at which they were amazed, and, as they praised
15 God, they said: "We have never seen anything like this!"
16 Jesus went out again to the Sea; and all the people came to him,
17 and he taught them. As he went along, he saw Levi, the son of
18 Alphaeus, sitting in the tax office, and said to him: "Follow me."
19 Levi got up and followed him.
20 Later on he was in his house having dinner, and a number of
21 tax-gatherers and outcasts took their places at the table with Jesus
22 and his disciples; for many of them were following him. When
23 the teachers of the law belonging to the party of the Pharisees saw
24 that he was eating in the company of such people, they said to his
25 disciples: "He is eating in the company of tax-gatherers and out-
26 casts!" Hearing this, Jesus said: "It is not those who are healthy
who need a doctor, but those who are ill. I did not come to call
the religious, but the outcast."
27 Now John's disciples and the Pharisees were fasting, and peo-
28 ple came and asked Jesus: "Why is it that John's disciples and
29 the disciples of the Pharisees fast, while yours do not?" Jesus an-
30 swered: "Can the groom's friends fast, while the groom is with
31 them? As long as they have the groom with them, they cannot
32 fast. But the days will come, when the groom will be taken away
33 from them, and they will fast then — when that day comes.
34 "No one ever sews a piece of unshrunk cloth on an old garment;
35 if they do, the patch tears away from it — the new from the old —
36 and a worse tear is made. And no one ever puts new wine into
old wine-skins; if they do, the wine will burst the skins, and both
the wine and the skins are lost. But new wine is put into fresh
skins."
37 One Sabbath, as Jesus was walking through the cornfields,
38 his disciples began to pick the ears of wheat as they went along.
39 "Look!" the Pharisees said to him, "why are they doing what is
40 not allowed on the Sabbath?"
41 "Have you never read," answered Jesus, "what David did
42 when he was in need and hungry, he and his companions —
43 How he went into the house of God, in the time of Abiathar the
44 high priest, and ate the consecrated bread, which only the priests
45 are allowed to eat, and gave some to his comrades as well?"

Then Jesus added: "The Sabbath was made for people, and not 27
people for the Sabbath; so the Son of Man is lord even of the 28
Sabbath."

On another occasion Jesus went in to a synagogue, where there 3
was a man whose hand was withered. And they watched Jesus 2
closely, to see if he would cure the man on the Sabbath, so that
they might have a charge to bring against him. "Stand out in the 3
middle," Jesus said to the man with the withered hand; and to 4
the people he said: "Is it allowable to do good at the Sabbath — or
harm? To save a life, or destroy it?" As they remained silent, Jesus 5
looked around at them in anger, grieving at the hardness of their
hearts, and said to the man: "Stretch out your hand." The man
stretched it out; and his hand had become sound. Immediately on 6
leaving the synagogue, the Pharisees and the Herodians united in
laying a plot against Jesus, to put him to death.

Then Jesus went away with his disciples to the Sea, followed 7
by a great number of people from Galilee. A great number, 8
hearing of all that he was doing, came to him from Judea, from
Jerusalem, from Edom, from beyond the Jordan, and from the
country around Tyre and Sidon. So Jesus told his disciples to 9
keep a small boat close by, so that the crowd would not crush
him. For he had cured many of them, and so people kept 10
crowding around him, so all who were sick might touch him.
The foul spirits, too, whenever they caught sight of him, flung 11
themselves down before him, and screamed out: "You are the
Son of God"! But he repeatedly warned them not to make him 12
known.

Jesus made his way up the hill, and called those whom he 13
wished; and they went to him. He appointed twelve — whom 14
he also named 'apostles' — so that they might be with him, and
that he might send them out as his messengers, to preach, and 15
with power to drive out demons. So he appointed the Twelve — 16
Peter (which was the name that Jesus gave to Simon), James, the
son of Zebedee, and his brother John (to whom he gave the
name of Boanerges, which means the Thunderers), Andrew, 18
Philip, Bartholomew, Matthew, Thomas, James the son of
Alphaeus, Thaddaeus, Simon the Zealot, and Judas Iscariot, the 19
man who betrayed him.

20 Jesus went into a house; and again a crowd collected, so that
21 they were not even able to eat their food. When his relations heard
of it, they went to take charge of him, for they said that he was out
of his mind.

22 The teachers of the law, who had come down from Jerusalem,
said: "He has Beelzebul in him! He he drives the demons out by
23 the help of their chief." So Jesus called them to him, and answered
24 them in parables: "How can Satan drive out Satan? When a king-
25 dom is divided against itself, it cannot last; and when a household
26 is divided against itself, it will not be able to last. So, if Satan is
in revolt against himself and is divided, he cannot last — his end
has come!

27 "No man who has got into a strong man's house can carry off
his goods, without first securing him; and not until then will he
28 plunder his house. I tell you that people will be forgiven every-
29 thing — their sins, and all the slanders that they utter; but who-
ever slanders the Holy Spirit remains unforgiven to the end; he
30 has to answer for an enduring sin." This was said in reply to the
31 charge that he had a foul spirit in him. His mother and his brothers
came, and stood outside, and sent to ask him to come to them.
32 There was a crowd sitting around Jesus, and some of them said
to him: "Look, your mother and your brothers are outside, asking
for you."

33 "Who is my mother? And my brothers?" was his reply. Then
34 he looked around on the people sitting in a circle around him,
35 and said: "Here are my mother and my brothers! Whoever does
the will of God is my brother and sister and mother."

4 Jesus again began to teach by the Sea; and, as an immense
crowd was gathering around him, he got into a boat, and sat in it
on the Sea, while all the people were on the shore at the water's
edge.

2 Then he taught them many truths in parables; and in the course
of his teaching he said to them:

3 "Listen! The sower went out to sow; and presently, as he was
4 sowing, some of the seed fell along the path; and the birds came,
5 and ate it up. Some fell on rocky ground, where it had not much
6 soil, and, because the soil wasn't deep, sprang up at once; but,
when the sun rose, it was scorched, and, because their roots were

not deep enough, withered away. Some of the seed fell among 7
brambles; but the brambles shot up and completely choked it,
and it yielded no return. Some fell into good soil, and, shoot- 8
ing up and growing, yielded a return, amounting to thirty, sixty,
and even a hundred fold." And Jesus said: "Let anyone who has 9
ears to hear with hear."

Afterwards, when he was alone, his followers and the Twelve 10
asked him about his parables; and he said: "To you the hidden 11
truth of the kingdom of God has been imparted; but to those who
are outside it all teaching takes the form of parables so that —
'Though they have eyes, they may see without perceiving; and 12
though they have ears, they may hear without understanding;
otherwise some day they might turn and be forgiven.'

"You do not know the meaning of this parable?" he went on; 13
"Then how will you understand all the other parables? The sower 14
sows the message. The people meant by the seed that falls along 15
the path are these — where the message is sown, but, as soon
as they have heard it, Satan immediately comes and carries away
the message that has been sown in them. So, too, those meant 16
by the seed sown on the rocky places are the people who, when
they have heard the message, at once accept it joyfully; but, as 17
they have no root, they stand only for a short time; and so, when
trouble or persecution arises because of the message, they fall
away at once. Those meant by the seed sown among the brambles 18
are different; they are the people who hear the message, but the 19
cares of life, and the glamour of wealth, and cravings for many
other things come in and completely choke the message, so that
it gives no return. But the people meant by the seed sown on the 20
good ground are those who hear the message, and welcome it,
and yield a return, thirty, sixty, and even a hundred fold."

Jesus said to them: "Is a lamp brought to be put under a bas- 21
ket or under the couch, instead of being put on the lamp-stand?
There is nothing hidden that will not come to light and nothing 22
is concealed that will not be brought into the open. Let all who 23
have ears to hear with hear.

Take care what you listen to," said Jesus. "The standard you 24
use will be used for you, and more will be added for you. For, to 25
those who have, more will be given; while, from those who have
nothing, even what they have will be taken away."

26 Jesus also said: "This is what the kingdom of God is like — like
27 a man who has scattered seed on the ground, and then sleeps by
night and rises by day, while the seed is shooting up and growing
28 — he knows not how. The ground bears the crop of itself — first
29 the blade, then the ear, and then the full grain in the ear; but,
as soon as the crop is ready, immediately he 'puts in the sickle
because harvest has come'."

30 Jesus also said: "To what can we liken the kingdom of God?
31 By what can we illustrate it? Perhaps by the growth of a mustard
seed. This seed, when sown in the ground, though it is smaller
32 than all other seeds, yet, when sown, shoots up, and becomes
larger than any other herb, and puts out great branches, so that
even 'the wild birds can roost in its shelter.'"

33 With many such parables Jesus used to speak to the people of
34 his message, as far as they were able to receive it; and to them he
never used to speak except in parables; but in private to his own
disciples he explained everything.

35 In the evening of the same day, Jesus said to them: "Let us go
36 across." So, leaving the crowd behind, they took him with them,
just as he was, in the boat; and there were other boats with him. A
37 violent squall came on, and the waves kept dashing into the boat,
38 so that the boat was actually filling. Jesus was in the stern asleep
on the cushion; and the disciples roused him and cried: "Teacher!
39 Is it nothing to you that we are lost?" Jesus rose and rebuked
the wind, and said to the sea: "Hush! Be still!" Then the wind
40 dropped, and a great calm followed. "Why are you so timid?" he
41 exclaimed. "Have you no faith yet?" But they were struck with
great awe, and said to one another: "Who can this be that even
the wind and the sea obey him?"

5 They came to the other side of the Sea — the country of the
2 Gerasenes; and, as soon as Jesus had got out of the boat, he met
a man coming out of the tombs, who was under the power of a
3 foul spirit, and who made his home in the tombs. No one had
4 ever been able to secure him, even with a chain; for, though he
had many times been left secured with fetters and chains, he had
snapped the chains and broken the fetters to pieces, and no one
5 could master him. Night and day alike, he was continually shrieking
in the tombs and among the hills, and cutting himself with

stones. Catching sight of Jesus from a distance, he ran and bowed 6
to the ground before him, shrieking out in a loud voice: "What do 7
you want with me, Jesus, Son of the Most High God? For God's
sake do not torment me!" For Jesus had said: "Come out from the 8
man, you foul spirit." And he asked him: "What is your name?" 9
"My name," he said, "is Legion, for there are many of us;" and he 10
begged Jesus again and again not to send them away out of that
country.

There was a large drove of pigs close by, feeding on the hillside; 11
and the spirits begged Jesus: "Send us into the pigs so that we can 12
take possession of them." Jesus gave them leave. They came out, 13
and entered into the pigs; and the drove — about two thousand
in number — rushed down the steep slope into the Sea and were
drowned in the Sea.

Then the men who tended them ran away, and carried the news 14
to the town, and to the country around; and the people went to
see what had happened. When they came to Jesus, they found 15
the possessed man sitting there, clothed and in his right mind
— the man who had had the 'Legion' in him — and they were
awe-struck. Then those who had seen it related to them all that 16
had happened to the possessed man, as well as about the pigs; so
they began to beg Jesus to leave their neighborhood. 17

As Jesus was getting into the boat, the possessed man begged 18
him to let him stay with him. But Jesus refused. "Go back to your 19
home, to your own people," he said, "and tell them of all that the
Lord has done for you, and how he took pity on you." So the man 20
went, and began to proclaim in the district of the Ten Towns all
that Jesus had done for him; and everyone was amazed.

By the time Jesus had recrossed in the boat to the opposite 21
shore, a great number of people had gathered to meet him, and
were standing by the Sea. One of the Presidents of the synagogue, 22
whose name was Jaerius, came and, as soon as he saw Jesus, threw
himself at his feet with repeated entreaties. "My little daughter," 23
he said, "is at the point of death; I beg you to come and place your
hands on her so that her life may be spared." So Jesus went with 24
him. A great number of people followed Jesus, and kept pressing
around him.

Meanwhile a woman who for twelve years had suffered from 25
hemorrhage, and undergone much at the hands of many doctors,
(spending all she had without obtaining any relief, but, on the 26

27 contrary, growing worse), heard about Jesus, came behind in the
28 crowd, and touched his cloak. "If I can only touch his clothes,"
29 she said, "I will get well!" At once her bleeding stopped, and
30 she felt in herself that she was cured of her complaint. Jesus at
once became aware of the power that had gone out from him, and,
turning around in the crowd, he said: "Who touched my clothes?"

31 "You see the people pressing around you," exclaimed his dis-
32 ciples, "and yet you say 'Who touched me?'" But Jesus looked
33 about to see who had done it. Then the woman, in fear and trem-
bling, knowing what had happened to her, came and threw her-
self down before him, and told him the whole truth. "Daughter,"
34 he said, "your faith has delivered you. Go, and peace be with
you; be free from your complaint."

35 Before he had finished speaking, some people from the house
of the synagogue leader came and said: "Your daughter is dead!
36 Why should you trouble the teacher further?" But Jesus, over-
hearing what they were saying, said to the synagogue leader: "Do
37 not be afraid; only have faith." And he allowed no one to accom-
pany him, except Peter, James, and John, the brother of James.
38 Presently they reached the leader's house, where Jesus saw a
scene of confusion — people weeping and wailing incessantly.
39 "Why this confusion and weeping?" he said on entering. "The
40 little child is not dead; she is asleep." They began to laugh at
him; but he sent them all out, and then, with the child's father
and mother and his companions, went into the room where she
41 was lying. Taking her hand, Jesus said to her: "Taleitha, koum!"
42 — which means 'little girl, I am speaking to you — Rise!' The little
girl stood up at once, and began to walk about; for she was twelve
years old. And, as soon as they saw it, they were overwhelmed
43 with amazement; but Jesus repeatedly cautioned them not to let
anyone know of it, and told them to give her something to eat.

6 On leaving that place, Jesus, followed by his disciples, went
2 to his own part of the country. When the Sabbath came, he be-
gan to teach in the synagogue; and the people, as they listened,
were deeply impressed. "Where did he get this?" they said, "and
what is this wisdom that has been given him? And these mira-
3 cles which he is doing? Is not he the carpenter, the son of Mary,
and the brother of James, and Joses, and Judas, and Simon? And
are not his sisters, too, living here among us?" This proved a hin-
4 drance to their believing in him; on which Jesus said: "A prophet

is not without honor, except in his own country, and among his own relations, and in his own home." And he could not work any miracle there, beyond placing his hands on a few infirm persons, and curing them; and he wondered at the want of faith shown by the people. Jesus went around the villages, one after another, teaching.

He called the Twelve to him, and began to send them out as his messengers, two and two, and gave them authority over foul spirits. He instructed them to take nothing but a staff for the journey — not even bread, or a bag, or coins in their purse; but they were to wear sandals, and not to put on a second coat. "Whenever you go to stay at a house," he said, "remain there until you leave that place; and if a place does not welcome you, or listen to you, as you go out of it shake off the dust that is on the soles of your feet, as a protest against them." So they set out, and proclaimed the need of repentance. They drove out many demons, and anointed with oil many who were infirm, and cured them.

Now King Herod heard of Jesus; for his name had become well known. People were saying — "John the Baptizer must have risen from the dead, and that is why these miraculous powers are active in him." Others again said — "He is Elijah," and others — "He is a prophet, like one of the great prophets." But when Herod heard of him, he said — "The man whom I beheaded — John — he must be risen!"

For Herod himself had sent and arrested John, and put him in prison, in chains, to please Herodias, the wife of his brother Philip, because Herod had married her. For John had said to Herod — "You have no right to be living with your brother's wife." So Herodias was incensed against John, and wanted to put him to death, but was unable to do so, because Herod stood in fear of John, knowing him to be an upright and holy man, and protected him. He had listened to John, but still remained much perplexed, and yet he found pleasure in listening to him.

A suitable opportunity, however, occurred when Herod, on his birthday, gave a dinner to his high officials, and his generals, and the foremost men in Galilee. When his daughter — that is, the daughter of Herodias — came in and danced, she delighted

Herod and those who were dining with him. "Ask me for whatever you like," the king said to the girl, "and I will give it to you";
23 and he swore to her that he would give her whatever she asked
24 him — up to half his kingdom. The girl went out, and said to her mother "What must I ask for?"

25 "The head of John the Baptizer," answered her mother. So she went in as quickly as possible to the king, and made her request. "I want you," she said, "to give me at once, on a dish, the head of
26 John the Baptist." The king was much distressed; yet, because of his oath and of the guests at his table, he did not like to refuse her.
27 He immediately dispatched one of his bodyguard, with orders to bring John's head. The man went and beheaded John in the
28 prison, and, bringing his head on a dish, gave it to the girl, and the girl gave it to her mother.

29 When John's disciples heard of it, they came and took his body away, and laid it in a tomb.

30 When the apostles came back to Jesus, they told him all that they had done and all that they had taught. "Come by yourselves privately to some lonely spot," he said, "and rest for a while" —
31 for there were so many people coming and going that they had
32 not time even to eat. So they set off privately in their boat for a lonely spot. Many people saw them going, and recognized them,
33 and from all the towns they flocked together to the place on foot, and got there before them. On getting out of the boat, Jesus saw
34 a great crowd, and his heart was moved at the sight of them, because they were 'like sheep without a shepherd'; and he began to
35 teach them many things. When it grew late, his disciples came up to him, and said: "This is a lonely spot, and it is already late.
36 Send the people away, so that they may go to the farms and villages around and buy themselves something to eat." But Jesus
37 answered: "It is for you to give them something to eat." "Are we to go and spend almost a year's wages on bread," they asked, "to give them to eat?"

38 "How many loaves have you?" he asked; "Go, and see." When they had found out, they told him: "Five, and two fishes." Jesus directed them to make all the people take their seats on the green
40 grass, in parties; and they sat down in groups — in hundreds,
41 and in fifties. Taking the five loaves and the two fishes, Jesus looked up to heaven, and said the blessing; he broke the loaves into pieces, and gave them to his disciples for them to serve out

to the people, and he divided the two fishes also among them all. Everyone had sufficient to eat; and they picked up enough broken pieces to fill twelve baskets, as well as some of the fish. The people who ate the bread were five thousand in number.

Immediately afterwards Jesus made his disciples get into the boat, and cross over in advance, in the direction of Bethsaida, while he himself was dismissing the crowd. After he had taken leave of the people, he went away up the hill to pray. When evening fell, the boat was out in the middle of the Sea, and Jesus on the shore alone. Seeing them laboring at the oars — for the wind was against them — about three hours after midnight Jesus came towards them, walking on the water, intending to join them. But, when they saw him walking on the water, they thought it was a ghost, and cried out; for all of them saw him, and were terrified. But Jesus at once spoke to them. “Courage!” he said, “it is I; do not be afraid!” Then he got into the boat with them, and the wind dropped. The disciples were utterly amazed, for they had not understood about the loaves, their minds being slow to learn. When they had crossed over, they landed at Gennesaret, and moored the boat. But they had no sooner left her than the people, recognizing Jesus, hurried over the whole country-side, and began to carry about on mats those who were ill, wherever they heard he was. So wherever he went — to villages, or towns, or farms — they would lay their sick in the market-places, begging him to let them touch only the tassel of his cloak; and all who touched were made well.

One day the Pharisees and some of the teachers of the law who had come from Jerusalem gathered around Jesus. They had noticed that some of his disciples ate their food with their hands ‘defiled,’ by which they meant unwashed. (For the Pharisees, and indeed all strict Jews, will not eat without first scrupulously washing their hands, holding in this to the traditions of their ancestors. When they come from market, they will not eat without first sprinkling themselves; and there are many other customs which they have inherited and hold to, such as the ceremonial washing of cups, and jugs, and copper pans). So the Pharisees and the teachers of the law asked Jesus this question — “How is it that your disciples do not follow the traditions of our ancestors, but

6 eat their food with defiled hands?" His answer was: "It was well
said by Isaiah when he prophesied about you hypocrites in the
7 words — 'This is a people who honor me with their lips, while
8 their hearts are far removed from me; but vainly do they wor-
9 ship me, For they teach but human precepts.' You neglect God's
10 commandments and hold to human traditions. Wisely do you set
aside God's commandments," he exclaimed, "to keep your own
11 traditions! For while Moses said 'Honor your father and your
mother,' and 'Let anyone who abuses their father or mother suffer
12 death,' you say 'If a person says to their father or mother "What-
13 ever of mine might have been of service to you is Korban"' (which
means 'Given to God') — why, then you do not allow them to do
14 anything further for their father or mother! In this way you nul-
lify the words of God by your traditions, which you hand down;
and you do many similar things."
15 Then Jesus called the people to him again, and said: "Listen to
me, all of you, and mark my words. There is nothing external
to a person, which by going into them can 'defile' them; but the
things that come out of a person are the things that defile them."
16 When Jesus went indoors, away from the crowd, his disciples
17 began questioning him about this saying. "What, do even you
18 understand so little?" exclaimed Jesus. "Don't you see that there
is nothing external to a person, which by going into a person, can
19 'defile' them, because it does not pass into his heart, but into his
stomach, and is afterwards got rid of? — in saying this Jesus pro-
20 nounced all food 'clean.' "It is what comes out from a person,"
21 he added, "that defiles them, for it is from within, out of the
hearts of people, that there come evil thoughts — sexual immoral-
22 ity, theft, murder, adultery, greed, wickedness, deceit, indecency,
23 envy, slander, haughtiness, folly; all these wicked things come
from within, and do defile a person."
24 On leaving that place, Jesus went to the district of Tyre and
Sidon. He went into a house, and did not wish anyone to know
25 it, but could not escape notice. For a woman, whose little daugh-
ter had a foul spirit in her, heard of him immediately, and came
26 and threw herself at his feet — the woman was a foreigner, from
Syrian Phoenicia — and she begged him to drive the demon out
27 of her daughter. "Let the children be satisfied first," answered Je-
sus. "For it is not fair to take the children's food, and throw it to
dogs."

"Yes, Master," she replied; "even the dogs under the table do feed on the children's crumbs." 28

"For saying that," he answered, "you may go. The demon has gone out of your daughter." The woman went home, and found the child lying on her bed, and the demon gone. 29 30

On returning from the district of Tyre, Jesus went, by way of Sidon, to the Sea of Galilee, across the district of the Ten Towns. Some people brought to him a man who was deaf and almost dumb, and they begged Jesus to place his hand on him. Jesus took him aside from the crowd quietly, put his fingers into the man's ears, and touched his tongue with saliva. Then, looking up to heaven, he sighed, and said to the man: "Ephphatha!" which means 'Be opened.' The man's ears were opened, the string of his tongue was freed, and he began to talk plainly. Jesus insisted on their not telling anyone; but the more he insisted, the more perseveringly they made it known, and a profound impression was made on the people. "He has done everything well!" they exclaimed. "He makes even the deaf hear and the dumb speak!" 31 32 33 34 35 36 37

About that time, when there was again a great crowd of people who had nothing to eat, Jesus called his disciples to him, and said: "My heart is moved at the sight of all these people, for they have already been with me three days and they have nothing to eat; and if I send them away to their homes hungry, they will break down on the way; and some of them have come a long distance." "Where will it be possible," his disciples answered, "to get sufficient bread for these people in this lonely place?" 8 2 3 4

"How many loaves have you?" he asked. "Seven," they answered. Jesus told the crowd to sit down on the ground. Then he took the seven loaves, and, after saying the thanksgiving, broke them, and gave them to his disciples to serve out; and they served them out to the crowd. They had also a few small fish; and, after he had said the blessing, he told the disciples to serve out these as well. The people had sufficient to eat, and they picked up seven baskets full of the broken pieces that were left. There were about four thousand people. Then Jesus dismissed them. Immediately afterwards, getting into the boat with his disciples, Jesus went to the district of Dalmanutha. 5 6 7 8 9 10

11 Here the Pharisees came out, and began to argue with Jesus,
12 asking him for some sign from the heavens, to test him. Sighing
deeply, Jesus said: "Why does this generation ask for a sign? I tell
13 you, no sign will be given it." So he left them to themselves, and,
getting into the boat again, went away to the opposite shore.

14 Now the disciples had forgotten to take any bread with them,
15 one loaf being all that they had in the boat. So Jesus gave them
this warning. "Take care," he said, "beware of the leaven of the
16 Pharisees and the leaven of Herod." They began talking to one
17 another about their being short of bread; and, noticing this, Je-
sus said to them: "Why are you talking about your being short of
bread? Don't you yet see or understand? Are your minds still so
18 slow or comprehension? "Though you have eyes, do you not see?
And though you have ears, do you not hear? Don't you remem-
19 ber, when I broke up the five loaves for the five thousand, how
many baskets of broken pieces you picked up?"

20 "Twelve," they said. "And when the seven for the four thou-
sand, how many basketfuls of broken pieces did you pick up?"

21 "Seven," they said. "Don't you understand now?" he repeated.

22 They came to Bethsaida. There some people brought a blind
23 man to Jesus, and begged him to touch him. Taking the blind
man's hand, Jesus led him to the outskirts of the village, and,
when he had put saliva on the man's eyes, he placed his hands
24 on him, and asked him: "Do you see anything?" The man looked
up, and said: "I see the people, for, as they walk about, they look
25 to me like trees." Then Jesus again placed his hands on the man's
eyes; and the man saw clearly, his sight was restored, and he saw
26 everything with perfect distinctness. Jesus sent him to his home,
and said: "Do not go even into the village."

27 Afterwards Jesus and his disciples went into the villages
around Caesarea Philippi; and on the way he asked his disciples
this question — "Who do people say that I am?"

28 "John the Baptist," they answered, "but others say Elijah, while
others say one of the prophets."

29 "But you," he asked, "who do you say that I am?" To this Peter
30 replied: "You are the Christ." On which Jesus charged them not
31 to say this about him to anyone. Then he began to teach them
that the Son of Man must undergo much suffering, and that he

must be rejected by the councillors, and the chief priests, and the teachers of the law, and be put to death, and rise again after three days. He said all this quite openly. But Peter took Jesus aside, and began to rebuke him. Jesus, however, turning around and seeing his disciples, rebuked Peter. "Out of my sight, Satan!" he exclaimed. "For you look at things, not as God does, but as people do."

Calling the people and his disciples to him, Jesus said: "If anyone wishes to walk in my steps, let them renounce self, take up their cross, and follow me. For whoever wishes to save their life will lose it, and whoever, for my sake and for the sake of the good news, will lose their life will save it. What good is it to a person to gain the whole world and forfeit their life? For what could a person give that is of equal value with their life? Whoever is ashamed of me and of my teaching, in this unfaithful and wicked generation, of them will the Son of Man be ashamed, when he comes in his Father's glory with the holy angels."

"I tell you," he added, "that some of those who are standing here will not know death until they have seen the kingdom of God come in power."

Six days later, Jesus took with him Peter, James, and John, and led them up a high mountain alone by themselves. There his appearance was transformed before their eyes, and his clothes became of a more dazzling white than any bleacher in the world could make them. And Elijah appeared to them, in company with Moses; and they were talking with Jesus. "Rabbi," said Peter, interposing, "it is good to be here; let us make three tents, one for you, one for Moses, and one for Elijah." For he did not know what to say, because they were much afraid. Then a cloud came down and enveloped them; and from the cloud there came a voice — "This is my dearly loved son; listen to him." And suddenly, on looking around, they saw that there was now no one with them but Jesus alone.

As they were going down the mountainside, Jesus cautioned them not to relate what they had seen to anyone, until after the Son of Man should have risen again from the dead. They seized on these words and discussed with one another what this 'rising from the dead' meant. "How is it," they asked Jesus, "that our teachers of the law say that Elijah has to come first?"

12 "Elijah does indeed come first," answered Jesus, "and re-establish everything; and does not scripture speak, with regard to the
13 Son of Man, of his undergoing much suffering and being utterly despised? But I tell you that Elijah has come, and people have treated him just as they pleased, as scripture says of him."

14 When they came to the other disciples, they saw a great crowd around them, and some teachers of the law arguing with them.
15 But, as soon as they saw Jesus, all the people, in great astonishment, ran up and greeted him. "What are you arguing about with
16 them?" Jesus asked. "Teacher," answered a man in the crowd, "I brought my son to see you, as he has a dumb spirit in him;
17 and, wherever it seizes him, it dashes him down; he foams at the mouth and grinds his teeth, and he is pining away. I asked your
18 disciples to drive the spirit out, but they failed."

19 "Faithless generation!" exclaimed Jesus. "How long must I be with you? How long must I have patience with you? Bring the boy
20 to me." They brought him to Jesus; but no sooner did the boy see him than the spirit threw him into convulsions; and he fell on the
21 ground, and rolled about, foaming at the mouth. "How long has he been like this?" Jesus asked the boy's father. "From his childhood," he answered; "and it has often thrown him into fire and
22 into water to put an end to his life; but, if you can possibly do
23 anything, take pity on us, and help us!" Why say 'possibly'?" Jesus replied. "Everything is possible for one who has faith." The
24 boy's father immediately cried out: "I have faith; help my want of faith!" But, when Jesus saw that a crowd was quickly collecting, he rebuked the foul spirit: "Deaf and dumb spirit, it is I who
25 command you. Come out from him and never enter him again."
26 With a loud cry the spirit threw the boy into repeated convulsions, and then came out from him. The boy looked like a corpse,
27 so that most of them said that he was dead. But Jesus took his hand, and lifted him; and he stood up.

28 When Jesus had gone indoors, his disciples asked him privately: "Why could not we drive it out?"

29 "A spirit of this kind," he said, "can be driven out only by prayer."

30 Leaving that place, Jesus and his disciples went on their way
31 through Galilee; but he did not wish anyone to know it, for he was

instructing his disciples, and telling them — “The Son of Man is being betrayed into the hands of his fellow men, and they will put him to death, but, when he has been put to death, he will rise again after three days.” But the disciples did not understand his meaning and were afraid to question him. 32

They came to Capernaum. When Jesus had gone into the house, he asked them: “What were you discussing on the way?” But they were silent; for on the way they had been arguing with one another which was the greatest. Sitting down, Jesus called the Twelve and said: “If anyone wishes to be first, he must be last of all, and servant of all.” Then Jesus took a little child, and placed it in the middle of them. Folding it in his arms, he said to them: “Anyone who, for the sake of my name, welcomes even a little child like this is welcoming me, and anyone who welcomes me is welcoming not me, but him who sent me as his messenger.” 33 34 35 36 37

“Teacher,” said John, “we saw a man driving out demons by using your name, and we tried to prevent him, because he did not follow us.” 38

“None of you must prevent the man,” answered Jesus, “for no one will use my name in working a miracle, and yet find it easy to speak evil of me. He who is not against us is for us. If anyone gives you a cup of water because you belong to Christ, I tell you, he will assuredly not lose his reward. 39 40 41

‘And, if anyone puts temptation in the way of one of these little ones who believe in me, it would be far better for him if he had been thrown into the sea with a great millstone around his neck. If your hand causes you to sin, cut it off. It would be better for you to enter the life maimed, than to have both your hands and go into Gehenna, into the fire that cannot be put out. If your foot causes you to sin, cut it off. It would be better for you to enter the life lame, than to have both your feet and be thrown into Gehenna. If your eye causes you to sin, tear it out. It would be better for you to enter the kingdom of God with only one eye, than to have both eyes and be thrown into Gehenna, where their worm does not die, and the fire is not put out.’ 42 43 44 45 46 47 48

‘For it is by fire that everyone will be salted. 49

‘Salt is good, but, if the salt should lose its saltiness, what will you use to season it? 50

‘You must have salt in yourselves, and live at peace with one another.’

The Journey to Jerusalem

- 10 ON LEAVING THAT PLACE, Jesus went into the district of Judea on the other side of the Jordan. Crowds gathered about him again; and
- 2 again, as usual, he began teaching them. Presently some Pharisees came up and, to test him, asked: "Has a husband the right to divorce his wife?"
- 3 "What direction did Moses give you?" replied Jesus. "Moses,"
- 4 they said, "permitted a man to 'draw up in writing a notice of separation and divorce his wife.'"
- 5 "It was owing to the hardness of your hearts," said Jesus, "that
- 6 Moses gave you this direction; but, at the beginning of the Creation, God 'made them male and female.' 'For this reason a man
- 7 will leave his father and mother, and the man and his wife will
- 8 become one;' so that they are no longer two, but one. What God himself, then, has yoked together no one must separate."
- 10 When they were indoors, the disciples asked him again about
- 11 this, and he said: "Anyone who divorces his wife and marries
- 12 another woman is guilty of adultery against his wife; and, if the woman divorces her husband and marries another man, she is guilty of adultery."
- 13 Some of the people were bringing little children to Jesus, for him to touch them; but the disciples found fault with those who
- 14 had brought them. When, however, Jesus saw this, he was indignant. "Let the little children come to me," he said, "do not hinder them; for it is to the childlike that the kingdom of God belongs.
- 15 I tell you, unless a person receives the kingdom of God like a
- 16 child, they will not enter it at all." Then he folded the children in his arms, and, placing his hands on them, gave them his blessing.
- 17 As Jesus was resuming his journey, a man came running up to him, and threw himself on his knees before him. "Good teacher," he asked, "what must I do to gain eternal life?"
- 18 "Why do you call me good?" answered Jesus. "No one is good
- 19 but God. You know the commandments — 'Do not kill. Do not commit adultery. Do not steal. Do not say what is false about others. Do not cheat. Honor your father and your mother.'"
- 20 "Teacher," he replied, "I have observed all these from my childhood." Jesus looked at the man, and his heart went out to him,
- 21

and he said: "There is still one thing wanting in you; go and sell all that you have, and give to the poor, and you will have wealth in heaven; then come and follow me." But the man's face clouded at these words, and he went away distressed, for he had great possessions. 22

Then Jesus looked around, and said to his disciples: "How hard it will be for people of wealth to enter the kingdom of God!" The disciples were amazed at his words. But Jesus said again: "My children, how hard a thing it is to enter the kingdom of God! It is easier for a camel to get through a needle's eye, than for a rich person to enter the kingdom of God." 23 24 25

"Then who can be saved?" they exclaimed in the greatest astonishment. Jesus looked at them, and answered: "With people it is impossible, but not with God; for everything is possible with God." 26 27

"But we," began Peter, "we left everything and have followed you." 28

"I tell you," said Jesus, "there is no one who has left house, or brothers, or sisters, or mother, or father, or children, or land, for my sake and for the good news, who will not receive a hundred times as much, even now in the present — houses, and brothers, and sisters, and mothers, and children, and land — though not without persecutions, and, in the age that is coming, eternal life. But many who are first now will then be last, and the last will be first." 29 30 31

One day, when they were on their way, going up to Jerusalem, Jesus was walking in front of the apostles, who were filled with misgivings; while those who were following behind were alarmed. Gathering the Twelve around him once more, Jesus began to tell them what was about to happen to him. "Listen!" he said. "We are going up to Jerusalem; and there the Son of Man will be betrayed to the chief priests and the teachers of the law, and they will condemn him to death, and they will give him up to the Gentiles, who will mock him, spit on him, and scourge him, and put him to death; and after three days he will rise again." 32 33 34

James and John, the two sons of Zebedee, went to Jesus, and said: "Teacher, we want you to do for us whatever we ask." 35

- 36 “What do you want me to do for you?” he asked. “Grant us
37 this,” they answered, “to sit, one on your right, and the other on
your left, when you come in glory.”
- 38 “You do not know what you are asking,” Jesus said to them.
“Can you drink the cup that I am to drink? Or receive the baptism
that I am to receive?”
- 39 “Yes,” they answered, “we can.”
“You will indeed drink the cup that I am to drink,” Jesus said,
40 “and receive the baptism that I am to receive, but as to a seat at
my right or at my left — that is not mine to give, but it is for those
for whom it has been prepared.”
- 41 On hearing of this, the ten others were at first very indignant
42 about James and John. But Jesus called the ten to him, and said:
“Those who are regarded as ruling among the Gentiles lord it over
43 them, as you know, and their great men oppress them. But among
you it is not so. No, whoever wants to become great among you
44 must be your servant, and whoever wants to take the first place
45 among you must be the servant of all; for even the Son of Man
came, not to be served, but to serve, and to give his life as a ransom
for many.”
- 46 They came to Jericho. When Jesus was going out of the town
with his disciples and a large crowd, Bartimaeus, the son of
47 Timaeus, a blind beggar, was sitting by the roadside. Hearing
that it was Jesus of Nazareth, he began to call out: “Jesus, Son of
48 David, take pity on me.” Many of the people kept telling him to
be quiet; but the man continued to call out all the louder: “Son of
49 David, take pity on me.” Then Jesus stopped. “Call him,” he
said. So they called the blind man. “Courage!” they exclaimed.
50 “Get up; he is calling you.” The man threw off his cloak, sprang
51 up, and came to Jesus. “What do you want me to do for you?”
said Jesus, addressing him. “Rabboni,” the blind man answered,
“I want to recover my sight.”
- 52 “You may go,” Jesus said; “your faith has delivered you.” Im-
mediately he recovered his sight, and began to follow Jesus along
the road.

The Last Days

- 11 WHEN THEY HAD ALMOST REACHED JERUSALEM, as far as Bethphage
and Bethany, near the Mount of Olives, Jesus sent on two of his

disciples. "Go to the village facing you," he said; "and, as soon 2
as you get there, you will find a foal tethered, which no one has
ever ridden; untie it, and bring it. And, if anyone says to you 3
'Why are you doing that?,' say 'The Master wants it, and will be
sure to send it back here at once.'" The two disciples went, and, 4
finding a foal tethered outside a door in the street, they untied
it. Some of the bystanders said to them: "What are you doing, 5
untying the foal?" And the two disciples answered as Jesus had 6
told them; and they allowed them to go. Then they brought the 7
foal to Jesus, and, when they had laid their cloaks on it, he seated
himself on it. Many of the people spread their cloaks on the road, 8
while some strewed boughs which they had cut from the fields;
and those who led the way, as well as those who followed, kept 9
shouting: "'God save him! Blessed is He who comes in the name
of the Lord!' Blessed is the coming kingdom of our father David!
'God save him from on high!'" 10

Jesus entered Jerusalem, and went into the Temple Courts; and, 11
after looking around at everything, as it was already late, he went
out to Bethany with the Twelve.

The next day, after they had left Bethany, Jesus became hungry; 12
and, noticing a fig-tree at a distance in leaf, he went to it to see if 13
by any chance he could find something on it; but, on coming up to
it, he found nothing but leaves, for it was not the season for figs.
So, addressing the tree, he exclaimed: "May no one ever again 14
eat of your fruit!" And his disciples heard what he said.

They came to Jerusalem. Jesus went into the Temple Courts, 15
and began to drive out those who were buying and selling there.
He overturned the tables of the money changers, and the seats 16
of the pigeon-dealers, and would not allow anyone to carry any-
thing across the Temple Courts. Then he began to teach. "Does 17
not scripture say," he asked, "'My house will be called a house
of prayer for all the nations'? But you have made it a den of rob-
bers." Now the chief priests and the teachers of the law heard 18
this and began to look for some way of putting Jesus to death;
for they were afraid of him, since all the people were greatly im-
pressed by his teaching. As soon as evening fell, Jesus and his 19
disciples went out of the city.

As they passed by early in the morning, they noticed that the 20
fig-tree was withered up from the roots. Then Peter recalled what 21

had occurred. "Look, Rabbi," he exclaimed, "the fig-tree which you doomed is withered up!"

22 "Have faith in God!" replied Jesus. "I tell you that if anyone
23 should say to this hill 'Be lifted up and hurled into the sea!', with-
out ever a doubt in his mind, but in the faith that what he says
24 will be done, he would find that it would be. And therefore I say
to you 'Have faith that whatever you ask for in prayer is already
granted you, and you will find that it will be.'

25 'And, whenever you stand up to pray, forgive any grievance
that you have against anyone, so that your Father who is in heaven
also may forgive you your offenses."

27 They came to Jerusalem again. While Jesus was walking about
in the Temple Courts, the chief priests, the teachers of the law,
28 and the councillors came up to him. "What authority have you
to do these things?" they said. "Who gave you the authority to do
them?"

29 "I will put one question to you," said Jesus. "Answer me that,
30 and then I will tell you what authority I have to act as I do. It is
about John's baptism. Was it of divine or human origin? Answer
31 me that." They began arguing together; "If we say 'divine,' he will
32 say 'Why then didn't you believe him?' Yet can we say 'human?'"
— They were afraid of the people, for everyone regarded John as
33 undoubtedly a prophet. So their answer to Jesus was — "We do
not know."

"Then I," replied Jesus, "refuse to tell you what authority I have
to do these things."

12 Jesus began to speak to them in parables: "A man once planted
a vineyard, put a fence around it, dug a wine-press, built a tower,
2 and then let it out to tenants and went abroad. At the proper time
he sent a servant to the tenants, to receive from them a share of the
3 produce of the grape harvest; but they seized him, and beat him,
4 and sent him away empty-handed. A second time the owner sent
a servant to them; this man, too, the tenants struck on the head,
5 and insulted. He sent another, but him they killed; and so with
6 many others — some they beat and some they killed. He had still
7 of all. 'They will respect my son,' he said. But those tenants said
to one another 'Here is the heir! Come, let us kill him, and his

inheritance will be ours.' So they seized him, and killed him, and 8
threw his body outside the vineyard. What will the owner of the 9
vineyard do? He will come and put the tenants to death, and he
will let the vineyard to others.

'Have you never read this passage of scripture? — 'The stone 10
which the builders despised has now itself become the
corner-stone; this corner-stone has come from the Lord, and is 11
marvelous in our eyes.'"

After this his enemies were eager to arrest him, but they were 12
afraid of the crowd; for they saw that it was at them that he had
aimed the parable. So they let him alone, and went away.

Afterwards they sent to Jesus some of the Pharisees and of the 13
Herodians, to set a trap for him in the course of conversation.
These men came to him and said: "Teacher, we know that you 14
are an honest man, and are not afraid of anyone, for you pay no
regard to a person's position, but teach the way of God honestly;
are we right in paying taxes to the Emperor, or not? Should we 15
pay, or should we not pay?" Knowing their hypocrisy, Jesus said
to them: "Why are you testing me? Bring me a coin to look at."
And, when they had brought it, he asked: "Whose head and title 16
are these?"

"The Emperor's," they said; and Jesus replied: "Pay to the Em- 17
peror what belongs to the Emperor, and to God what belongs to
God." And they wondered at him.

Next came some Sadducees — the men who maintain that 18
there is no resurrection. Their question was this — "Teacher, in 19
our scriptures Moses decreed that, should a man's brother die,
leaving a widow but no child, the man should take the widow as
his wife, and raise up a family for his brother. There were once 20
seven brothers; of whom the eldest took a wife, but died and left
no family; and the second took her, and died without family; and 21
so did the third. All the seven died and left no family. The woman
herself died last of all. At the resurrection whose wife will she be, 22
all seven brothers having had her as their wife?" 23

"Is not the reason of your mistake," answered Jesus, "your ig- 24
norance of the scriptures and of the power of God? When people 25
rise from the dead, there is no marrying or being married; but
they are as angels in heaven.

26 “As to the dead, and the fact that they rise, have you never read
27 in the book of Moses, in the passage about the Bush, how God
spoke to him saying — ‘I am the God of Abraham, and the God
of Isaac, and the God of Jacob’? He is not God of dead people,
but of living. You are greatly mistaken.”

28 Then came up one of the teachers of the law who had heard
their discussions. Knowing that Jesus had answered them wisely,
he asked him this question: “What is the first of all the command-
ments?”

29 “The first,” answered Jesus, “is — ‘Hear, Israel; the Lord our
30 God is the one Lord; and you must love the Lord your God with
all your heart, and with all your soul, and with all your mind, and
31 with all your strength.’ The second is this — ‘You must love your
neighbor as you love yourself.’ There is no commandment greater
than these.”

32 “Wisely answered, teacher!” exclaimed the teacher of the law.
“It is true, as you say, that ‘there is one God,’ and that ‘there is
33 no other besides him’; and to ‘love him with all one’s heart, and
with all one’s understanding, and with all one’s strength,’ and to
‘love one’s neighbor as one loves oneself’ is far beyond all ‘burnt
34 offerings and sacrifices.’” Seeing that he had answered with dis-
cernment, Jesus said to him: “You are not far from the kingdom
of God.”

After that no one ventured to question him further.

35 While Jesus was teaching in the Temple Courts, he asked:
“How is it that the teachers of the law say that the Christ is to be
36 David’s son? David said himself, speaking under the inspiration
of the Holy Spirit — ‘The Lord said to my lord: “Sit at my right
37 hand, until I put your enemies beneath your feet.’” David
himself calls him ‘lord,’ how comes it, then, that he is to be his
son?”

38 The mass of the people listened to Jesus with delight. In the
course of his teaching, Jesus said: “See that you are on your guard
against the teachers of the law, who delight to walk about in long
39 robes, and to be greeted in the streets with respect, and to have
the best seats in the Synagogues, and places of honor at dinner.
40 They are the men who rob widows of their homes, and make
a pretense of saying long prayers. Their sentence will be all the
heavier.”

Then Jesus sat down opposite the chests for the Temple offerings, and watched how the people put money into them. Many rich people were putting in large sums; but one poor widow came and put in two small coins, worth very little. Then, calling his disciples to him, Jesus said: "I tell you that this poor widow has put in more than all the others who were putting money into the chests; for everyone else put in something from what he had to spare, while she, in her need, put in all she had — everything that she had to live on." 41 42 43 44

As Jesus was walking out of the Temple Courts, one of his disciples said to him: "Teacher, look what fine stones and buildings these are!" 13

"Do you see these great buildings?" asked Jesus. "Not a single stone will be left here on another, which will not be thrown down." 2

When Jesus had sat down on the Mount of Olives, facing the Temple, Peter, James, John and Andrew questioned him privately: "Tell us when this will be, and what will be the sign when all this is drawing to its close." 3 4

Then Jesus began: "See that no one leads you astray. Many will take my name, and come saying 'I am He', and will lead many astray." 5 6

"And, when you hear of wars and rumors of wars, do not be alarmed; such things must occur; but the end is not yet. For 'nation will rise against nation, and kingdom against kingdom'; there will be earthquakes in various places; there will be famines. This will be but the beginning of the birth-pangs." 7 8

"See to yourselves! They will betray you to courts of law; and you will be taken to Synagogues and beaten; and you will be brought up before governors and kings for my sake, so that you can bear witness before them. But the good news must first be proclaimed to every nation. Whenever they betray you and hand you over for trial, do not be anxious beforehand as to what you will say, but say whatever is given you at the moment; for it will not be you who speak, but the Holy Spirit. Brother will betray brother to death, and the father his child; and children will turn against their parents, and cause them to be put to death; and you 9 10 11 12 13

will be hated by everyone because of me. Yet the person who endures to the end will be saved.

14 “As soon, however, as you see ‘the Foul Desecration’ standing
where he ought not” (the reader must consider what this means)
“then those of you who are in Judea must take refuge in the moun-
15 tains; and a person on the house-top must not go down, or go in
16 to get anything out of their house: nor must one who is on their
17 farm turn back to get their cloak. And alas for pregnant women,
18 and for those who are nursing infants in those days! Pray, too,
19 that this may not occur in winter. For those days will be a time of
distress, the like of which has not occurred from the beginning of
20 God’s creation until now — and never will again. And, had not
the Lord put a limit to those days, not a single soul would escape;
but, for the sake of God’s own chosen people, he did limit them.

21 “And at that time if anyone should say to you ‘Look, here is the
22 Christ!’ ‘Look, there he is!’, do not believe it; for false Christs and
false prophets will arise, and display signs and marvels, to lead
23 astray, were it possible, even God’s people. But see that you are
on your guard! I have told you all this beforehand.

24 “In those days, after that time of distress, ‘the sun will be dark-
25 ened, the moon will not give her light, the stars will be falling
from the heavens,’ and ‘the forces that are in the heavens will be
26 convulsed.’ Then will be seen the ‘Son of Man coming in clouds’
27 with great power and glory; and then he will send the angels,
and gather his people from the four winds, from one end of the
world to the other.

28 “Learn the lesson taught by the fig-tree. As soon as its branches
are full of sap, and it is bursting into leaf, you know that summer
29 is near. And so may you, as soon as you see these things happen-
30 ing, know that he is at your doors. I tell you that even the present
generation will not pass away, until all these things have taken
31 place. The heavens and the earth will pass away, but my words
will not pass away.

32 “But about ‘that day,’ or ‘the hour,’ no one knows — not even
the angels in heaven, not even the Son — but only the Father.

33 “See that you are on the watch; for you do not know when
34 the time will be. It is like a man going on a journey, who leaves
his home, puts his servants in charge — each having their spe-
35 cial duty — and orders the porter to watch. Therefore watch, for
you cannot be sure when the Master of the house is coming —

whether in the evening, at midnight, at daybreak, or in the morning — otherwise he might come suddenly and find you asleep. 36
 And what I say to you I say to all — Watch!" 37

It was now two days before the Festival of the Passover and the unleavened bread. The chief priests and the teachers of the law were looking for an opportunity to arrest Jesus by stealth, and to put him to death; for they said: "Not during the Festival, or the people may riot." 14 2

When Jesus was still at Bethany, in the house of Simon the leper, while he was sitting at the table, a woman came with an alabaster jar of choice spikenard perfume of great value. She broke the jar, and poured the perfume on his head. Some of those who were present said to one another indignantly: "Why has the perfume been wasted like this? This perfume could have been sold for more than a year's wages, and the money given to the poor." 3 4 5

"Leave her alone," said Jesus, as they began to find fault with her, "why are you troubling her? This is a beautiful deed that she has done for me. You always have the poor with you, and whenever you wish you can do good to them; but you will not always have me. She has done what she could; she has perfumed my body beforehand for my burial. And I tell you, wherever, in the whole world, the good news is proclaimed, what this woman has done will be told in memory of her." 6 7 8 9

After this, Judas Iscariot, one of the Twelve, went to the chief priests, to betray Jesus to them. They were glad to hear what he said, and promised to pay him. So he began looking for a good opportunity to betray Jesus. 10 11

On the first day of the Festival of the unleavened bread, when it was customary to kill the Passover lambs, his disciples said to Jesus: "Where do you wish us to go and make preparations for your eating the Passover?" Jesus sent forward two of his disciples and said to them: "Go into the city, and there a man carrying a pitcher of water will meet you; follow him; and, wherever he goes in, say to the owner of the house 'The teacher says — Where is my room where I am to eat the Passover with my disciples?' He will himself show you a large upstairs room, set out ready; and there 12 13 14 15

16 make preparations for us." So the disciples set out and went into the city, and found everything just as Jesus had told them; and they prepared the Passover.

17 In the evening he went there with the Twelve, and when they had taken their places and were eating, Jesus said: "I tell you that one of you is going to betray me — one who is eating with me." They were grieved at this, and began to say to him, one after another: "Can it be I?"

20 "It is one of you Twelve," said Jesus, "the one who is dipping his bread beside me into the dish. True, the Son of Man must go, as scripture says of him, yet alas for that man by whom the Son of Man is being betrayed! For that man 'it would be better never to have been born!'"

22 While they were eating, Jesus took some bread, and, after saying the blessing, broke it, and gave it to them, and said: "Take it; this is my body." Then he took a cup, and, after saying the thanksgiving, gave it to them, and they all drank from it. "This is my covenant-blood," he said, "which is poured out on behalf of many. I tell you that I will never again drink of the juice of the grape, until that day when I will drink it new in the kingdom of God."

26 They then sang a hymn, and went out up the Mount of Olives, presently Jesus said to them: "All of you will fall away; for scripture says — 'I will strike down the shepherd, and the sheep will be scattered.' Yet, after I have risen, I will go before you into Galilee."

29 "Even if everyone else falls away," said Peter, "yet I will not."

30 "I tell you," answered Jesus, "that you yourself today — yes, this very night — before the cock crows twice, will disown me three times." But Peter vehemently protested: "Even if I must die with you, I will never disown you!" And they all said the same.

32 Presently they came to a garden known as Gethsemane, and Jesus said to his disciples "Sit down here while I pray." He took with him Peter, James, and John; and began to show signs of great dismay and deep distress of mind. "I am sad at heart," he said, "sad even to death; wait here, and watch." Going on a little further, he threw himself on the ground, and began to pray that, if it were possible, he might be spared that hour. "Abba, Father," he

said, "all things are possible to you; take away this cup from me; yet, not what I will, but what you will."

Then he came and found the three apostles asleep. "Simon," he said to Peter, "are you asleep? Couldn't you watch for one hour? Watch and pray," he said to them all, "so that you may not fall into temptation. True, the spirit is eager, but human nature is weak." Again he went away, and prayed in the same words; and coming back again he found them asleep, for their eyes were heavy; and they did not know what to say to him.

A third time he came, and said to them: "Sleep on now, and rest yourselves. Enough! My time has come. Look: the Son of Man is being betrayed into the hands of wicked people. Up, and let us be going. Look! My betrayer is close at hand."

And just then, while he was still speaking, Judas, who was one of the Twelve, came up; and with him a crowd of people, with swords and clubs, sent by the chief priests, the teachers of the law, and the councillors. Now the betrayer had arranged a signal with them. "The man whom I kiss," he had said, "will be the one; arrest him and take him away safely." As soon as Judas came, he went up to Jesus at once, and said: "Rabbi!" and kissed him. Then the men seized Jesus, and arrested him.

One of those who were standing by drew his sword, and struck at the high priest's servant, and cut off his ear. But Jesus spoke up, and said to the men: "Have you come out, as if after a robber, with swords and clubs, to take me? I have been among you day after day in the Temple Courts teaching, and yet you did not arrest me; but this is in fulfillment of the scriptures." And all the apostles forsook him, and fled. One young man did indeed follow him, wrapped only in a linen sheet. They tried to arrest him; but he left the sheet in their hands, and fled naked.

Then they took Jesus to the high priest; and all the chief priests, the councillors, and the teachers of the law assembled. Peter, who had followed Jesus at a distance into the courtyard of the high priest, was sitting there among the police officers, warming himself at the blaze of the fire.

Meanwhile the chief priest and the whole of the High Council were trying to get such evidence against Jesus as would warrant his being put to death, but they could not find any; for, though

57 there were many who gave false evidence against him, yet their
58 evidence did not agree. Presently some men stood up, and gave
59 this false evidence against him — “We ourselves heard him say
‘I will destroy this Temple made with hands, and in three days
60 build another made without hands.’” Yet not even on that point
did their evidence agree.

60 Then the high priest stood forward, and questioned Jesus.
“Have you no answer to make?” he asked. “What is this
61 evidence which these men are giving against you?” But Jesus
remained silent, and made no answer.

A second time the high priest questioned him. “Are you,” he
asked, “the Christ, the Son of the Blessed One?”

62 “I am,” replied Jesus, “and you will all see the Son of Man sit-
ting on the right hand of the Almighty; and ‘coming in the clouds
63 of heaven.’” At this the high priest tore his vestments. “Why do
64 we want any more witnesses?” he exclaimed. “You heard his blas-
phemy? What is your verdict?” They all condemned him, declar-
ing that he deserved death.

65 Some of those present began to spit at him, and to blindfold
his eyes, and strike him, saying, as they did so, “Now play the
prophet!” and even the police officers received him with blows.

66 While Peter was in the courtyard down below, one of the high
67 priest’s maidservants came up; and, seeing Peter warming him-
self, she looked closely at him, and exclaimed: “Why, you were
68 with Jesus, the Nazarene!” But Peter denied it. “I do not know or
understand what you mean,” he replied. Then he went out into
69 the porch; and there the maidservant, on seeing him, began to
70 say again to the bystanders: “This is one of them!” But Peter again
denied it.

Soon afterwards the bystanders again said to him: “You cer-
71 tainly are one of them; why you are a Galilean!” But he said to
them: “I swear that I do not know the man you are talking about!
72 May God punish me if I am lying!” At that moment, for the sec-
ond time, a cock crowed; and Peter remembered the words that
Jesus had said to him — ‘Before a cock has crowed twice, you
will disown me three times’; and, as he thought of it, he began to
weep.

As soon as it was daylight, the chief priests, after holding a consultation with the councillors and teachers of the law — that is to say, the whole High Council — put Jesus in chains, and took him away, and gave him up to Pilate. “Are you the king of the Jews?” asked Pilate. “It is true,” replied Jesus. Then the chief priests brought a number of charges against him. So Pilate questioned Jesus again. “Have you no reply to make?” he asked. “Listen, how many charges they are bringing against you.” But Jesus still made no reply whatever; at which Pilate was astonished.

Now, at the feast, Pilate used to grant the people the release of any one prisoner whom they might ask for. A man called Barabbas was in prison, with the rioters who had committed murder during a riot. So, when the crowd went up and began to ask Pilate to follow his usual custom, he answered: “Do you want me to release the ‘king of the Jews’ for you?” For he was aware that it was out of jealousy that the chief priests had given Jesus up to him. But the chief priests incited the crowd to get Barabbas released instead. Pilate, however, spoke to them again: “What should I do then with the man whom you call the ‘king of the Jews’?” Again they shouted: “Crucify him!”

“Why, what harm has he done?” Pilate kept saying to them. But they shouted furiously: “Crucify him!” And Pilate, wishing to satisfy the crowd, released Barabbas to them, and, after scourging Jesus, gave him up to be crucified.

The soldiers then took Jesus away into the courtyard — that is the Government house — and they called the whole garrison together. They dressed him in a purple robe, and, having twisted a crown of thorns, put it on him, and then began to salute him. “Long life to you, king of the Jews!” they said. And they kept striking him on the head with a rod, spitting at him, and bowing to the ground before him — going down on their knees; and, when they had left off mocking him, they took off the purple robe, and put his own clothes on him.

They led Jesus out to crucify him; and they compelled a passer-by, Simon from Cyrene, who was on his way in from the country, the father of Alexander and Rufus, to go with them to carry his cross.

22 They brought Jesus to the place which was known as Golgotha
23 — a name which means ‘place of a Skull.’ There they offered him
24 drugged wine; but Jesus refused it. Then they crucified him, and
divided his clothes among them, casting lots for them, to settle
what each should take.

25 It was nine in the morning when they crucified him. The words
26 of the charge against him, written up over his head, read — ‘THE
27 KING OF THE JEWS.’ And with him they crucified two robbers,
one on the right, and the other on the left.

29 The passers-by railed at him, shaking their heads, as they said:
“Ah! You who would destroy the Temple and build one in three
30 days, come down from the cross and save yourself!” In the same
31 way the chief priests, with the teachers of the law, said to one an-
32 other in mockery: “He saved others, but he cannot save himself!
Let the Christ, the ‘king of Israel,’ come down from the cross now
so that we can see it and believe.” Even the men who had been
crucified with Jesus insulted him.

33 At midday, a darkness came over the whole country, lasting
34 until three in the afternoon. And, at three, Jesus called out
loudly: ‘Eloi, Eloi, lama sabacthani?’” which means ‘My God,
35 my God, why have you forsaken me?’ Some of those standing
around heard this, and said: “Listen! He is calling for Elijah!”
36 And a man ran, and, soaking a sponge in common wine, put it
on the end of a rod, and offered it to him to drink, saying as he
did so: “Wait and let us see if Elijah is coming to take him down.”
37 But Jesus, giving a loud cry, expired. The Temple curtain was
38 torn in two from top to bottom. The Roman officer, who was
standing facing Jesus, on seeing the way in which he expired,
exclaimed: “This man must indeed have been ‘God’s Son!’”

40 There were some women also watching from a distance,
among them being Mary of Magdala, Mary the mother of James
41 the Little and of Joseph, and Salome — all of whom used to
accompany Jesus when he was in Galilee, and attend on him —
besides many other women who had come up with him to
Jerusalem.

42 The evening had already fallen, when, as it was the Preparation
43 day — the day before the Sabbath — Joseph from Ramah, a Coun-
cillor of good position, who was himself living in expectation of

the kingdom of God, came and ventured to go in to see Pilate, and to ask for the body of Jesus. But Pilate was surprised to hear that he had already died. So he sent for the officer, and asked if he were already dead; and, on learning from the officer that it was so, he gave the corpse to Joseph. Joseph, having bought a linen sheet, took Jesus down, and wound the sheet around him, and laid him in a tomb which had been cut out of the rock; and then rolled a stone up against the entrance of the tomb. Mary of Magdala and Mary, the mother of Joseph, were watching to see where he was laid.

The Risen Life Announced

WHEN THE SABBATH WAS OVER, Mary of Magdala, Mary the mother of James, and Salome bought some spices, so that they might go and anoint the body of Jesus. Very early on the first day of the week they went to the tomb, after sunrise. They were saying to one another: "Who will roll away the stone for us from the entrance of the tomb?" But, on looking up, they saw that the stone had already been rolled back; it was a very large one. Going into the tomb, they saw a young man sitting on their right, in a white robe, and they were dismayed; but he said to them: "Do not be dismayed; you are looking for Jesus, the Nazarene, who has been crucified; he has risen, he is not here! Look! Here is the place where they laid him. But go, and say to his disciples and to Peter 'He is going before you into Galilee; there you will see him, as he told you.'" They went out, and fled from the tomb, for they were trembling and bewildered; and they did not say a word to anyone, for they were frightened;

A late appendix

(Inserted in some manuscripts from an ancient source)

AFTER HIS RISING AGAIN, early on the first day of the week, Jesus appeared first of all to Mary of Magdala, from whom he had driven out seven demons. She went and told the news to those who had been with him and who were now in sorrow and tears; yet even they, when they heard that he was alive and had been seen by her, did not believe it. Afterwards, altered in appearance, he made

13 himself known to two of them, as they were walking, on their way
14 into the country. They also went and told the rest, but they did
15 not believe even them. Later on, he made himself known to the
16 Eleven themselves as they were at a meal, and reproached them
17 with their want of faith and their stubbornness, because they did
18 not believe those who had seen him after he had risen from the
19 dead. Then he said to them: "Go into all the world, and proclaim
20 the good news to all creation. He who believes and is baptized
will be saved; but he who refuses to believe will be condemned.
Moreover these signs will attend those who believe. In my name
they will drive out demons; they will speak with 'tongues'; they
will take up snakes in their hands; and, if they drink any poison,
it will not hurt them; they will place their hands on sick people
and they will recover." So the Lord Jesus, after he had spoken
to them, was taken up into heaven, and sat at the right hand of
God. But they set out, and made the proclamation everywhere,
the Lord working with them, and confirming the message by the
signs which attended it.

Another appendix

BUT ALL THAT HAD BEEN REVEALED TO THEM THEY REPORTED briefly
to Peter and his companions. Afterwards Jesus himself sent them
out, from east to west, the sacred and imperishable proclamation
of eternal salvation.

THE GOOD NEWS ACCORDING TO LUKE

Dedication

TO HIS EXCELLENCY, Theophilus. 1
 Many attempts have been already made to draw up an because of
 those events which have reached their conclusion among us, just
 as they were reported to us by those who from the beginning 2
 were eye-witnesses, and afterwards became bearers of the mes-
 sage. And, therefore, I also, since I have investigated all these 3
 events with great care from their very beginning, have resolved
 to write a connected history of them for you, in order that you 4
 may be able to satisfy yourself of the accuracy of the story which
 you have heard from the lips of others.

Birth, Parentage, Infancy and Boyhood

IN THE REIGN OF HEROD, king of Judea, there was a priest named 5
 Zechariah, who belonged to the division called after Abijah. His
 wife, whose name was Elizabeth, was also a descendant of
 Aaron. They were both righteous people, who lived blameless 6
 lives, guiding their steps by all the commandments and
 ordinances of the Lord. But they had no child, Elizabeth being 7
 barren; and both of them were advanced in years.
 One day, when Zechariah was officiating as priest before God, 8
 during the turn of his division, it fell to him by lot, in accor- 9
 dance with the practice among the priests, to go into the Temple
 of the Lord and burn incense; and, as it was the Hour of Incense, 10
 the people were all praying outside. And an angel of the Lord 11
 appeared to him, standing on the right of the Altar of Incense.
 Zechariah was startled at the sight and was awe-struck. But the 12
 13

angel said to him: "Do not be afraid, Zechariah; your prayer has been heard, and your wife Elizabeth will bear you a son, whom
14 you will call by the name John. He will be to you a joy and a del-
15 light; and many will rejoice over his birth. For he will be great in
the sight of the Lord; he will not drink any wine or strong drink,
and he will be filled with the Holy Spirit from the very hour of his
16 birth, and will reconcile many of the Israelites to the Lord their
17 God. He will go before him in the spirit and with the power of
Elijah, 'to reconcile fathers to their children' and the disobedient
to the wisdom of the righteous, and so make ready for the Lord a
people prepared for him."

18 "How can I be sure of this?" Zechariah asked the angel. "For I
am an old man and my wife is advanced in years."

19 "I am Gabriel," the angel answered, "who stand in the presence
of God, and I have been sent to speak to you and to bring you this
20 good news. And now you will be silent and unable to speak until
the day when this takes place, because you did not believe what
I said, though my words will be fulfilled in due course."

21 Meanwhile the people were watching for Zechariah, wonder-
22 ing at his remaining so long in the Temple. When he came out, he
was unable to speak to them, and they perceived that he had seen
a vision there. But Zechariah kept making signs to them, and re-
23 mained dumb. And, as soon as his term of service was finished,
24 he returned home. After this his wife, Elizabeth, became preg-
25 nant and lived in seclusion for five months. "The Lord has done
this for me," she said, "he has shown me kindness and taken away
the public disgrace of childlessness under which I have been liv-
ing."

26 Six months later the angel Gabriel was sent from God to a town
27 in Galilee called Nazareth, to a maiden there who was engaged
to a man named Joseph, a descendant of David. Her name was
28 Mary. Gabriel came into her presence and greeted her, saying:
"You have been shown great favor - the Lord is with you.."

29 Mary was much disturbed at his words, and was wondering to
30 herself what such a greeting could mean, when the angel spoke
again: "Do not be afraid, Mary, for you have found favor with
31 God. And now, you will conceive and give birth to a son, and
32 you will give him the name Jesus. The child will be great and

will be called 'Son of the Most High,' and the Lord God will give him the throne of his ancestor David, and he will reign over the descendants of Jacob for ever; And to his kingdom there will be no end." 33

"How can this be?" Mary asked the angel. "For I have no husband." 34

"The Holy Spirit will descend on you," answered the angel, "and the Power of the Most High will overshadow you; and therefore the child will be called 'holy,' and 'Son of God.' And Elizabeth, your cousin, is herself also expecting a son in her old age; and it is now the sixth month with her, though she is called barren; for no promise from God will fail to be fulfilled." 35
36
37

"I am the servant of the Lord," exclaimed Mary; "let it be with me as you have said." Then the angel left her. 38

Soon after this Mary set out, and made her way quickly into the hill-country, to a town in Judah; and there she went into Zechariah's house and greeted Elizabeth. When Elizabeth heard Mary's greeting, the child moved within her, and Elizabeth herself was filled with the Holy Spirit, and cried aloud: "Blessed are you among women, and blessed is your unborn child! But how have I this honor, that the mother of my Lord should come to me? For, as soon as your greeting reached my ears, the child moved within me with delight! Happy indeed is she who believed that the promise which she received from the Lord would be fulfilled." 39
40
41
42
43
44
45

And Mary said: 46

"My soul exalts the Lord,
my spirit delights in God my Savior; 47

for he has remembered his humble servant girl; 48

And from this hour all ages will count me happy!

Great things has the Almighty done for me; 49

And holy is his name.

From age to age his mercy rests 50

On those who honor him.

Mighty are the deeds of his arm; 51

He scatters the proud with their own devices,

he casts down princes from their thrones, 52

and the humble he uplifts,

the hungry he loads with gifts, 53

and the rich he sends empty away.

54 He has stretched out his hand to his servant Israel,
Ever mindful of his mercy
55 (As he promised to our ancestors)
For Abraham and his race for ever.”

56 Mary stayed with Elizabeth about three months, and then
57 returned to her home. When Elizabeth’s time came, she gave
58 birth to a son; and her neighbors and relations, hearing of the
59 great goodness of the Lord to her, came to share her joy. A week
60 later they met to circumcise the child, and were about to call him
‘Zechariah’ after his father, when his mother spoke up: “No, he
is to be called John.”

61 “You have no relation of that name!” they exclaimed; and they
62 made signs to the child’s father, to find out what he wished the
63 child to be called. Asking for a writing-tablet, he wrote the words
64 — ‘His name is John.’ Everyone was surprised; and immediately
Zechariah recovered his voice and the use of his tongue, and be-
65 gan to bless God. All their neighbors were awe-struck at this; and
throughout the hill-country of Judea the whole story was much
66 talked about; and all who heard it kept it in mind, asking one
another — “What can this child be destined to become?” For the
Power of the Lord was with him.

67 Then his father Zechariah was filled with the Holy Spirit, and,
speaking under inspiration, said:

68 “Blessed is the Lord, the God of Israel,
Who has visited his people and wrought their deliver-
ance,
69 and has raised up for us the Strength of our salvation
In the house of his servant David —

70 As he promised by the lips of his holy prophets of old —
71 salvation from our enemies and from the hands of all
who hate us,
72 showing mercy to our ancestors,
And mindful of his sacred covenant.

73 This was the oath which he swore to our ancestor Abra-
ham —

74 That we should be rescued from the hands of our ene-
mies,

and should serve him without fear in holiness and righteousness, 75

In his presence all our days.

And you, child, will be called prophet of the Most High, 76

For you will go before the Lord to make ready his way,
to give his people the knowledge of salvation 77

In the forgiveness of their sins,

through the tender mercy of our God, 78

Whereby the Dawn will break on us from heaven,
to give light to those who live in darkness and the shadow
of death, 79

And guide our feet into the way of peace."

The child grew and became strong in spirit; and he lived in the Wilds until the time came for his appearance before Israel. 80

About that time an edict was issued by the Emperor Augustus 2
that a census should be taken of the whole Empire. (This was the 2
first census taken while Quirinius was Governor of Syria). And 3
everyone went to his own town to be registered. Among others 4
Joseph went up from the town of Nazareth in Galilee to Bethlehem, the town of David, in Judea — because he belonged to the family and house of David — To be registered with Mary, his 5
engaged wife, who was about to become a mother. While they were 6
there her time came, and she gave birth to her first child, a son. 7
And because there was no room for them in the inn, she swathed him around and laid him in a manger. In that same country-side 8
were shepherds out in the open fields, watching their flocks that night, when an angel of the Lord suddenly stood by them, and 9
the glory of the Lord shone around them; and they were seized with fear. "Have no fear," the angel said. "For I bring you good 10
news of a great joy in store for all the nation. This day there has 11
been born to you, in the town of David, a Savior, who is Christ and Lord. And this will be the sign for you. You will find the infant 12
swathed, and lying in a manger."

Then suddenly there appeared with the angel a multitude of 13
the heavenly Host, praising God, and singing —

"glory to God on high, 14

And on earth peace among those in whom he finds
pleasure."

15 Now, when the angels had left them and gone back to heaven, the
shepherds said to one another: "Let us go at once to Bethlehem,
16 and see this thing that has happened, of which the Lord has told
us." So they went quickly, and found Mary and Joseph, and the
17 infant lying in a manger; and, when they saw it, they told of all
18 that had been said to them about this child. All who heard the
19 shepherds were astonished at their story, while Mary treasured
up all that they said, and thought about it often in her thoughts.
20 And the shepherds went back, giving glory and praise to God for
all that they had heard and seen, as it had been told them.

21 Eight days after the birth of the child, when it was time to cir-
cumcise him, he received the name Jesus — the name given him
by the angel before his conception.

22 When the period of purification of mother and child, required
by the law of Moses, came to an end, his parents took the child
23 up to Jerusalem to present him to the Lord, in compliance with
the law of the Lord that 'every first-born male will be dedicated
24 to the Lord,' And also to offer the sacrifice required by the law of
the Lord — 'a pair of turtle-doves or two young pigeons.'

25 There was at that time in Jerusalem a man named Simeon, a right-
eous and devout man, who lived in constant expectation of the
Consolation of Israel, and under the guidance of the Holy Spirit. It
26 had been revealed to him by the Holy Spirit that he should not die
27 until he had seen the Lord's Christ. Moved by the Spirit, Simeon
came into the Temple Courts, and, when the parents brought in
the child Jesus, to do for him what was customary under the law,
28 Simeon himself took the child in his arms, and blessed God, and
said:

29 "Now, Lord, you will let your servant go,
According to your word, in peace,
30 for my eyes have seen the salvation
31 Which you have prepared in the sight of all nations —
32 A light to bring light to the Gentiles,
And to be the glory of your people Israel."

33 While the child's father and mother were wondering at what was
34 said about him, Simeon gave them his blessing, and said to Mary,

the child's mother: "This child is appointed to be the cause of the fall and rise of many in Israel, and to be a sign much spoken against — Yes, the sword will pierce your own heart — and so the thoughts in many minds will be disclosed." 35

There was also a Prophetess named Hannah, a daughter of Phanuel and of the tribe of Asher. She was far advanced in years, having lived with her husband for seven years after marriage, and then a widow, until she had reached the age of eighty-four. She never left the Temple Courts, but, fasting and praying, worshiped God night and day. At that moment she came up, and began publicly to thank God and to speak about the child to all who were looking for the deliverance of Jerusalem. 36 37 38

When the child's parents had done everything required by the law of the Lord, they returned to Galilee to their own town of Nazareth. The child grew and became strong and wise, and the blessing of God was on him. 39 40

Every year the child's parents used to go to Jerusalem at the Passover Festival. When Jesus was twelve years old, they went according to custom to Jerusalem, and had finished their visit; but, when they started to return, the boy Jesus remained behind in Jerusalem, without their knowing it. Thinking that he was with their fellow travelers, they went one day's journey before searching for him among their relations and acquaintances; and then, as they did not find him, they returned to Jerusalem, searching everywhere for him. It was not until the third day that they found him in the Temple Courts, sitting among the teachers, now listening to them, now asking them questions. All who listened to him marveled at his intelligence and his answers. 41 42 43 44 45 46 47

His parents were amazed when they saw him, and his mother said to him: "My child, why have you treated us like this? Your father and I have been searching for you in great distress." 48

"What made you search for me?" he answered. "Didn't you know that I must be in my Father's house?" His parents did not understand what he meant. However he went down with them to Nazareth, and submitted himself to their control; and his mother treasured all that was said in her heart. And Jesus grew in wisdom as he grew in years, and 'gained the blessing of God and people.' 49 50 51 52

The Preparation

3 IN THE FIFTEENTH YEAR OF THE REIGN OF THE EMPEROR TIBERIUS, when
 Pontius Pilate was Governor of Judea, Herod Ruler of Galilee, his
 brother Philip Ruler of the territory comprising Ituraea and Tra-
 2 chonitis, and Lysanias Ruler of Abilene, and when Annas and Ca-
 3 iaphas were high priests, a command from God came to John, the
 son of Zechariah, while he was in the wilderness. And John went
 through the whole district of the Jordan, proclaiming baptism on
 4 repentance, for the forgiveness of sins. This was in fulfillment of
 what is said in the writings of the prophet Isaiah —

“The voice of one crying aloud in the wilderness:

“Make ready the way of the Lord,

Make his paths straight.

5 Every chasm will be filled,

Every mountain and hill will be leveled,

The winding ways will be straightened,

The rough roads made smooth,

6 and everyone will see the salvation of God.”

7 And John said to the crowds that went to be baptized by him:

“You children of snakes! Who has prompted you to seek refuge

8 from the coming judgment? Let your lives, then, prove your re-
 pentance; and do not begin to say among yourselves ‘Abraham is

our ancestor,’ for I tell you that out of these stones God is able to

9 raise descendants for Abraham! Already, indeed, the axe is lying

at the root of the trees. Therefore every tree that fails to bear good

fruit will be cut down and thrown into the fire.”

10 “What are we to do then?” the people asked. “Let anyone who

11 has two coats,” answered John, “share with the person who has

none; and anyone who has food do the same.”

12 Even tax-gatherers came to be baptized, and said to John:

“Teacher, what are we to do?”

13 “Do not collect more than you have authority to demand,” John

14 answered. And when some soldiers on active service asked “And

we — what are we to do?” he said: “Never use violence, or exact

anything by false accusation; and be content with your pay.”

Then, while the people were in suspense, and were all debating with themselves whether John could be the Christ, John, addressing them all, said: "I, indeed, baptize you with water; but there is coming one more powerful than I, and I am not fit even to unfasten his sandals. He will baptize you with the Holy Spirit and with fire. His winnowing-fan is in his hand so that he may clear his threshing-floor, and store the grain in his barn, but the chaff he will burn with a fire that cannot be put out."

And so with many different appeals John told his good news to the people. But Prince Herod, being rebuked by John respecting Herodias, the wife of Herod's brother, and for all the evil things that he had done, crowned them all by shutting John up in prison.

Now after the baptism of all the people, and when Jesus had been baptized and was still praying, the heavens opened, and the Holy Spirit came down on him in the form of a dove, and from the heavens came a voice — "You are my dearly loved son; you bring me great joy."

When beginning his work, Jesus was about thirty years old. He was regarded as the son of Joseph, whose ancestors were —

Eli, Mattith, Levi, Melchiah, Janna, Joseph, Mattithiah, 24
 Amos, Nahum, Azaliah, Nogah, Mattith, Mattithiah, 25
 Shimei, Joseph, Josheh, Johanan, Rhesa, Zerubbabel, 27
 Shealtiel, Neriah, Melchiah, Addi, Cosam, Elmodam, Er, 28
 Joshua, Eliezer, Joram, Mattith, Levi, Simeon, Judah, 29
 Joseph, Jonam, Eliakim, Meleah, Menan, Mattithiah, 30
 Nathan, David, Jesse, Obed, Boaz, Salah, Nahshon, 32
 Amminadab, Arni, Hezron, Perez, Judah, Jacob, Isaac, 33
 Abraham, Terah, Nahor, Serug, Reu, Peleg, Eber, Shelah, 35
 Kenan, Arpachshad, Shem, Noah, Lamech, Methuselah, 36
 Enoch, Jared, Mahalalel, Kenan, Enosh, Seth and Adam 38
 the son of God.

On returning from the Jordan, full of the Holy Spirit, Jesus was led by the power of the Spirit through the wilderness for forty days, tempted by the devil.

All that time he ate nothing; and, when it was over, he became hungry. So the devil said to him: "If you are God's Son, tell this stone to become a loaf of bread." And Jesus answered

him: "Scripture says — 'It is not on bread alone that a person is to live.'"

5 And the devil led Jesus up, and showing him in a single mo-
6 ment all the kingdoms of the earth, said to him: "I will give you
7 all this power, and the splendor of them; for it has been given into
8 my hands and I give it to whom I wish. If you worship me, it will
9 all be yours." And Jesus answered him: "Scripture says — 'You
10 should worship the Lord your God, and worship him only.'"

9 The devil next led him into Jerusalem, and, placing him on the
10 parapet of the Temple, said: "If you are God's Son throw yourself
11 down from here, for scripture says — 'He will give his angels
12 commands about you, to guard you safely,' And 'On their hands
13 they will lift you up, otherwise you might strike your foot against
14 a stone.'" But Jesus answered him: "It is said — 'You must not
15 tempt the Lord your God.'"

13 When he had tried every kind of temptation, the devil left Je-
14 sus, until another opportunity.

The Work in Galilee

14 MOVED BY THE POWER OF THE SPIRIT, Jesus returned to Galilee. Re-
15 ports about him spread through all that neighborhood; and he
16 began to teach in their Synagogues, and was honored by every-
17 one.

16 Coming to Nazareth, where he had been brought up, Jesus, as
17 was his custom, went on the Sabbath into the synagogue, and
18 stood up to read the scriptures. He was given the book of the
19 prophet Isaiah; and Jesus opened the book and found the place
20 where it says —

18 "The Spirit of the Lord is on me,
19 For he has consecrated me to bring good news to the poor,
20 He has sent me to proclaim release to captives and restora-
21 tion of sight to the blind,
22 To set the oppressed at liberty,
23 to proclaim the accepted year of the Lord.'

Then, closing the book and returning it to the attendant, he sat 20
down. The eyes of all in the synagogue were fixed on him, and 21
Jesus began:

“This very day this passage has been fulfilled in your hearing.”

All who were present spoke well of him, and were astonished 22
at the beautiful words that fell from his lips. “Is not he Joseph’s 23
son?” they asked. “Doubtless,” said Jesus, “you will remind me 23
of the saying — ‘Doctor, cure yourself;’ and you will say ‘Do here 24
in your own country all that we have heard that has been done at 25
Capernaum.’ I tell you,” he continued, “that no prophet is accept- 24
able in his own country. There were, doubtless, many widows 25
in Israel in Elijah’s days, when the heavens were closed for three 26
years and six months, and a severe famine prevailed throughout 26
the country; and yet it was not to one of them that Elijah was sent, 27
but to a widow at Zarephath in Sidonia. And there were many 27
lepers in Israel in the time of the prophet Elisha, yet it was not one 28
of them who was made clean, but Naaman the Syrian.” All the 28
people in the synagogue, as they listened to this, became enraged. 29
Starting up, they drove Jesus out of the town, and led him to the 29
brow of the hill on which their town stood, intending to hurl him 30
down. But he passed through the middle of the crowd and went 30
on his way.

Then Jesus went down to Capernaum, a city in Galilee. On the 31
Sabbath he taught the people. They were amazed at his teaching, 32
because his words were spoken with authority. In the synagogue 33
there was a man with the spirit of a foul demon in him, who called 34
out loudly: “Stop! What do you want with us, Jesus of Nazareth? 34
Have you come to destroy us? I know who you are — the Holy 35
One of God!” But Jesus rebuked the demon. “Be silent! Come out 35
from him,” he said. The demon flung the man down in the middle 36
of the people, and then came out from him, without causing him 36
further harm. And they were all lost in amazement, and kept 37
saying to one another: “What words are these? For he gives his 37
commands to the foul spirits with a marvelous authority, and they 37
come out.” And rumors about Jesus traveled through every place 37
in the neighborhood.

On leaving the synagogue, Jesus went into Simon’s house. Now 38
Simon’s mother-in-law was suffering from a severe attack of fever, 38

39 and they asked Jesus to cure her. Bending over her, he rebuked
the fever; the fever left her, and she immediately got up and began
40 to take care of them. At sunset, all who had friends suffering from
various diseases took them to Jesus; and he placed his hands on
41 everyone of them and cured them. And even demons came out
from many people, screaming 'You are the Son of God.' Jesus re-
buked them, and would not allow them to speak, because they
knew that he was the Christ.

42 At daybreak, Jesus went out and walked to a lonely spot. But
crowds of people began to look for him; and they came to where
he was and tried to detain him and prevent his leaving them. Je-
43 sus, however, said to them: "I must take the good news of the
kingdom of God to the other town also, for that was why I was
44 sent." And he continued to make his proclamation in the Syna-
gogues of Judea.

5 Once, when the people were pressing around Jesus as they lis-
tened to God's message, he happened to be standing by the shore
of the Lake of Gennesaret, and saw two boats close to the shore.
2 The fishermen had gone away from them and were washing the
3 nets. So, getting into one of the boats, which belonged to Simon,
Jesus asked him to push off a little way from the shore, and then
4 sat down and taught the people from the boat. When he had fin-
ished speaking, he said to Simon: "Push off into deep water, and
throw out your nets for a haul."
5 "We have been hard at work all night, Sir," answered Simon, "and
have not caught anything, but, at your bidding, I will throw out
6 the nets." They did so, and enclosed such a great shoal of fish
7 that their nets began to break. So they signaled to their partners
in the other boat to come and help them; and they came and filled
both the boats so full of fish that they were almost sinking. When
8 Simon Peter saw this, he threw himself down at Jesus' knees,
9 exclaiming: "Master, leave me, for I am a sinful man!" For he
and all who were with him were lost in amazement at the haul
10 of fish which they had made; and so, too, were James and John,
Zebedee's sons, who were Simon's partners. "Do not be afraid,"
11 Jesus said to Simon; "from today you will catch people." And,
when they had brought their boats to shore, they left everything,
and followed him.

On one occasion Jesus was staying in a town, when he saw a man who was covered with leprosy. When the leper saw Jesus, he threw himself on his face and implored his help: "Master, if only you are willing, you are able to make me clean." Stretching out his hand, Jesus touched him, saying as he did so: "I am willing; become clean."

Instantly the leprosy left the man; and then Jesus impressed on him that he was not to say a word to anyone, "but," he added, "set out and show yourself to the priest, and make the offerings for your cleansing, in the manner directed by Moses, as evidence of your cure." However, the story about Jesus spread all the more, and great crowds came together to listen to him, and to be cured of their illnesses; but Jesus used to withdraw to lonely places and pray.

On one of those days, when Jesus was teaching, some Pharisees and Doctors of the law were sitting near by. (They had come from all the villages in Galilee and Judea, and from Jerusalem; and the power of the Lord was on Jesus, so that he could work cures.) And there some men brought on a bed a man who was paralyzed. They tried to get him in and lay him before Jesus; but, finding no way of getting him in owing to the crowd, they went up on the roof and lowered him through the tiles, with his pallet, into the middle of the people and in front of Jesus. When he saw their faith, Jesus said: "Friend, your sins have been forgiven you." The teachers of the law and the Pharisees began debating about this. "Who is this man who speaks so blasphemously?" they asked. "Who can forgive sins except God?"

When Jesus became aware of the way in which they were debating, he turned to them and exclaimed: "What are you debating with yourselves? Which is the easier? — to say 'Your sins have been forgiven you'? Or to say 'Get up, and walk'? But so that you may know that the Son of Man has power on earth to forgive sins" — he spoke to the paralyzed man — "To you I say, Get up, and take up your pallet, and go to your home." Instantly the man stood up before their eyes, took up what he had been lying on, and went to his home, praising God. The people, one and all, were lost in amazement, and praised God; and in great awe they said: "We have seen marvelous things today!"

27 After this, Jesus went out; and he noticed a tax-gatherer,
28 named Levi, sitting in the tax office, and said to him: "Follow
29 me." Levi left everything and got up and followed him. And
29 Levi gave a great entertainment at his house, in honor of Jesus;
and a large number of tax-gatherers and others were having
dinner with them.

30 The Pharisees and the teachers of the law belonging to their party
31 complained of this to the disciples of Jesus." In answer Jesus said:
"It is not those who are well who need a doctor, but those who are
32 ill. I have not come to call the religious, but the outcast, to repent."

33 "John's disciples," they said to Jesus, "Often fast and say
prayers, and so do the disciples of the Pharisees, while yours are
eating and drinking!"

34 But Jesus answered them: "Can you make the groom's friends
35 fast while the groom is with them? But the days will come — a
time when the groom will be taken away from them; and they will
36 fast then, when those days come." Then, as an illustration, Jesus
said to them: "No one ever tears a piece from a new garment and
puts it on an old one; for, if they do, they will not only tear the
new garment, but the piece from the new one will not match the
37 old. And no one puts new wine into old wine-skins; for, if they
do, the new wine will burst the skins, and the wine itself will run
38 out, and the skins be lost. But new wine must be put into fresh
39 skins. No one after drinking old wine wishes for new. 'No,' they
say, 'the old is excellent.'"

6 One Sabbath Jesus was walking through cornfields, and his
disciples were picking the ears of wheat, and rubbing them in
2 their hands, and eating them. "Why are you doing what it is not
allowable to do on the Sabbath?" asked some of the Pharisees.
3 Jesus' answer was: "Haven't you read even of what David did,
4 when he was hungry, he and his companions — That he went
into the house of God, and took the consecrated bread and ate
it, and gave some to his companions, though only the priests are
5 allowed to eat it?" Then Jesus added: "The Son of Man is lord
even of the Sabbath."

6 On another Sabbath Jesus went into the synagogue and taught;
7 and there was a man there whose right hand was withered. The

teachers of the law and the Pharisees watched Jesus closely, to see if he would work cures on the Sabbath, so that they might find a charge to bring against him. Jesus, however, knew what was in their minds, and said to the man whose hand was withered: "Stand up and come out into the middle." The man stood up; and Jesus said to them: "I ask you, is it allowable to do good on the Sabbath — or harm? To save a life, or let it perish?" Then, looking around at them all, he said to the man: "Stretch out your hand." The man did so; and his hand had become sound. But the teachers of the law and the Pharisees were goaded to madness, and consulted together what they could do to Jesus.

Now about that time, Jesus went out, up the hill, to pray, and spent the whole night in prayer to God. When day came, he summoned his disciples, and chose twelve of them, whom he also named 'apostles.' They were Simon (whom Jesus also named Peter), and his brother Andrew, James, John, Philip, Bartholomew, Matthew, Thomas, James son of Alphaeus, Simon known as the Zealot, Judas son of James, and Judas Iscariot, who proved a traitor. Afterwards Jesus came down the hill with them and took his stand on a level place. With him were a large crowd of his disciples, and great numbers of people from the whole of Judea, Jerusalem, and the coast district of Tyre and Sidon, who had come to hear him and to be restored to health. Those, too, who were troubled with foul spirits were cured; and everyone in the crowd was trying to touch him, because a power went out from him which restored them all.

Then, raising his eyes and looking at his disciples, Jesus said:

"Blessed are you who are poor, for yours is the kingdom of God.

Blessed are you who hunger now, for you will be satisfied.

Blessed are you who weep now, for you will laugh.

Blessed are you when people hate you,

and when they expel you from among them,

and insult you,

and reject your name as an evil thing —

because of the Son of Man.

Then indeed you may be glad and dance for joy, for be sure

that your reward in heaven will be great; for that is what

their ancestors did to the prophets. But

- 'alas for you who are rich,'
 for you have had your comforts in full.
- 25 Alas for you who are sated now,
 for you will hunger.
 Alas for you who laugh now,
 for you will mourn and weep.
- 26 Alas for you when everyone speaks well of you;
 for this is what their ancestors did to the false prophets.
- 27 But to you who hear I say — love your enemies, show kind-
 28 ness to those who hate you, bless those who curse you,
 29 pray for those who insult you. When someone gives one
 of you a blow on the cheek, offer the other cheek as well;
 and, when anyone takes away your cloak, do not keep back
 30 your coat either. Give to everyone who asks of you; and,
 when anyone takes away what is yours, do not demand its
 31 return. Do to others as you wish them to do to you.
- 32 If you love only those who love you, what thanks will
 be due to you? Why, even the outcast love those who love
 33 them! For, if you show kindness only to those who show
 kindness to you, what thanks will be due to you? Even the
 34 outcast do that! If you lend only to those from whom you
 expect to get something, what thanks will be due to you?
 Even the outcast lend to the outcast in the hope of get-
 35 ting as much in return! But love your enemies, and show
 them kindness, and lend to them, never despairing. Then
 your reward will be great, and you will be sons of the Most
 High, for he is kind to the thankless and the bad.
- 36 Learn to be merciful — even as your Father is merciful.
 37 Do not judge, and you will not be judged; do not con-
 demn, and you will not be condemned. Forgive, and you
 38 will be forgiven. Give, and others will give to you. A gener-
 ous measure, pressed and shaken down, and running over,
 will they pour into your lap; For The standard you use will
 be the standard used for you."
- 39 Then, speaking in parables, Jesus said: "Can one blind person
 40 guide another? Will they not both fall into a ditch? A scholar is
 not above their teacher; yet every finished scholar will be like their

teacher. And why do you look at the speck of sawdust in some- 41
 one's eye, while you pay no attention at all to the plank of wood in
 your own? How can you say to your friend 'Friend, let me take out 42
 the speck in your eye,' while you yourself do not see the plank in
 your own? Hypocrite! Take out the plank from your own eye first,
 and then you will see clearly how to take out the speck in your 43
 friend's. There is no such thing as a good tree bearing worthless
 fruit, or, on the other hand, a worthless tree bearing good fruit.
 For every tree is known by its own fruit. People do not gather 44
 figs off thorn bushes, nor pick a bunch of grapes off a bramble.
 A good person, from the good stores of their heart, brings out 45
 what is good; while a bad person, from their bad stores, brings
 out what is bad. For what fills someone's heart will rise to their
 lips. Why do you call me 'Master! Master!' and yet fail to do what 46
 I tell you? Everyone who comes to me and listens to my teaching 47
 and acts on it — I will show you to whom they may be compared.
 They may be compared to a person building a house, who dug, 48
 and went deep, and laid the foundation on the rock. Then, when a
 flood came, the river swept down on that house, but had no power
 to shake it, because it had been built well. But those who have listened 49
 and not acted on what they have heard may be compared
 to a person who built a house on the ground without any founda-
 tion. The river swept down on it, and the house immediately
 collapsed; and great was the crash that followed."

When Jesus had brought to a conclusion all that he had then 7
 had to say to the people, he entered Capernaum.
 A captain in the Roman army had a slave whom he valued, and 2
 who was seriously ill — almost at the point of death. And, hear- 3
 ing about Jesus, he sent some Jewish councillors to him, with
 the request that he would come and save his slave's life. When 4
 they found Jesus, they earnestly implored him to do so. "He de-
 serves the favor from you," they said, "For he is devoted to our 5
 nation, and himself built our synagogue for us." So Jesus went 6
 with them. But, when he was no great distance from the house,
 the captain sent some friends with the message — "Do not trou-
 ble yourself, Sir; for I am unworthy to receive you under my roof.
 That was why I did not even venture to come to you myself; but 7
 speak, and let my manservant be cured. For I myself am a man 8

under the orders of others, with soldiers under me; and if I say to one of them 'Go,' he goes, and to another 'Come,' he comes, and to my slave 'Do this,' he does it." Jesus was surprised to hear these words from him; and, turning to the crowd which was following him, he said: "I tell you, nowhere in Israel have I met with such faith as this!" And, when the messengers returned to the house, they found the slave recovered.

Shortly after, Jesus went to a town called Nain, his disciples and a great crowd going with him. Just as he approached the gate of the town, there was a dead man being carried out for burial — an only son, and his mother was a widow. A large number of the people of the town were with her. When he saw her, the Master was moved with compassion for her, and he said to her: "Do not weep." Then he went up and touched the bier, and the bearers stopped; and Jesus said: "Young man, I am speaking to you — Rise!" The dead man sat up and began to talk, and Jesus restored him to his mother. Everyone was awe-struck and began praising God. "A great prophet has arisen among us," they said; "and God has visited his people."

And this story about Jesus spread all through Judea, and in the neighboring countries as well.

All these events were reported to John by his disciples. So he summoned two of them, and sent them to the Master to ask — "Are you 'the coming one,' or are we to look for some one else?" When these men found Jesus, they said: "John the Baptist has sent us to you to ask — 'Are you 'the coming one,' or are we to look for somebody else?'" At that very time Jesus had cured many people of diseases, afflictions, and wicked spirits, and had given many blind people their sight. So his answer to the question was: "Go and report to John what you have witnessed and heard — the blind recover their sight, the lame walk, the lepers are made clean, and the deaf hear, the dead are raised to life, the good news is told to the poor. And blessed is the person who finds no hindrance in me."

When John's messengers had left, Jesus, speaking to the crowds, began to say with reference to John: "What did you go out into the wilderness to look at? A reed waving in the wind? If not, what did you go out to see? A man dressed in rich clothing?"

Why, those who are accustomed to fine clothes and luxury live in royal palaces. What then did you go to see? A prophet? Yes, I tell you, and far more than a prophet. This is the man of whom scripture says —

‘I am sending my messenger ahead of you,
and he will prepare your way before you.’

There is, I tell you, no one born of a woman who is greater than John; and yet the least in the kingdom of God is greater than he.”

(All the people, when they heard this, and even the tax-gatherers, having accepted John’s baptism, acknowledged the justice of God. But the Pharisees and the students of the law, having rejected John’s baptism, frustrated God’s purpose in regard to them.)

“To what then,” Jesus continued, “should I compare the people of the present generation? What are they like? They are like some little children who are sitting in the marketplace and calling out to one another — ‘We have played the flute for you, but you have not danced; We have wailed, but you have not wept!’ For now that John the Baptist has come, not eating bread or drinking wine, you are saying ‘He has a demon in him’; and now that the Son of Man has come, eating and drinking, you are saying ‘Here is a glutton and a wine-drinker, a friend of tax-gatherers and outcasts.’ And yet wisdom is vindicated by all her children.”

One of the Pharisees asked Jesus to dine with him, so Jesus went to his house and took his place at the table. Just then a woman, who was an outcast in the town, having heard that Jesus was eating in the Pharisee’s house, brought an alabaster jar of perfume, and placed herself behind Jesus, near his feet, weeping. Then she began to make his feet wet with her tears, and she dried them with the hair of her head, repeatedly kissing his feet and anointing them with the perfume.

When the Pharisee who had invited Jesus saw this, he said to himself: “Had this man been ‘The prophet,’ he would have known who, and what sort of woman, this is who is touching him, and that she is an outcast.” But, addressing him, Jesus said: “Simon, I have something to say to you.”

41 “Pray do so, teacher,” Simon answered; and Jesus began:
42 “There were two people who were in debt to a moneylender;
43 one owed five hundred silver coins, and the other fifty. As they
44 were unable to pay, he forgave them both. Which of them, do
45 you think, will love him the more?”

46 “I suppose,” answered Simon, “it will be the man to whom he
47 forgave the greater debt.”

48 “You are right,” said Jesus, and then, turning to the woman, he
49 said to Simon: “Do you see this woman? I came into your house
50 — you gave me no water for my feet, but she has made my feet
51 wet with her tears and dried them with her hair. You did not
52 give me one kiss, but she, from the moment I came in, has not
53 ceased to kiss my feet. You did not anoint even my head with
54 oil, but she has anointed my feet with perfume. And for this, I
55 tell you, her sins, many as they are, have been pardoned, because
56 she has loved greatly; but one who has little pardoned him, loves
57 but little.” Then he said to the woman: “Your sins have been par-
58 doned.” The other guests began to say to one another: “Who is
59 this man who even pardons sins?” But Jesus said to the woman:
60 “Your faith has delivered you; go, and peace be with you.”

8 Shortly afterwards, Jesus went on a journey through the towns
and villages, proclaiming the good news of the kingdom of God.
2 With him went the Twelve, as well as some women who had
been cured of wicked spirits and of infirmities. They were Mary,
known as Mary of Magdala (from whom seven demons had been
3 expelled), and Joanna (the wife of Herod’s steward, Chuza), and
Susannah, and many others — all of whom provided for Jesus
and his apostles out of their own resources.
4 Once, when a great crowd was collecting, and, when the people
of town after town were flocking to Jesus, he spoke to them in the
5 form of a parable: “The sower went out to sow his seed; and, as he
was sowing, some of the seed fell along the path and was trodden
6 on; and the wild birds ate it up. Other seed fell on rock, and, as
soon as it began to grow, because it had no moisture, it withered
7 away. Other seed fell in the middle of brambles, but the brambles
8 grew up with it and choked it entirely. Other seed fell into rich
soil, and grew, and gave a hundredfold return.” After saying this,
Jesus cried aloud: “Let those who have ears to hear with hear.”

His disciples asked Jesus the meaning of this parable. "To you," he said, "the knowledge of the hidden truths of the kingdom of God has been imparted, but to others in parables only, so that 'though they have eyes they may not see, and though they have ears, they may not understand.' This is the parable — The seed is God's message. By the seed which fell along the path are meant those who hear the message; but then comes the devil and carries away the message from their minds, to prevent their believing it and being saved. By the seed which fell on the rock are meant those who, as soon as they hear the message, welcome it joyfully; but they have no root, and believe it only for a time, and, when the time of temptation comes, they draw back. By that which fell among the brambles are meant those who hear the message, but who, as they go on their way, are completely choked by this world's cares and wealth and pleasures, and bring nothing to perfection. But by that in the good ground are meant those who, having heard the message, keep it in the good, rich soil of their hearts, and patiently yield a return.

No one sets light to a lamp and then covers it with a bowl or puts it underneath a couch, but they put it on a lamp-stand, so that anyone who comes in may see the light. Nothing is hidden which will not be brought into the light of day, not ever kept hidden which will not some day become known and come into the light of day. Take care, then, how you listen. For, to all those who have, more will be given; while, from all those who have nothing, even what they seem to have will be taken away."

Presently Jesus' mother and brothers came where he was, but they were not able to join him because of the crowd. So word was brought to him — 'Your mother and your brothers are standing outside, wanting to see you.' His reply, spoken to them all, was: "My mother and my brothers are those who listen to God's teaching and do what it says."

One day about that time, Jesus got into a boat with his disciples and said to them: "Let us go across the lake." So they put off. While they were sailing, Jesus fell asleep. A squall swept down on the lake, and their boat was filling and they were in danger. So the disciples came and roused him. "Sir, Sir," they cried, "we are lost!" Jesus rose and rebuked the wind and the rushing waves, and they

25 fell, and a calm followed. "Where is your faith?" he exclaimed. But in great awe and amazement they said to one another: "Who can this be, who commands even the winds and the waves, and they obey him?"

26 And they reached the country of the Gerasenes, which is on
27 the opposite side to Galilee; and, on getting ashore, Jesus met a man, who had demons in him, coming out of the town. For a long time this man had worn no clothing, and he had not lived
28 in a house, but in the tombs. Catching sight of Jesus, he shrieked out and threw himself down before him, and in a loud voice exclaimed: "What do you want with me, Jesus, Son of the Most High
29 God? I beg you not to torment me." For Jesus was commanding the foul spirit to come out of the man. On many occasions it had seized him, and, even when secured with chains and fetters, and watched, he would break through anything that bound him, and be driven by the demon into the Wilds.

30 "What is your name?" Jesus asked.

"Legion," he answered (for many demons had taken possession
31 of him); and the demons begged Jesus not to order them away into the bottomless pit. There was a drove of many pigs close
32 by feeding on the hill-side; and the demons begged Jesus to give them leave to enter into them. Jesus gave them leave. They came
33 out from the man and took possession of the pigs; and the drove rushed down the steep slope into the lake and were drowned.
34 When the men who tended them saw what had happened, they ran away, and carried the news to the town, and to the country
35 around. The people went out to see what had happened, and, when they came to Jesus, they found the man from whom the demons had gone out, sitting, clothed and in his right mind, at
36 Jesus' feet; and they were awe-struck. Those who had seen it told them how the possessed man had been delivered. Then all the
37 people in the neighborhood of the Gerasenes asked Jesus to leave them, for they were terrified. Jesus got into a boat and returned.
38 The man from whom the demons had gone out begged Jesus to let him be with him; but Jesus sent him away. "Go back to your
39 home," he said, "and relate the story of all that God has done for you." So the man went through the whole town and proclaimed, as he went, all that Jesus had done for him.

On his return, Jesus was welcomed by the people; for everyone was looking out for him. And a man named Jaieirus, who was a synagogue leader, came to Jesus, and threw himself at Jesus' feet, with entreaties that he would come to his house, because his only daughter, who was about twelve years old, was dying. As Jesus was going, the people were pressing closely around him. And a woman, who had suffered from hemorrhage for twelve years, and whom no one could cure, came up behind and touched the tassel of his cloak. Instantly the hemorrhage ceased.

"Who touched me?" Jesus asked; and, while everyone was denying having done so, Peter exclaimed: "Why, Sir, the people are crowding around you and pressing against you!"

"Somebody touched me," said Jesus; "for I felt that power had gone out from me." Then the woman, when she saw that she was discovered, came forward trembling, and threw herself down before him; and, in the presence of all the people, she told him her reason for touching him, and that she had been cured instantly.

"Daughter," he said, "your faith has delivered you. Go, and peace be with you."

Before he had finished speaking, some one came from the house of the synagogue leader and said: "Your daughter is dead! Do not trouble the teacher further." But Jesus, hearing this, spoke to the leader: "Do not be afraid; only have faith, and she will yet be delivered." When he reached the house, he did not allow anyone to go in with him, except Peter, John, and James, and the child's father and mother. And everyone was weeping and mourning for her.

"Do not weep," Jesus said, "she is not dead; she is asleep." They began to laugh at him, for they knew that she was dead. But, taking her by the hand, Jesus said in a loud voice: "Child, rise!" The child's spirit returned to her, and she instantly stood up; and Jesus ordered them to give her something to eat. Her parents were amazed, but Jesus impressed on them that they were not to tell anyone what had happened.

Jesus called the Twelve together, and gave them power and authority over all demons, as well as to cure diseases. He sent them out as his messengers, to proclaim the kingdom of God, and to work cures. "Do not," he said to them, "take anything for your

4 journey; not even a staff, or a bag, or bread, or any silver, or a
5 change of clothes with you. Whatever house you go to stay in,
6 remain there, and leave from that place. If people do not welcome
7 you, as you leave that town, shake even the dust off your feet, as
8 a protest against them." Then they set out and went from village
9 to village, telling the good news and curing people everywhere.
10 Prince Herod heard of all that was happening, and was
11 perplexed, because it was said by some that John must be risen
12 from the dead. Some again said that Elijah had appeared, and
13 others that one of the old prophets had risen again. But Herod
14 himself said: "John I beheaded; but who is this of whom I hear
15 such things?" And he endeavored to see him.

16 When the apostles returned, they related to Jesus all that they
17 had done. Then Jesus went privately to a town called Bethsaida,
18 taking the apostles with him. But the people recognized him and
19 followed him in crowds; and Jesus welcomed them and spoke to
20 them about the kingdom of God, while he cured those who were
21 in need of help. The day was drawing to a close, when the twelve
22 came up to him, and said: "Send the crowd away, so that they
23 may make their way to the villages and farms around about, and
24 find themselves lodgings and provisions, for we are in a lonely
25 spot here." But Jesus said: "It is for you to give them something
26 to eat."

27 "We have not more than five loaves and two fishes," they an-
28 swered; "unless indeed we are to go and buy food for all these
29 people." (For the men among them were about five thousand.)
30 "Get them seated in companies," was his reply, "about fifty in
31 each." This they did, and got all the people seated. Taking the
32 five loaves and the two fishes, Jesus looked up to heaven and said
33 the blessing over them. Then he broke them in pieces, and gave
34 them to his disciples to set before the people. Everyone had suffi-
35 cient to eat, and what was left of the broken pieces was picked up
36 — twelve baskets.

37 Afterwards, when Jesus was alone, praying, his disciples
38 joined him, and he asked them this question — "Who do the
39 people say that I am?"

40 "John the Baptist," was their answer; "others, however, say that
41 you are Elijah, while others say that one of the old prophets has
42 risen again."

“But you,” he went on, “who do you say that I am?” And to this Peter answered: “The Christ of God.” 20

Jesus, however, strictly charged them not to say this to anyone; he told them that the Son of Man must undergo much suffering, and be rejected by the councillors, and chief priests, and teachers of the law, and be put to death, and rise on the third day. And to all present he said: “If any one wishes to walk in my steps, let them renounce self, and take up their cross daily, and follow me. For whoever wishes to save their life will lose it, and whoever, for my sake, loses his life — that person will save it. What good does it do someone if, when they has gained the whole world, they has lost or forfeited themselves? Whoever is ashamed of me and of my teaching, the Son of Man will be ashamed of them, when he comes in his glory and the glory of the father and of the holy angels. Indeed, I tell you, some who are standing before me will not know death, until they have seen the kingdom of God.” 21 22 23 24 25 26 27

About eight days after speaking these words, Jesus went up the mountain to pray, taking with him Peter, John, and James. As he was praying, the aspect of his face was changed, and his clothing became of a glittering whiteness. And all at once two men were talking with Jesus; they were Moses and Elijah, who appeared in a glorified state, and spoke of his departure, which was destined to take place at Jerusalem. Peter and his companions had been overpowered by sleep but, suddenly becoming wide awake, they saw Jesus glorified and the two men who were standing beside him. 28 29 30 31 32

And, as Moses and Elijah were passing away from Jesus, Peter exclaimed: “Sir, it is good to be here; let us make three tents, one for you, and one for Moses, and one for Elijah.” He did not know what he was saying; and, while he was speaking, a cloud came down and enveloped them; and they were afraid, as they passed into the cloud; and from the cloud came a voice which said — “This is my Son, the Chosen One; him you must hear.” And, as the voice ceased, Jesus was found alone. The apostles kept silence, and told no one about any of the things that they had seen. 33 34 35 36

37 The next day, when they had come down from the mountain, a
38 great crowd met Jesus. And just then a man in the crowd shouted
out: "Teacher, I entreat you to look at my son, for he is my only
39 child; all at once a spirit will seize him, suddenly shriek out, and
throw him into convulsions until he foams, and will leave him
40 only when he is utterly exhausted. I entreated your disciples to
drive the spirit out, but they could not."

41 "Faithless and perverse generation!" Jesus exclaimed; "how long
must I be with you and have patience with you? Lead your son
42 here." While the boy was coming up to Jesus, the demon dashed
him down and threw him into convulsions. But Jesus rebuked the
foul spirit, and cured the boy, and gave him back to his father. And
43 all present were struck with awe at the majesty of God.

In the midst of the general astonishment at all that Jesus was
44 doing, he said to his disciples: "Listen carefully to my words. For
the Son of Man is destined to be betrayed into the hands of his
45 fellow men." But the disciples did not understand the meaning
of this; it had been concealed from them so that they did not see
it, and they were afraid to question him as to what he meant.

46 A discussion arose among the disciples as to which of them
was the greatest; and Jesus, knowing of the discussion that was
occupying their thoughts, took hold of a little child, and placed
48 it beside him, and then said to them: "Anyone who, for the sake
of my name, welcomes even this little child is welcoming me; and
anyone who welcomes me is welcoming him who sent me as his
messenger. For whoever is least among you all — that person is
great."

49 John said: "Sir, we saw a man driving out demons by using
your name, and we tried to prevent him, because he does not fol-
low you with us."

50 "None of you must prevent him," Jesus said to John; "who-
ever's not against you is for you."

The Journey to Jerusalem

51 AS THE DAYS BEFORE HIS BEING TAKEN UP TO HEAVEN WERE growing
few, Jesus set his face resolutely in the direction of Jerusalem;
52 and he sent on messengers in advance. On their way, they went
53 into a Samaritan village to make preparations for him, but the

people there did not welcome him, because his face was set in the direction of Jerusalem. When James and John saw this, they said: "Master, do you wish us to call for fire to come down from the heavens and consume them?" But Jesus turned and rebuked them. And they made their way to another village.

And, while they were on their way, a man said to Jesus: "I will follow you wherever you go."

"Foxes have holes," he replied, "and wild birds their nests, but the Son of Man has nowhere to lay his head." To another man Jesus said: "Follow me."

"Let me first go and bury my father," said the man. But Jesus said: "Leave the dead to bury their dead; but go yourself and carry far and wide the news of the kingdom of God."

"Master," said another, "I will follow you; but first let me say goodbye to my family." But Jesus answered: "No one who looks back, after putting their hand to the plow, is fitted for the kingdom of God."

After this, the Master appointed seventy-two other disciples, and sent them on as his messengers, two and two, in advance, to every town and place that he was himself intending to visit.

"The harvest," he said, "is abundant, but the laborers are few. Therefore pray to the owner of the harvest to send laborers to gather in his harvest. Now, go. Remember, I am sending you out as my messengers like lambs among wolves. Do not take a purse with you, or a bag, or sandals; and do not stop to greet anyone on your journey. Whatever house you go to stay at, begin by praying for a blessing on it. Then, if anyone there is deserving of a blessing, your blessing will rest on him; but if not, it will come back on yourselves. Remain at that same house, and eat and drink whatever they offer you; for the worker is worth their wages. Do not keep changing from one house to another. Whatever town you visit, if the people welcome you, eat what is set before you; cure the sick there, and tell people 'The kingdom of God is close at hand. But, whatever town you go to visit, if the people do not welcome you, go out into its streets and say 'We wipe off the dust of your town which has clung to Our feet; still, be assured that

12 the kingdom of God is close at Hand.' I tell you that the doom
13 of Sodom will be more bearable on 'that day' than the doom of
14 that town. Alas for you, Chorazin! Alas for you, Bethsaida! For,
15 if the Miracles which have been done in you had been done in
16 Tyre and Sidon, they would have sat in sackcloth and ashes and
17 repented long ago. Yet the doom of Tyre and Sidon will be more
18 bearable at the judgment than yours. And you, Capernaum! Will
19 you 'exalt yourself to heaven'? 'You will go down to the place of
20 death.' Anyone who listens to you is listening to me, and anyone
21 who rejects you is rejecting me; while the person who rejects me
is rejecting him who sent me as his messenger."

17 When the seventy-two returned, they exclaimed joyfully:
"Master, even the demons submit to us when we use your
18 name." And Jesus replied: "I have had visions of Satan, fallen,
19 like lightning from the heavens. Remember, I have given you
the power to 'trample on snakes and scorpions,' and to meet all
the strength of the Enemy. Nothing will ever harm you in any
20 way. Yet do not rejoice in the fact that the spirits submit to you,
but rejoice that your names have been enrolled in heaven."

21 At that same time, moved to exultation by the Holy Spirit, Jesus
said:

"I thank you, Father, Lord of heaven and earth, that,
though you have hidden these things from the wise and
learned, you have revealed them to the childlike! Yes,
Father, I thank you that this has seemed good to you.

22 Everything has been committed to me by my Father; nor
does anyone know who the Son is, except the Father, or
who the Father is, except the Son and those to whom the
Son may choose to reveal him."

23 Then, turning to his disciples, Jesus said to them alone: "Blessed
24 are the eyes that see what you are seeing; for, I tell you, many
prophets and kings wished for the sight of the things which you
are seeing, yet never heard them."

25 Just then a Student of the law came forward to test Jesus fur-
ther. "Teacher," he said, "what must I do if I am to 'gain eternal
life'?"

“What is said in the law?” answered Jesus. “What do you read there?” His reply was — 26 27

“You must love the Lord your God with all your heart, and with all your soul, and with all your strength, and with all your mind; and your neighbor as you love yourself.”

“You have answered right,” said Jesus; “do that, and you will live.” But the man, wanting to justify himself, said to Jesus: “And who is my neighbor?” 28 29

To which Jesus replied: “A man was once going down from Jerusalem to Jericho when he fell into the hands of robbers, who stripped him of everything, and beat him, and went away leaving him half dead. As it chanced, a priest was going down by that road. He saw the man, but passed by on the opposite side. A Levite, too, did the same; he came up to the spot, but, when he saw the man, passed by on the opposite side. But a Samaritan, traveling that way, came upon the man, and, when he saw him, he was moved with compassion. He went to him and bound up his wounds, dressing them with oil and wine, and then put him on his own mule, and brought him to an inn, and took care of him. The next day he took out two silver coins and gave them to the innkeeper. ‘Take care of him,’ he said, ‘and whatever more you may spend I will myself repay you on my way back.’ Now which, do you think, of these three men,” asked Jesus, “proved himself a neighbor to the man who fell into the robbers’ hands?” 30 31 32 33 34 35 36

“The one that took pity on him,” was the answer; on which Jesus said: “Go and do the same yourself.” 37

As they continued their journey, Jesus came to a village, where a woman named Martha welcomed him to her house. She had a sister called Mary, who seated herself at the Master’s feet, and listened to his teaching; but Martha was distracted by the many preparations that she was making. So she went up to Jesus and said: “Master, do you approve of my sister’s leaving me to make preparations alone? Tell her to help me.” 38 39 40

“Martha, Martha,” replied the Master, “you are anxious and trouble yourself about many things; but only a few are necessary, or rather one. Mary has chosen the good part, and it will not be taken away from her.” 41 42

11 One day Jesus was at a certain place praying, and, when he had finished, one of his disciples said to him: "Master, teach us to pray, as John taught his disciples."

2 "When you pray," Jesus answered, "say —

Father,

May your name be held holy,
your kingdom come.

3 Give us each day the bread that we will need;

4 and forgive us our sins,

for we ourselves forgive everyone who wrongs us;
and take us not into temptation."

5 Jesus also said to them: "Suppose that one of you who has a friend were to go to him in the middle of the night and say 'Friend, lend me three loaves, for a friend of mine has arrived at my house after a journey, and I have nothing to offer him;' And suppose that the other should answer from inside 'Do not trouble me; the door is already fastened, and my children and I are in bed; I cannot get up and give you anything'; I tell you that, even though he will not get up and give him anything because he is a friend, yet because of his persistence he will rouse himself and give him what he wants.

9 And so I say to you — Ask, and your prayer will be granted: search, and you will find; knock, and the door will be opened to you. For the person who asks receives, everyone who searches finds, and to the person who knocks the door will be opened. 11 What father among you, if his son asks him for a fish, will give him a snake instead, or, if he asks for an egg, will give him a scorpion? If you, then, naturally wicked though you are, know how to give good gifts to your children, how much more will the Father in heaven give the Holy Spirit to those who ask him!"

14 Once Jesus was driving out a dumb demon, and, when the demon had gone out, the dumb man spoke. The people were amazed at this; but some of them said: "He drives out demons by the help of Beelzebul, the chief of the demons"; while others, to test him, asked him for some sign from the heavens. Jesus himself, however, was aware of what they were thinking, and said to

them: "Any kingdom wholly divided against itself becomes a desolation; and a divided house falls. So, too, if Satan is wholly divided against himself, how can his kingdom last? Yet you say that I drive out demons by the help of Beelzebul. But, if it is by Beelzebul's help that I drive out demons, by whose help is it that your own sons drive them out? Therefore they will themselves be your judges. But, if it is by the hand of God that I drive out demons, then the kingdom of God must already be upon you. When a strong man is keeping guard, fully armed, over his own mansion, his property is in safety; but, when one still stronger has attacked and overpowered him, he takes away all the weapons on which the other had relied, and divides his spoil. Whoever who is not with me is against me, and the person who does not help me to gather is scattering. No sooner does a foul spirit leave someone, than it passes through places where there is no water, in search of rest; and finding none, it says 'I will go back to the home which I left'; but, on coming there, it finds it unoccupied, swept, and put in order. Then it goes and brings with it seven other spirits more wicked than itself, and they go in, and make their home there; and the last state of that person proves to be worse than the first." As Jesus was saying this, a woman in the crowd, raising her voice, exclaimed: "Happy was the mother who bore you and nursed you!" But Jesus replied: "Rather, happy are those who listen to God's message and keep it."

As the crowds increased, Jesus began to speak: "This generation is a wicked generation. It is asking a sign, but no sign will be given it except the sign of Jonah. For, as Jonah became a sign to the people of Nineveh, so will the Son of Man be to this generation. At the judgment the Queen of the South will rise up with the people of this generation, and will condemn them, because she came from the ends of the earth to listen to the wisdom of Solomon; and here is more than a Solomon! At the judgment the men of Nineveh will stand up with this generation, and will condemn it, because they repented at Jonah's proclamation; and here is more than a Jonah! No one sets light to a lamp, and then puts it in the cellar or under a basket, but he puts it on the lamp-stand, so that anyone who comes in may see the light. The lamp of the body is your eye. When your eye is unclouded, your whole body, also, is

lit up; but, as soon as your eye is diseased, your body, also, is darkened. Take care, therefore, that the inner light is not darkness. If, then, your whole body is lit up, and no corner of it darkened, the whole will be lit up, just as when a lamp gives you light by its brilliance."

As Jesus finished speaking, a Pharisee asked him to breakfast with him, and Jesus went in and took his place at the table. The Pharisee noticed, to his astonishment, that Jesus omitted the ceremonial washing before breakfast. But the Master said to him: "You Pharisees do, it is true, clean the outside of the cup and of the plate, but inside you yourselves are filled with greed and wickedness. Fools! Did not the maker of the outside make the inside too? Only give away what is in them in charity, and at once you have the whole clean. But alas for you Pharisees! You pay tithes on mint, rue, and herbs of all kinds, and pass over justice and love to God. These last you ought to have put into practice without neglecting the first. Alas for you Pharisees! You delight to have the front seat in the Synagogues, and to be greeted in the markets with respect. Alas for you! You are like unsuspected graves, over which men walk unawares."

Here one of the students of the law interrupted him by saying: "Teacher, when you say this, you are insulting us also." But Jesus went on: "Alas for you, too, you students of the law! You load people with loads that are too heavy to carry, but do not, yourselves, touch them with one of your fingers. Alas for you! You build the monuments of the prophets whom your ancestors killed. You are actually witnesses to your ancestors' acts and show your approval of them, because, while they killed the prophets, you build tombs for them. That is why the wisdom of God said — "I will send to them prophets and apostles, some of whom they will persecute and kill, in order that the 'blood' of all the prophets 'that has been spilt' since the creation of the world may be exacted from this generation — From the blood of Abel down to the blood of Zechariah, who was slain between the altar and the house of God." Yes, I tell you, it will be exacted from this generation. Alas for you students of the law! You have taken away the key of the door of knowledge. You have not gone in yourselves and you have hindered those who try to go in."

When Jesus left the house, the teachers of the law and the Pharisees began to press him hard and question him closely on many subjects, laying traps for him, so as to seize on anything that he might say. 53 54

Meanwhile the people had gathered in thousands, so that they trod on one another, when Jesus, addressing himself to his disciples, began by saying to them: “Be on your guard against the heaven — that is, the hypocrisy — of the Pharisees. There is nothing, however covered up, which will not be uncovered, nor anything kept secret which will not become known. So all that you have said in the dark will be heard in the light, and what you have spoken in the ear, within closed doors, will be proclaimed on the housetops. To you who are my friends I say, Do not be afraid of those who kill the body, but after that can do no more. I will show you of whom you should be afraid. Be afraid of him who, after killing you, has the power to fling you into Gehenna. Yes, I say, be afraid of him. Are not five sparrows sold for two copper coins? Yet not one of them has escaped God’s notice. No, even the hairs of your head are all numbered. Do not be afraid; you are of more value than many sparrows. Everyone, I tell you, who publicly acknowledges me, the Son of Man, also, will acknowledge before God’s angels; but the person who publicly disowns me will be altogether disowned before God’s angels. Everyone who will say anything against the Son of Man will be forgiven, but for the person who slanders the Holy Spirit there will be no forgiveness. Whenever they take you before the synagogue Courts or the magistrates or other authorities, do not be anxious as to how you will defend yourselves, or what your defense will be, or what you will say; for the Holy Spirit will show you at the moment what you ought to say.” 12

“Teacher,” a man in the crowd said to Jesus, “tell my brother to share the property with me.” But Jesus said to him: “Man, who made me a judge or an arbiter between you?” And then he added: “Take care to keep yourselves free from every form of covetousness; for even in the height of their prosperity a person’s true life does not depend on what they have.” 13 14 15

Then Jesus told them this parable — “There was once a rich man whose land was very fertile; and he began to ask himself 16 17

18 'What will I do, for I have nowhere to store my crops? This is
what I will do,' he said; 'I will pull down my barns and build
larger ones, and store all my grain and my goods in them; and
19 I will say to myself, Now you have plenty of good things put
by for many years; take your ease, eat, drink, and enjoy yourself.'
20 But God said to the man 'Fool! This very night your life is being
demanded; and as for all you have prepared — who will have it?'
21 So it is with those who lay by wealth for themselves and are not
rich to the glory of God."

22 And Jesus said to his disciples: "That is why I say to you, Do
not be anxious about the life here — what you can get to eat; or
23 about your body — what you can get to wear. For life is more than
24 food, and the body than its clothes. Think of the ravens — they
neither sow nor reap; they have neither storehouse nor barn; and
yet God feeds them! And how much more precious are you than
25 birds! But which of you, by being anxious, can prolong your life
26 a moment? And, if you cannot do even the smallest thing, why
27 be anxious about other things? Think of the lilies, and how they
grow. They neither toil nor spin; yet, I tell you, even Solomon in all
28 his splendor was not robed like one of these. If, even in the field,
God so clothes the grass which is living today and tomorrow will
be thrown into the oven, how much more will he clothe you, you
29 of little faith! And you — do not be always seeking what you
can get to eat or what you can get to drink; and do not waver.
30 These are the things for which all the nations of the world are
31 seeking, and your Father knows that you need them. No, seek
32 his kingdom, and these things will be added for you. So do not
be afraid, my little flock, for your Father has been pleased to give
you the kingdom.

33 Sell what belongs to you, and give in charity. Make yourselves
purses that will not wear out — an inexhaustible treasure in
34 heaven, where no thief comes near, or moth works ruin. For
35 where your treasure is, there also will your heart be. Make
36 yourselves ready, with your lamps alight; and be like servants
who are waiting for their Master's return from his wedding, so
that, when he comes and knocks, they may open the door for
37 him at once. Happy are those servants whom, on his return, the
Master will find watching. I tell you that he will make himself
ready, and have them take their places at the table, and will
38 come and serve them. Whether it is late at night, or in the early

morning that he comes, if he finds all as it should be, then happy
are they. This you do know, that, had the owner of the house 39
known at what time the thief was coming, he would have been
on the watch, and would not have let his house be broken into.
You must also prepare, for when you are least expecting him the 40
Son of Man will come."

"Master," said Peter, "are you telling this parable with refer- 41
ence to us or to everyone?"

"Who, then," replied the Master, "is that trustworthy steward, 42
the careful man, who will be placed by his master over his estab-
lishment, to give them their rations at the proper time? Happy 43
will that servant be whom his master, when he comes home, will
find doing this. His master, I tell you, will put him in charge of 44
the whole of his property. But should that servant say to himself 45
'My master is a long time coming,' and begin to beat the menserv-
ants and the maidservants, and to eat and drink and get drunk,
that servant's master will come on a day when he does not ex- 46
pect him, and at an hour of which he is unaware, and will flog
him severely and assign him his place among the untrustworthy.
The servant who knows his master's wishes and yet does not pre- 47
pare and act accordingly will receive many lashes; while one who
does not know his master's wishes, but acts so as to deserve a 48
flogging, will receive but few. From everyone to whom much has
been given much will be expected, and from the man to whom
much has been entrusted the more will be demanded. I came to 49
cast fire on the earth; and what more can I wish, if it is already
kindled? There is a baptism that I must undergo, and how great 50
is my distress until it is over! Do you think that I am here to give 51
peace on earth? No, I tell you, but to cause division. For from this 52
time, if there are five people in a house, they will be divided, three
against two, and two against three.

'Father will be opposed to son and son to father, mother 53
to daughter and daughter to mother, mother-in-law to her
daughter-in-law and daughter-in-law to her
mother-in-law.'

And to the people Jesus said: "When you see a cloud rising in 54
the west, you say at once 'There is a storm coming,' and come it
does. And when you see that the wind is in the south, you say 55
'It will be burning hot,' and so it proves. Hypocrites! You know 56

57 how to judge of the earth and the sky; how is it, then, that you
58 cannot judge of this time? Why don't you yourselves decide what
is right? When, for instance, you are going with your opponent
before a magistrate, on your way to the court do your best to be
quit of him; otherwise he might drag you before the judge, then
the judge will hand you over to the bailiff of the court, and the
59 bailiff throw you into prison. You will not, I tell you, come out
until you have paid the very last cent."

13 Just at that time some people had come to tell Jesus about the
Galileans, whose blood Pilate had mingled with the blood of their
2 sacrifices. "Do you suppose," replied Jesus, "that, because these
Galileans have suffered in this way, they were worse sinners than
3 any other Galileans? No, I tell you; but, unless you repent, you
4 will all perish as they did. Or those eighteen men at Siloam on
whom the tower fell, killing them all, do you suppose that they
were worse offenders than any other inhabitants of Jerusalem?
5 No, I tell you; but, unless you repent, you will all perish in the
same manner."
6 And Jesus told them this parable — "A man, who had a fig tree
growing in his vineyard, came to look for fruit on it, but could not
7 find any. So he said to his gardener 'Three years now I have come
to look for fruit on this fig tree, without finding any! Cut it down.
8 Why should it rob the soil?' 'Leave it this one year more, Sir,' the
man answered, 'until I have dug around it and manured it. Then,
9 if it bears in future, well and good; but if not, you can have it cut
down.'"

10 Jesus was teaching on a Sabbath in one of the Synagogues, and
11 he saw before him a woman who for eighteen years had suffered
from weakness owing to her having an evil spirit in her. She was
12 bent double, and was wholly unable to raise herself. When Jesus
saw her, he called her to him, and said: "Woman, you are released
13 from your weakness." He placed his hands on her, and she was
14 instantly made straight, and began to praise God. But the syn-
agogue leader, indignant that Jesus had worked the cure on the
Sabbath, intervened and said to the people: "There are six days on

which work ought to be done; come to be cured on one of those, and not on the Sabbath."

"You hypocrites!" the Master answered him. "Does not every- 15
one of you let your ox or your ass loose from its manger, and take 16
it out to drink, on the Sabbath? But this woman, a daughter of
Abraham, who has been kept in bondage by Satan for now eigh-
teen years, ought not she to have been released from her bondage
on the Sabbath?" As he said this, his opponents all felt ashamed; 17
but all the people rejoiced to see all the wonderful things that he
was doing.

So Jesus said: "What is the kingdom of God like? And to what 18
can I liken it? It is like a mustard seed which a man took and put 19
in his garden. The seed grew and became a tree, and 'the wild
birds roosted in its branches.'" And again Jesus said: "To what 20
can I liken the kingdom of God? It is like some yeast which a 21
woman took and covered in three pecks of flour, until the whole
had risen."

Jesus went through towns and villages, teaching as he went, 22
and making his way towards Jerusalem. "Master," some one 23
asked, "are there but few in the path of salvation?" And Jesus
answered: "Strive to go in by the small door. Many, I tell you, 24
will seek to go in, but they will not be able, when once the 25
master of the house has got up and shut the door, while you
begin to say, as you stand outside and knock, 'Sir, open the door
for us.' His answer will be — 'I do not know where you come 26
from.' Then you will begin to say 'We have eaten and drunk in
your presence, and you have taught in our streets,' and his reply 27
will be — 'I do not know where you come from. Leave my 28
presence, all you who are living in wickedness.' There, there
will be weeping and grinding of teeth, when you see Abraham,
Isaac, and Jacob, and all the prophets, in the kingdom of God, 29
while you yourselves are being driven outside. People will come
from East and West, and from North and South, and take their 30
places at the banquet in the kingdom of God. there are some
who are last now who will then be first, and some who are first
now who will then be last!"

Just then some Pharisees came up to Jesus and said: "Go 31
away and leave this place, for Herod wants to kill you." But 32
Jesus answered: "Go and say to that fox 'Look you, I am driving
out demons and will be completing cures today and tomorrow,

33 and on the third day I will have done.' But today and tomorrow
 34 and the day after I must go on my way, because it cannot be that
 34 a prophet should meet his end outside Jerusalem. Jerusalem!
 Jerusalem! You who slays the prophets and stones the
 messengers sent to you — Oh, how often have I wished to gather
 your children around me, as a hen takes her brood under her
 35 wings, and you would not come! Verily your house is left to you
 desolate! And never, I tell you, will you see me, until you say —
 'Blessed is He who comes in the name of the Lord.'"

14 On one occasion, as Jesus was going, on a Sabbath into the
 house of one of the leading Pharisees to dine, they were watching
 2 him closely. There he saw before him a man who was suffering
 3 from dropsy. "Is it allowable," said Jesus, addressing the students
 of the law and the Pharisees, "to work a cure on the Sabbath, or
 4 is it not?" They remained silent. Jesus took hold of the man and
 5 cured him, and sent him away. And he said to them: "Which of
 you, finding that your son or your ox has fallen into a well, will
 6 not immediately pull them out on the Sabbath day?" And they
 could not make any answer to that.
 7 Observing that the guests were choosing the best places for them-
 8 selves, Jesus told them this parable — "When you are invited
 by anyone to a wedding banquet, do not seat yourself in the best
 place. Someone of higher rank might have been invited by your
 9 host; and the host who invited you both will come and say to
 you 'Make room for this person,' and then you will begin in con-
 10 fusion to take the lowest place. No, when you are invited, go and
 take the lowest place, so that, when the host who has invited you
 comes, he may say to you 'Friend, come higher up'; and then you
 11 will be honored in the eyes of all your fellow guests. For every-
 one who exalts themselves will be humbled, and everyone who
 humbles themselves will be exalted."
 12 Then Jesus went on to say to the man who had invited him:
 "When you give a breakfast or a dinner, do not ask your friends,
 or your brothers or sisters, or your relations, or rich neighbors,
 because they might invite you in return, and so you should be
 13 repaid. No, when you entertain, invite the poor, the crippled, the
 14 lame, the blind; and then you will be happy indeed, since they

cannot reward you; for you will be rewarded at the resurrection of the good."

One of the guests heard what he said and exclaimed: "Happy will be the person who will eat bread in the kingdom of God!"
But Jesus said to him: "A man was once giving a great dinner. He invited many people, and sent his servant, when it was time for the dinner, to say to those who had been invited 'Come, for everything is now ready.' They all with one accord began to ask to be excused. The first said to the servant 'I have bought a field and am obliged to go and look at it. I must ask you to consider me excused.' The next said 'I have bought five pairs of bullocks, and I am on my way to try them. I must ask you to consider me excused'; while the next said 'I am just married, and for that reason I am unable to come.' On his return the servant told his master all these answers. Then in anger the owner of the house said to his servant 'Go out at once into the streets and alleys of the town, and bring in here the poor, and the crippled, and the blind, and the lame.' Presently the servant said 'Sir, your order has been carried out, and still there is room.' 'Go out,' the master said, 'into the roads and hedgerows, and make people come in, so that my house may be filled; for I tell you all that not one of those people who were invited will taste my dinner.'"

One day, when great crowds of people were walking with Jesus, he turned and said to them: "If any one comes to me and does not hate their father, and mother, and wife, and children, and brothers, and sisters, yes and even their life, he can be no disciple of mine. Whoever does not carry their own cross, and walk in my steps, can be no disciple of mine. Why, which of you, when you want to build a tower, does not first sit down and reckon the cost, to see if you have enough to complete it? — Otherwise, if you have laid the foundation and are not able to finish it, everyone who sees it will laugh at you, and say 'Here is a person who began to build and was not able to finish!' Or what king, when he is setting out to fight another king, does not first sit down and consider if with ten thousand men he is able to meet one who is coming against him with twenty thousand? And if he cannot, then, while the other is still at a distance, he sends envoys and asks for terms of peace. And so with everyone of you who does not bid farewell to all you have — you cannot be a disciple of mine. Yes, salt is good; but, if the salt itself should lose its strength, what

35 will be used to season it? It is not fit either for the land or for the manure heap. People throw it away. Let those who have ears to hear with hear!"

15 The tax-gatherers and the outcasts were all drawing near to
2 Jesus to listen to him; but the Pharisees and the teachers of the law found fault.

"This man always welcomes outcasts, and takes meals with them!" they complained.

3 So Jesus told them this parable — "Who among you who has
4 a hundred sheep, and has lost one of them, does not leave the ninety-nine out in the open country, and go after the lost sheep until he finds it? And, when he has found it, he puts in on his
5 shoulders rejoicing; and, on reaching home, he calls his friends and his neighbors together, and says 'Come and rejoice with me,
6 for I have found my sheep which was lost.' So, I tell you, there will be more rejoicing in heaven over one outcast who repents, than
7 over ninety-nine religious people, who have no need to repent.
8 Or again, what woman who has ten silver coins, if she loses one of them, does not light a lamp, and sweep the house, and search
9 carefully until she finds it? And, when she has found it, she calls her friends and neighbors together, and says 'Come and rejoice
10 with me, for I have found the coin which I lost.' So, I tell you, there is rejoicing in the presence of God's angels over one outcast who repents."

11 Then Jesus continued: "A man had two sons; and the younger
12 of them said to his father 'Father, give me my share of the inheritance.' So the father divided the property between them. A few
13 days later the younger son got together all that he had, and went away into a distant land; and there he squandered his inheritance
14 by leading a dissolute life. After he has spent all that he had, there was a severe famine through all that country, and he began to be
15 in actual want. So he went and engaged himself to one of the people of that country, who sent him into his fields to tend pigs. He
16 even longed to satisfy his hunger with the bean-pods on which the pigs were feeding; and no one gave him anything. But, when
17 he came to himself, he said 'How many of my father's hired servants have more bread than they can eat, while here am I starving
18 to death! I will get up and go to my father, and say to him "Father,

I sinned against heaven and against you; I am no longer fit to be called your son; make me one of your hired servants.” And he got up and went to his father. But, while he was still a long way off, his father saw him and was deeply moved; he ran and threw his arms around his neck and kissed him. ‘Father,’ the son said, ‘I sinned against heaven and against you; I am no longer fit to be called your son; make me one of your hired servants.’ But the father turned to his servants and said ‘Be quick and fetch a robe — the very best — and put it on him; give him a ring for his finger and sandals for his feet; and bring the fattened calf and kill it, and let us eat and make merry; for here is my son who was dead, and is alive again, was lost, and is found.’ So they began making merry. Meanwhile the elder son was out in the fields; but, on coming home, when he got near the house, he heard music and dancing, and he called one of the servants and asked what it all meant. ‘Your brother has come back,’ the servant told him, ‘and your father has killed the fattened calf, because he has him back safe and sound.’ This made him angry, and he would not go in. But his father came out and begged him to do so. ‘No,’ he said to his father, ‘look at all the years I have been serving you, without ever once disobeying you, and yet you have never given me even a young goat, so that I might have a merrymaking with my friends. But, no sooner has this son of yours come, who has eaten up your property in the company of prostitutes, than you have killed the fattened calf for him.’ ‘Child,’ the father answered, ‘you are always with me, and everything that I have is yours. We could but make merry and rejoice, for here is your brother who was dead, and is alive; who was lost, and is found.’”

Jesus said to his disciples: “There was a rich man who had a steward; and this steward was maliciously accused to him of wasting his estate. So the master called him and said ‘What is this that I hear about you? Give in your accounts, for you cannot act as steward any longer.’ ‘What am I to do,’ the steward asked himself, ‘now that my master is taking the steward’s place away from me? I have not strength to dig, and I am ashamed to beg. I know what I will do, so that, as soon as I am turned out of my stewardship, people may welcome me into their homes.’ One by one he called up his master’s debtors. ‘How much do you owe my master?’ he asked of the first. ‘Four hundred and forty gallons of oil,’ answered the man. ‘Here is your agreement,’ he said;

7 'sit down at once and make it two hundred and twenty.' And
you, the steward said to the next, 'how much do you owe?' 'Sev-
enty quarters of wheat,' he replied. 'Here is your agreement,' the
8 steward said; 'make it fifty-six.' His master complimented this
dishonest steward on the shrewdness of his action. And indeed
men of the world are shrewder in dealing with their fellow men
9 than those who have the light. And I say to you 'Win friends for
yourselves with your dishonest money,' so that, when it comes to
an end, there may be a welcome for you into the Eternal Home.
10 The person who is trustworthy in the smallest matter is trustworth-
y in a great one also; and the person who is dishonest in the
11 smallest matter is dishonest in a great one also. So, if you have
proved untrustworthy with the 'dishonest money,' who will trust
12 you with the true? And, if you have proved untrustworthy with
what does not belong to us, who will give you what is really our
13 own? No servant can serve two masters, for, either they will hate
one and love the other, or else they will attach themselves to one
and despise the other. You cannot serve both God and Money."

14 All this was said within hearing of the Pharisees, who were
lovers of money, and they began to sneer at Jesus.

15 "You," said Jesus, "are the ones who justify themselves be-
fore the world, but God can read your hearts; and what is highly
esteemed among people may be an abomination in the sight of
16 God. The law and the prophets sufficed until the time of John.
Since then the good news of the kingdom of God has been told,
17 and everybody has been forcing their way into it. It would be
easier for the heavens and the earth to disappear than for one
18 stroke of a letter in the law to be lost. Everyone who divorces
his wife and marries another woman is an adulterer, and the man
19 who marries a divorced woman is an adulterer. There was once a
rich man, who dressed in purple robes and fine linen, and feasted
20 every day in great splendor. Near his gateway there had been laid
a beggar named Lazarus, who was covered with sores, and who
21 longed to satisfy his hunger with what fell from the rich man's
table. Even the dogs came and licked his sores. After a time the
22 beggar died, and was taken by the angels to be with Abraham.
The rich man also died and was buried. In the place of death
23 he looked up in his torment, and saw Abraham at a distance and
Lazarus at his side. So he called out 'Pity me, Father Abraham,
24 and send Lazarus to dip the tip of his finger in water and cool

my tongue, for I am suffering agony in this flame.' 'Child,' answered Abraham, 'remember that you in your lifetime received what you thought desirable, just as Lazarus received what was not desirable; but now he has his consolation here, while you are suffering agony. And not only that, but between you and us there lies a great chasm, so that those who wish to pass from here to you cannot, nor can they cross from there to us.' 'Then, Father,' he said, 'I beg you to send Lazarus to my father's house — For I have five brothers to warn them, so that they may not come to this place of torture also.' 'They have the writings of Moses and the prophets,' replied Abraham; 'let them listen to them.' 'But, Father Abraham,' he urged, 'if some one from the dead were to go to them, they would repent.' 'If they do not listen to Moses and the prophets,' answered Abraham, 'they will not be persuaded, even if some one were to rise from the dead.'"

Jesus said to his disciples: "It is inevitable that there should be temptations but sorrow awaits the person who does the tempting! It would be good for them if they had been flung into the sea with a millstone around their neck, rather than that they should prove a trap even one of these little ones. Be on your guard! If your brother or sister does wrong, rebuke them; but if they repent, forgive them. Even if they wrong you seven times a day, but turns to you every time and says 'I am sorry,' you must forgive them." "Give us more faith," said the apostles to the Master; but the Master said: "If your faith were only like a mustard seed, you could say to this mulberry tree 'Be uprooted and planted in the sea,' and it would obey you. Which of you, if he had a servant ploughing, or tending the sheep, would say to him, when he came in from the fields, 'Come at once and take your place at the table,' Instead of saying 'Prepare my dinner, and then make yourself ready and serve me while I am eating and drinking, and after that you will eat and drink yourself'? Does he feel grateful to his servant for doing what he is told? And so with you — when you have done all that you have been told, still say 'We are but useless servants; we have done no more than we ought to have done.'"

11 On the way to Jerusalem Jesus passed between Samaria and
12 Galilee. As he was entering a village, ten lepers met him. Standing
13 still, some distance off, they called out loudly: "Jesus! Sir! Pity
14 us!" When Jesus saw them, he said: "Go and show yourselves
to the priest." And, as they were on their way, they were made
15 clean. One of them, finding he was cured, came back, praising
16 God loudly, and threw himself on his face at Jesus' feet, thanking
17 him for what he had done; and this man was a Samaritan. "Were
not all the ten made clean? exclaimed Jesus. But the nine — where
18 are they? Were there none to come back and praise God except
19 this foreigner? Get up," he said to him, "and go on your way.
Your faith has delivered you."

20 Being once asked by the Pharisees when the kingdom of God was
to come, Jesus answered: "The kingdom of God does not come in
21 a way that can be seen, nor will people say 'Look, here it is!' or
22 'There it is!'; for the kingdom of God is within you! The day will
come," he said to his disciples, "when you will long to see but
23 one of the days of the Son of Man, and will not see it. People
will say to you 'There he is! Or 'Here he is!' Do not go and follow
24 them. For, just as lightning will lighten and flare from one side
of the heavens to the other, so will it be with the Son of Man. But
25 first he must undergo much suffering, and he must be rejected
26 by the present generation. As it was in the days of Noah, so will
27 it be again in the days of the Son of Man. They were eating and
drinking and marrying and being married, up to the very day
on which Noah entered the ark, and then the flood came and de-
28 stroyed them all. So, too, in the days of Lot. People were eating,
29 drinking, buying, selling, planting, building; but, on the very day
on which Lot came out of Sodom, it rained fire and sulphur from
30 the skies and destroyed them all. It will be the same on the day
31 on which the Son of Man reveals himself. On that day, if a person
is on their house-top and their goods in the house, they must not
go down to get them; nor again must one who is on the farm turn
32 back. Remember Lot's wife. Whoever is eager to get the most out
33 of their life will lose it; but whoever will lose it will preserve it. On
34 that night, I tell you, of two people on the same bed, one will be
35 taken and the other left; of two women grinding grain together,
one will be taken and the other left."

“Where will it be, Master?” asked the disciples. “Where there is a body,” said Jesus, “there will the vultures flock.” 37

Jesus told his disciples a parable to show them that they should always pray and never despair. “There was,” he said, “in a certain town a judge, who had no fear of God nor regard for people. In the same town there was a widow who went to him again and again, and said ‘Grant me justice against my opponent.’ For a time the judge refused, but afterwards he said to himself ‘Although I am without fear of God or regard for people, yet, as this widow is so troublesome, I will grant her justice, to stop her from plaguing me with her endless visits.’” Then the Master added: “Listen to what this iniquitous judge says! And God — will not he see that his own people, who cry to him night and day, have justice done them — though he holds his hand? He will, I tell you, give them justice soon enough! Yet, when the Son of Man comes, will he find faith on earth?” 18

Another time, speaking to people who were satisfied that they were religious, and who regarded everyone else with scorn, Jesus told this parable — “Two men went up into the Temple Courts to pray. One was a Pharisee and the other a tax-gatherer. The Pharisee stood forward and began praying to himself in this way — ‘God, I thank you that I am not like other men — thieves, rogues, adulterers — or even like this tax-gatherer. I fast twice a week, and give a tenth of everything I get to God.’ Meanwhile the tax-gatherer stood at a distance, not venturing even ‘to raise his eyes to heaven’; but he kept striking his breast and saying ‘God, have mercy on me, a sinner.’ This man, I tell you, went home pardoned, rather than the other; for everyone who exalts himself will be humbled, while everyone who humbles himself will be exalted.” 9

Some of the people were bringing even their babies to Jesus, for him to touch them; but, when the disciples saw it, they began to find fault with those who had brought them. Jesus, however, called the little children to him. “Let the little children come to me,” he said, “and do not hinder them; for it is to the childlike 15

17 that the kingdom of God belongs. I tell you, unless a man receives the kingdom of God like a child, he will not enter it at all."

18 And one of the Presidents asked Jesus this question — "Good teacher, what must I do if I am to gain eternal life?"

19 "Why do you call me good?" answered Jesus. "No one is good but
20 God. You know the commandments — 'Do not commit adultery, Do not kill, Do not steal, Do not say what is false about others, Honor your father and your mother.'"

21 "I have observed all these," he replied, "from childhood."
22 Hearing this, Jesus said to him: "There is one thing still lacking in you; sell everything that you have, and distribute to the poor, and you will have wealth in heaven; then come and follow me."

23 But the man became greatly distressed on hearing this, for he
24 was extremely rich. Seeing this, Jesus said to his disciples:
25 "How hard it is for the wealthy to enter the kingdom of God! It is easier, indeed, for a camel to get through a needle's eye than for a rich person to enter the kingdom of God!"

26 "Then who can be saved?" asked those who heard this. But Jesus said: "What is impossible with people is possible with God."

28 "But we," said Peter, "we left what belonged to us and followed you."

29 "I tell you," he answered, "that there is no one who has left house, or wife, or brothers, or parents, or children, for the sake of the kingdom of God, who will not receive many times as much in the present, and in the age that is coming eternal life."

31 Gathering the Twelve around him, Jesus said to them: "Listen! We are going up to Jerusalem; and there everything that is written in the prophets will be done to the Son of Man. For he will be given up to the Gentiles, mocked, insulted and spat on; they will scourge him, and then put him to death; and on the third day he will rise again." The apostles did not comprehend any of this; his meaning was unintelligible to them, and they did not understand what he was saying.

35 As Jesus was getting near Jericho, a blind man was sitting by the roadside, begging. Hearing a crowd going by, the man asked

what was the matter; and, when people told him that Jesus of Nazareth was passing, he shouted out: "Jesus, Son of David, take pity on me!" Those who were in front kept telling him to be quiet, but he continued to call out the louder: "Son of David, take pity on me!" Then Jesus stopped and ordered the man to be brought to him. And, when he had come close up to him, Jesus asked him: "What do you want me to do for you?" "Master," he said, "I want to recover my sight." And Jesus said: "Recover your sight, your faith has delivered you." Instantly he recovered his sight, and began to follow Jesus, praising God. And all the people, on seeing it, gave glory to God.

Jesus entered Jericho and made his way through the town. There was a man there, known by the name of Zacchaeus, who was a commissioner of taxes and a rich man. He tried to see what Jesus was like; but, being short, he was unable to do so because of the crowd. So he ran on ahead and climbed into a mulberry tree, to see Jesus, for he knew that he must pass that way. When Jesus came to the place, he looked up and said to him: "Zacchaeus, be quick and come down, for I must stop at your house today." So Zacchaeus got down quickly, and joyfully welcomed him. On seeing this, everyone began to complain: "He has gone to stay with a man who is an outcast." But Zacchaeus stood forward and said to the Master: "Listen, Master! I will give half my property to the poor, and, if I have defrauded anyone of anything, I will give him back four times as much."

"salvation has come to this house today," answered Jesus, "for even this man is a son of Abraham. The Son of Man has come to 'search for those who are lost' and to save them."

As the people were listening to this, Jesus went on to tell them a parable. He did so because he was near Jerusalem, and because they thought that the kingdom of God was going to be proclaimed at once. He said: "A nobleman once went to a distant country to receive his appointment to a kingdom and then return. He called ten of his servants and gave them ten pounds of silver each, and told them to trade with them during his absence. But his subjects hated him and sent envoys after him to say 'We will not have this man as our king.' On his return, after having been appointed king, he directed that the servants to

16 whom he had given his money should be summoned, so that he
 17 might learn what amount of trade they had done. The first came
 18 up, and said 'Sir, your ten pounds have made a hundred.' 'Well
 19 done, good servant!' exclaimed the master. 'As you have proved
 20 trustworthy in a very small matter, I appoint you governor over
 21 ten towns.' When the second came, he said 'Your ten pounds,
 22 Sir, have produced fifty.' So the master said to him 'And you I
 23 appoint over five towns.' Another servant also came and said
 24 'Sir, here are your ten pounds; I have kept them put away in a
 25 handkerchief. For I was afraid of you, because you are a stern
 26 man. You take what you have not planted, and reap what you
 27 have not sown.' The master answered 'Out of your own mouth I
 28 judge you, you worthless servant. You knew that I am a stern
 man, that I take what I have not planted, and reap what I have
 not sown? Then why didn't you put my money into a bank?
 And I, on my return, could have claimed it with interest. Take
 away from him the ten pounds,' he said to those standing by,
 'and give them to the one who has the hundred.' 'But, Sir,' they
 said, 'he has a hundred pounds already!' 'I tell you,' he
 answered, 'that, to him who has, more will be given, but, from
 him who has nothing, even what he has will be taken away. But
 as for my enemies, these men who would not have me as their
 king, bring them here and put them to death in my presence.'"
 After saying this, Jesus went on in front, going up to Jerusalem.

The Last Days

29 IT WAS WHEN JESUS HAD ALMOST REACHED BETHPHAGE and Bethany,
 near the Mount of Olives, that he sent on two of the disciples. "Go
 30 to the village facing us," he said, "and, when you get there, you
 will find a foal tethered, which no one has yet ridden; untie it and
 31 lead it here. And, if anybody asks you 'Why are you untying it?,'
 32 you are to say this — 'The Master wants it.'" So the two who were
 33 sent went and found it as Jesus had told them. While they were
 34 untying the foal, the owners asked them — "Why are you untying
 35 the foal?" And the two disciples answered — "The Master
 36 wants it." Then they led it back to Jesus, and threw their cloaks
 37 on the foal and put Jesus on it. As he went along, the people kept
 spreading their cloaks in the road. When he had almost reached

the place where the road led down the Mount of Olives, everyone of the many disciples began in their joy to praise God loudly for all the miracles that they had seen:

“Blessed is He who comes — 38
 Our king — in the name of the Lord!
 Peace in heaven,
 And glory on high.”

Some of the Pharisees in the crowd said to him: “Teacher, restrain 39
 your disciples.” But Jesus answered: “I tell you that if they are 40
 silent, the stones will call out.”

When he drew near, on seeing the city, he wept over it, and said: 41
 “If only you had known, while yet there was time — even you — 42
 the things that make for peace! But now they have been hidden
 from your sight. For a time is coming when your enemies will 43
 surround you with earthworks, and encircle you, and hem you
 in on all sides; they will trample you down and your children 44
 within you, and they will not leave in you one stone on another,
 because you did not know ‘the time of your visitation.’”

Jesus went into the Temple Courts and began to drive out those 45
 who were selling, saying as he did so: “Scripture says — ‘My 46
 house will be a house of prayer’; but you have made it ‘a den of
 robbers.’”

Jesus continued to teach each day in the Temple Courts; but 47
 the chief priests and teachers of the law were eager to take his
 life, and so also were the leaders of the people. Yet they could 48
 not see what to do, for the people all hung on his words.

On one of these days, when Jesus was teaching the people in the 20
 Temple Courts and telling the good news, the chief priests and
 the teachers of the law, joined by the councillors, confronted him,
 and addressing him, said: “Tell us what authority you have to do 2
 these things. Who is it who has given you this authority?”
 “I, too,” said Jesus in reply, “will ask you one question. Give me 3
 an answer to it. It is about John’s baptism — was it of divine or 4
 of human origin?” But they began arguing together: “If we say 5
 ‘divine,’ he will say ‘Why didn’t you believe him?’ But, if we say 6
 ‘human,’ the people will all stone us, for they are persuaded that

7 John was a prophet." So they answered that they did not know
8 its origin. "Then I," said Jesus, "refuse to tell you what authority
I have to do these things."

9 But Jesus began to tell the people this parable — "A man once
10 planted a vineyard, and then let it out to tenants, and went abroad
for a long while. At the proper time he sent a servant to the
11 tenants, so that they could give him a share of the produce of
the vineyard. The tenants, however, beat him and sent him away
12 empty-handed. The owner afterwards sent another servant; but
the tenants beat and insulted this man too, and sent him away
13 empty-handed. He sent a third; but they wounded this man also,
and threw him outside. 'What should I do?' said the owner of
the vineyard. 'I will send my son, who is very dear to me. Perhaps
14 they will respect him.' But, on seeing him, the tenants consulted
with one another. 'Here is the heir!' they said. 'Let us kill him,
15 and then the inheritance will become ours.' So they threw him
outside the vineyard and killed him. Now what will the owner of
16 the vineyard do to them? He will come and put those tenants to
death, and will let the vineyard to others."

17 "heaven forbid!" they exclaimed when they heard it. But Je-
sus looked at them and said: "What then is the meaning of this
passage? —

'The stone which the builders despised has now itself be-
come the corner-stone.'

18 Everyone who falls on that stone will be dashed to pieces, while
anyone on whom it falls — it will scatter him as dust."

19 After this the teachers of the law and the chief priest were eager
to lay hands on Jesus then and there, but they were afraid of the
people; for they saw that it was at them that he had aimed this
20 parable. Having watched their opportunity, they afterwards sent
some spies, who pretended to be good men, to catch Jesus in the
course of conversation, and so enable them to give him up to the
21 Governor's jurisdiction and authority. These spies asked Jesus
a question. They said: "Teacher, we know that you are right in
what you say and teach, and that you do not take any account of
22 a person's position, but teach the way of God honestly; are we
right in paying tribute to the Emperor or not?" Seeing through
23 their deceitfulness, Jesus said to them: "Show me a coin. Whose
24 head and title are on it?"

“The Emperor’s,” they said; and Jesus replied: “Well then, pay 25
to the Emperor what belongs to the Emperor, and to God what 26
belongs to God.” They could not lay hold of this answer before the
people; and, in their wonder at his reply, they held their tongues.

Presently there came up some Sadducees, who maintain that 27
there is no resurrection. Their question was this — “Teacher, 28
Moses laid down for us in his writings that —

‘Should a man’s married brother die, and should he be
childless, the man should take the widow as his wife, and
raise up a family for his brother.’

Well, there were once seven brothers; of whom the eldest, after 29
taking a wife, died childless. The second and third brothers both 30
took her as their wife; and so, too, did all seven — dying with- 31
out children. The woman herself was the last to die. About the 32
woman, then — at the resurrection, whose wife is she to be, all 33
seven brothers having had her as their wife?”

“The men and women of this world,” said Jesus, “marry and 34
are given in marriage; but, for those who are thought worthy 35
to attain to that other world and the resurrection from the dead,
there is no marrying or being married, nor indeed can they die 36
again, for they are like angels and, having shared in the resurrec- 37
tion, they are God’s children. As to the fact that the dead rise,
even Moses indicated that, in the passage about the Bush, when
he calls the Lord —

‘The God of Abraham, and the God of Isaac, and the God
of Jacob.’

Now he is not God of dead people, but of living. For in his sight 38
all are alive.”

“Well said, teacher!” exclaimed some of the teachers of the law, 39
for they did not venture to question him any further. But Jesus 40
said to them: “How is it that people say that the Christ is to be 41
David’s son? For David, in the book of Psalms, says himself — 42

‘The Lord said to my lord: “Sit at my right hand,
until I put your enemies as a stool for your feet.”’ 43

David, then, calls him ‘lord,’ so how is he David’s son?” 44

45 While all the people were listening, Jesus said to the disciples:
46 "Be on your guard against the teachers of the law, who delight
to walk about in long robes, and like to be greeted in the streets
with respect, and to have the best seats in the Synagogues, and
47 places of honor at dinner. These are the men who rob widows of
their houses, and make a pretense of saying long prayers. Their
sentence will be all the heavier."

21 Looking up, Jesus saw the rich people putting their gifts into
2 the chests for the Temple offerings. He saw, too, a widow in poor
3 circumstances putting two small coins into them. "I tell you", he
said "that this poor widow has put in more than all the others; for
4 everyone else here put in something from what he had to spare,
while she, in her need, has put in all she had to live on."

5 When some of them spoke about the Temple being decorated
6 with beautiful stones and offerings, Jesus said: "As for these
things that you are looking at, a time is coming when not one
stone will be left on another here, which will not be thrown
7 down." So the disciples questioned Jesus: "But, teacher, when
will this be? And what sign will there be when this is near?"
8 And Jesus said: "See that you are not led astray; for many will
take my name, and come saying 'I am He,' and 'The time is close
9 at hand.' Do not follow them. And, when you hear of wars and
disturbances, do not be terrified, for these things must occur first;
10 but the end will not be at once." Then he said to them: "'Nation
will rise against nation and kingdom against kingdom,' And
11 there will be great earthquakes, and plagues and famines in various
places, and there will be terrible appearances and signs in
12 the heavens. Before all this, they will lay hands on you and persecute
you, and they will betray you to Synagogues and put you in
13 prison, when you will be brought before kings and governors for
the sake of my name. Then will be your opportunity of witnessing
14 for me. Make up your minds, therefore, not to prepare your
defense; for I will myself give you words, and a wisdom which
15 all your opponents together will be unable to resist or defy. You
16 will be betrayed even by your parents and brothers and sisters
and sisters and relations and friends, and they will cause some
17 of you to be put to death, and you will be hated by everyone because
18 of me my name. Yet not a single hair of your heads will

be lost! By your endurance you will win yourselves life. As soon, 19
 however, as you see Jerusalem surrounded by armed camps, then 20
 you may know that the hour of her desecration is at hand. Then 21
 those of you who are in Judea must take refuge in the mountains,
 those who are in Jerusalem must leave at once, and those who
 are in the country places must not go into it. For these are to be 22
 the days of vengeance, when all that scripture says will be ful-
 filled. Alas for pregnant women, and for those who are nursing 23
 infants in those days! For there will be great suffering in the land,
 and anger against this people. They will fall by the edge of the 24
 sword, and will be taken prisoners to every land, and 'Jerusalem
 will be under the heel of the Gentiles,' until their day is over —
 as it will be. There will be signs, too, in the sun and moon and 25
 stars, and on the earth despair among the nations, in their dismay
 at the roar of the sea and the surge. People's hearts will fail them 26
 through dread of what is coming upon the world; for 'the forces
 of the heavens will be convulsed.' Then will be seen the 'Son of 27
 Man coming in a cloud' with power and great glory. And, when
 these things begin to occur, look upwards and lift your heads, for 28
 your deliverance will be at hand."

Then he taught them a lesson, saying — "Look at the fig tree 29
 and all the other trees. As soon as they shoot, you know, as you 30
 look at them, without being told, that summer is near. And so 31
 may you, as soon as you see these things happening, know that
 the kingdom of God is near. I tell you that even the present genera- 32
 tion will not pass away until all has taken place. The heavens and 33
 the earth will pass away, but my words will never pass away. Be
 on your guard or your minds will become dulled by debauches 34
 or drunkenness or the anxieties of life, and 'that day' will close on
 you suddenly like a trap. For come it will on all who are living 35
 upon the face of the whole earth. Be on the watch at all times, 36
 and pray that you may have strength to escape all that is destined
 to happen, and to stand in the presence of the Son of Man."

During the days, Jesus continued to teach in the Temple Courts, 37
 but he went out and spent the nights on the hill called the 'Mount 38
 of Olives.' And all the people would get up early in the morning
 and come to listen to him in the Temple Courts.

22 The feast of the unleavened bread, known as the Passover, was
2 near. The chief priest and the teachers of the law were looking
for an opportunity of destroying Jesus, for they were afraid of the
people.

3 Now Satan took possession of Judas, who was known as Iscariot,
4 and who belonged to the Twelve; and he went and discussed with
the chief priests and officers in charge at the Temple the best way
5 of betraying Jesus to them. They were glad of this, and agreed
6 to pay him. So Judas assented, and looked for an opportunity to
betray Jesus to them, in the absence of a crowd.

7 When the day of the Festival of the unleavened bread came,
8 on which the Passover lambs had to be killed, Jesus sent forward
Peter and John, saying to them: "Go and make preparations for
our eating the Passover."

9 "Where do you wish us to make preparations?" they asked.
10 "Listen," he answered, "when you have got into the city, a man
carrying a pitcher of water will meet you; follow him into what-
11 ever house he enters; and you will say to the owner of the house
'The teacher says to you — Where is the room where I am to eat
12 the Passover with my disciples?' The man will show you a large
upstairs room, set out; there make preparations."

13 So Peter and John went on, and found everything just as Jesus
had told them, and they prepared the Passover.

14 When the time came, Jesus took his place at the table, and the
15 apostles with him. "I have most earnestly wished," he said, "to
16 eat this Passover with you before I suffer. For I tell you that I will
not eat it again, until it has had its fulfillment in the kingdom of
17 God." Then, on receiving a cup, after saying the thanksgiving, he
18 said: "Take this and share it among you. For I tell you that I will
not, after today, drink of the juice of the grape, until the kingdom
19 of God has come." Then Jesus took some bread, and, after saying
the thanksgiving, broke it and gave to them, with the words: "This
21 is my body. Yet see! The hand of the man who is betraying me is
22 beside me on the table! True, the Son of Man is passing, by the
way ordained for him, yet alas for that man by whom he is being
23 betrayed!" Then they began questioning one another which of
them it could be who was going to do this.

24 And a dispute arose among them as to which of them was to be
25 regarded as the greatest. Jesus, however, said: "The kings of the

Gentiles lord it over them, and their oppressors are styled ‘Benefactors.’ But with you it must not be so. No, let the greatest among you become like the youngest, and him who leads like him who serves. Which is the greater — the master at the table or his servant? Is not it the master at the table? Yet I myself am among you as one who serves. You are the men who have stood by me in my trials; and, just as my Father has assigned me a kingdom, I assign you places, so that you may eat and drink at my table in my kingdom, and be seated on twelve thrones as judges of the twelve tribes of Israel. Simon! Simon! listen. Satan demanded leave to sift you all like wheat, but I prayed for you, Simon, that your faith should not fail. And you, when you have returned to me, are to strengthen the others.”

“Master,” said Peter, “with you I am ready to go both to prison and to death.”

“I tell you, Peter,” replied Jesus, “the cock will not crow today until you have disowned all knowledge of me three times.” Then he said to them all: “When I sent you out as my messengers, without either purse, or bag, or sandals, were you in need of anything?”

“No; nothing,” they answered. “Now, however,” he said, “he who has a purse must take it and his bag as well; and he who has not must sell his cloak and buy a sword. For, I tell you, that passage of scripture must be fulfilled in me, which says — ‘He was counted among the godless’; indeed all that refers to me is finding its fulfillment.”

“Master,” they exclaimed, “look, here are two swords!”

“Enough!” said Jesus.

Jesus then went out, and made his way as usual to the Mount of Olives, followed by his disciples. And, when he reached the spot, he said to them: “Pray that you may not fall into temptation.” Then he withdrew about a stone’s throw, and knelt down and began to pray. “Father,” he said, “if it is your pleasure, spare me this cup; only, not my will but your be done.” Presently there appeared to him an angel from heaven, who strengthened him. And, as his anguish became intense, he prayed still more earnestly, while his sweat was like great drops of blood falling on the ground. Then he rose from praying, and

46 came to the disciples and found them sleeping for sorrow. "Why
47 are you asleep?" he asked them. "Rise and pray so that you
48 don't fall into temptation." While he was still speaking, a crowd
49 appeared in sight, led by the man called Judas, who was one of
50 the Twelve. Judas approached Jesus, to kiss him; on which Jesus
51 said to him: "Judas, is it by a kiss that you betray the Son of
52 Man?" But when those who were around Jesus saw what was
53 going to happen, they exclaimed: "Master, should we use our
54 swords?" And one of them struck the high priest's servant and
55 cut off his right ear; on which Jesus said: "Let me at least do
56 this"; and, touching his ear, he healed the wound. Then, turning
57 to the chief priests and officers in charge at the Temple and
58 councillors, who had come for him, he said: "Have you come
59 out, as if after a robber, with swords and clubs? When I was
60 with you day after day in the Temple Courts, you did not lay
61 hands on me; but now your time has come, and the power of
62 darkness."

54 Those who had taken Jesus prisoner took him away into the
55 house of the high priest. Peter followed at a distance. But, when
56 they had lit a fire in the centre of the courtyard and had all sat
57 down there, Peter seated himself in the middle of them.
58 Presently a maidservant saw him sitting near the blaze of the
59 fire. She looked carefully at him and said: "Why, this man was
60 one of his companions!" But Peter denied it. "I do not know
61 him," he replied. A little while afterwards some one else — a
62 man — saw him and said: "Why, you are one of them!"
63 "No," Peter said, "I am not." About an hour later another man de-
64 clared positively: "This man also was certainly with him. Why, he
65 is a Galilean!" But Peter said: "I do not know what you are speak-
66 ing about." Instantly, while he was still speaking, a cock crowed.
67 And the Master turned and looked at Peter; and Peter remem-
68 bered the words that the Master had said to him — "Before a cock
69 has crowed today, you will disown me three times"; and he went
70 outside and wept bitterly.

63 The men who held Jesus kept making sport of him and beating
64 him. They blindfolded him and then questioned him. "Now play

the prophet," they said; "who was it that struck you?" And they heaped many other insults on him. 65

At daybreak the National Council met — both the chief priests and the teachers of the law — and took Jesus before their High Council. "If you are the Christ," they said, "tell us so." "If I tell you," replied Jesus, "you will not believe me; and, if I question you, you will not answer. But from this hour 'the Son of Man will be seated on the right hand of God Almighty.'" 66 67 68 69

"Are you, then, the Son of God?" they all asked. "It is true," answered Jesus, "I am." At this they exclaimed: "Why do we want any more evidence? We have heard it ourselves from his own lips!" 70 71

Then they all rose in a body and led Jesus before Pilate. And they began to accuse him: "This is a man whom we found misleading our people, preventing them from paying taxes to the Emperor, and giving out that he himself is 'Christ, a king.'" 23 2

"Are you the king of the Jews?" Pilate asked him. "It is true," replied Jesus. But Pilate, turning to the chief priests and the people, said: "I do not see anything to find fault with in this man." But they insisted: "He is stirring up the people by his teaching all through Judea; he began with Galilee and has now come here." Hearing this, Pilate asked if the man was a Galilean; and, having satisfied himself that Jesus came under Herod's jurisdiction, he sent him to Herod, who also was at Jerusalem at the time. When Herod saw Jesus, he was exceedingly pleased, for he had been wanting to see him for a long time, having heard a great deal about him; and he was hoping to see some sign given by him. So he questioned him at some length, but Jesus made no reply. Meanwhile the chief priests and the teachers of the law stood by and vehemently accused him. And Herod, with his soldiers, treated Jesus with scorn; he mocked him by throwing a gorgeous robe around him, and then sent him back to Pilate. And Herod and Pilate became friends that very day, for before that there had been ill-will between them. 3 4 5 6 7 8 9 10 11 12

So Pilate summoned the chief priests, and the leading men, and the people, and said to them: "You brought this man before me charged with misleading the people; and yet, for my part, though I examined him before you, I did not find this man to blame for 13 14

15 any of the things of which you accuse him; nor did Herod either;
16 for he has sent him back to us. And, as a fact, he has not done
17 anything deserving death; so I will have him scourged, and then
18 release him." But they began to shout as one man: "Kill this fel-
19 low, but release Barabbas for us." (Barabbas was a man who had
20 been put in prison for a riot that had broken out in the city and
21 for murder.) Pilate, however, wanting to release Jesus, called to
22 them again; but they kept calling out: "Crucify, crucify him!"
23 "Why, what harm has this man done?" Pilate said to them for
24 the third time. "I have found nothing in him for which he could
25 be condemned to death. So I will have him scourged, and then
26 release him." But they persisted in loudly demanding his cruci-
27 fixation; and their clamor gained the day. Pilate decided that their
28 demand should be granted. He released the man who had been
29 put in prison for riot and murder, as they demanded, and gave
30 Jesus up to be dealt with as they pleased.

31 And, as they were leading Jesus away, they laid hold of Simon
32 from Cyrene, who was on his way in from the country, and they
33 put the cross on his shoulders, for him to carry it behind Jesus.
34 There was a great crowd of people following him, many being
35 women who were beating their breasts and wailing for him. So
36 Jesus turned and said to them: "Women of Jerusalem, do not
weep for me, but weep for yourselves and for your children. A
time, I tell you, is coming, when it will be said — 'Happy are the
women who are barren, and those who have never borne chil-
dren or nursed them!' At that time people will begin to say to the
mountains 'Fall on us,' and to the hills 'Cover us.' If what you
see is done while the tree is green, what will happen when it is
dry?" There were two others also, criminals, led out to be exe-
cuted with Jesus. When they had reached the place called 'The
Skull,' there they crucified Jesus and the criminals, one on the
right, and one on the left. Then Jesus said: "Father, forgive them;
they do not know what they are doing." His clothes they divided
among them by casting lots. Meanwhile the people stood look-
ing on. Even the leading men said with a sneer: "He saved others,
let him save himself, if he is God's Christ, his chosen one." The
soldiers, too, came up in mockery, bringing him common wine,

and saying as they did so: "If you are the king of the Jews, save yourself." Above him were the words —

'THIS IS THE KING OF THE JEWS.'

One of the criminals who were hanging beside Jesus railed at him. "Aren't you the Christ? Save yourself and us," he said. But the other rebuked him. "Haven't you," he said, "any fear of God, now that you are under the same sentence? And we justly so, for we are only reaping our deserts, but this man has not done anything wrong. Jesus," he went on, "do not forget me when you have come to your kingdom." And Jesus answered: "I tell you, this very day you will be with me in Paradise."

It was nearly midday, when a darkness came over the whole country, lasting until three in the afternoon, the sun being eclipsed; and the Temple curtain was torn down the middle. Then Jesus, with a loud cry, said: "Father, into your hands I commit my spirit." And with these words he expired. The Roman captain, on seeing what had happened, praised God, exclaiming: "This must have been a good man!" All the people who had collected to see the sight watched what occurred, and then went home beating their breasts. All the friends of Jesus had been standing at a distance, with the women who accompanied him from Galilee, watching all this.

Now there was a man of the name of Joseph, who was a member of the Council, and who bore a good and upright character. (This man had not assented to the decision and action of the Council.) He belonged to Ramah, a town in Judea, and lived in expectation of the kingdom of God. He now went to see Pilate, and asked for the body of Jesus; and, when he had taken it down, he wrapped it in a linen sheet, and laid him in a tomb cut out of stone, in which no one had yet been buried. It was the Preparation day, and just before the Sabbath began. The women who had accompanied Jesus from Galilee followed, and saw the tomb and how the body of Jesus was laid, and then went home, and prepared spices and perfumes.

The Risen Life

24 DURING THE SABBATH THEY RESTED, as directed by the command-
 2 ment. But very early on the first day of the week they went to the
 3 tomb, taking with them the spices that they had prepared. They
 4 found that the stone had been rolled away from the tomb; and, on
 5 going into it, they could not find the body. While they were at a
 6 loss to account for this, all at once two men stood beside them, in
 7 dazzling clothing. But, when in their fear the women bowed their
 8 faces to the ground, the men said to them: "Why are you looking
 9 among the dead for him who is living? Remember how he spoke
 10 to you before he left Galilee — How he said that the Son of Man
 11 must be betrayed into the hands of wicked men, and be cruci-
 fied, and rise again on the third day." Then they remembered the
 words of Jesus, and, on returning from the tomb, they told all this
 to the Eleven and to all the rest. There were Mary of Magdala,
 and Joanna, and Mary, the mother of James. The other women,
 too, spoke about this to the apostles. What they said seemed to
 the apostles mere nonsense, and they did not believe them.

13 It happened that very day that two of the disciples were going
 to a village called Emmaus, which was about seven miles from
 14 Jerusalem, talking together, as they went, about all that had just
 15 taken place. While they were talking about these things and dis-
 cussing them, Jesus himself came up and went on their way with
 16 them; but their eyes were blinded so that they could not recog-
 17 nize him. "What is this that you are saying to each other as you
 walk along?" Jesus asked. They stopped, with sad looks on their
 18 faces, and then one of them, whose name was Cleopas, said to Je-
 sus: "Are you staying by yourself at Jerusalem, that you have not
 heard of the things that have happened there within the last few
 days?"
 19 "What things do you mean?" asked Jesus. "Why, about Jesus of
 Nazareth," they answered, "who, in the eyes of God and all the
 20 people, was a prophet, whose power was felt in both his words
 and actions; and how the chief priests and our leading men gave
 him up to be sentenced to death, and afterwards crucified him.
 21 But we were hoping that he was the Destined Deliverer of Israel;
 yes, and besides all this, it is now three days since these things

occurred. And what is more, some of the women among us have 22
greatly astonished us. They went to the tomb at daybreak And,
not finding the body of Jesus there, came and told us that they 23
had seen a vision of angels who told them that he was alive. So 24
some of our number went to the tomb and found everything just
as the women had said; but they did not see Jesus."

Then Jesus said to them: "Foolish men, slow to accept all that 25
the prophets have said! Was not the Christ bound to undergo this 26
suffering before entering into his glory?" Then, beginning with 27
Moses and all the prophets, he explained to them all through the
scriptures the passages that referred to himself. When they got 28
near the village to which they were walking, Jesus appeared to
be going further; but they pressed him not to do so. "Stay with 29
us," they said, "for it is getting towards evening, and the sun in al-
ready low." So Jesus went in to stay with them. After he had taken 30
his place at the table with them, he took the bread and said the
blessing, and broke it, and gave it to them. Then their eyes were 31
opened and they recognized him; but he disappeared from their
sight. "How our hearts glowed," the disciples said to each other, 32
"while he was talking to us on the road, and when he explained
the scriptures to us!"

Then they immediately got up and returned to Jerusalem, 33
where they found the Eleven and their companions all together,
who told them that the Master had really risen, and had 34
appeared to Simon. So they also related what had happened 35
during their walk, and how they had recognized Jesus at the
breaking of the bread. While they were still talking about these 36
things, Jesus himself stood among them. In their terror and 37
alarm they thought they saw a spirit, but Jesus said to them: 38
"Why are you so startled? And why do doubts arise in your
minds? Look at my hands and my feet, and you will know that it 39
is I. Feel me, and look at me, for a spirit has not flesh and bones,
as you see that I have." While they were still unable to believe it 41
all, overcome with joy, and were wondering if it were true, Jesus
said to them: "Have you anything here to eat?" They handed 42
him a piece of broiled fish, and he took it and ate it before their 43
eyes. "This is what I told you," he said, "when I was still with 44
you — that everything that had been written about me in the
law of Moses, the prophets, and the Psalms, must be fulfilled."

45 Then he enabled them to understand the meaning of the
46 scriptures, saying to them: "Scripture says that the Christ
47 should suffer, and that he should rise again from the dead on the
48 third day, and that repentance for forgiveness of sins should be
49 proclaimed on his authority to all the nations — beginning at
Jerusalem. You yourselves are to be witnesses to all this. And
now I am myself about to send you that which my Father has
promised. But you must remain in the city until you have been
invested with power from above."

50 After this, Jesus led them out as far as Bethany, and there raised
51 his hands and blessed them. As he was in the act of blessing them,
52 he left them. They returned to Jerusalem full of joy; and they were
53 constantly in the Temple Courts, blessing God.

THE
GOOD NEWS ACCORDING TO
JOHN

Introduction

IN THE BEGINNING THE WORD WAS; and the Word was with God; and the Word was God.	1
He was in the beginning with God; through him all things came into being, and nothing came into being apart from him.	2 3
That which came into being in him was life; and the life was the light of humanity; and the light shines in the darkness, and the darkness never overpowered it.	4 5
There appeared a man sent from God, whose name was John;	6
he came as a witness — to bear witness to the light so that through him everyone might believe.	7
He was not the light, but he came to bear witness to the light.	8
That was the true light which enlightens everyone coming into the world.	9
He was in the world; and through him the world came into being — yet the world did not know him.	10
He came to his own — yet his own did not receive him.	11
But to all who did receive him he gave power to become children of God — to those who believe in his name.	12

- 13 For not to natural conception, nor to human instincts, nor
to human will did they owe the new life,
but to God.
- 14 And the Word became human, and lived among us,
(We saw his glory — the glory of the Only Son sent
from the Father),
full of love and truth.
- 15 (John bears witness to him; he cried aloud — for it was he
who spoke —
“He who is coming’ after me is now before me,
for he was ever first”);
- 16 out of his fullness we have all received some gift,
gift after gift of love;
- 17 for the law was given through Moses,
love and truth came through Jesus Christ.
- 18 No one has ever yet seen God;
God the Only Son, who is ever with the Father —
He has revealed him.

The Preparation

- 19 WHEN THE RELIGIOUS AUTHORITIES IN JERUSALEM SENT SOME Priests
and Levites to ask John — “Who are you?”, he told them clearly
and simply: “I am not the Christ.”
- 21 “What then?” they asked. “Are you Elijah?”
“No,” he said, “I am not.”
“Are you ‘the prophet’?” He answered, “No.”
- 22 “Who then are you?” they continued; “tell us so that we have
an answer to give to those who have sent us. What do you say
about yourself?”
- 23 “I,” he answered, “am —
‘The voice of one crying aloud in the wilderness — “make
a straight road for the Lord”’,
as the prophet Isaiah said.”
- 24 These men had been sent from the Pharisees; and their next
question was: “Why then do you baptize, if you are not the Christ
or Elijah or ‘the prophet’?” John’s answer was — “I baptize with
27 water, but among you stands one whom you do not know; he is

coming after me, yet I am not worthy even to unfasten his sandal.” This happened at Bethany, across the Jordan, where John was baptizing. 28

The next day John saw Jesus coming towards him, and exclaimed: “Here is the Lamb of God, who takes away the sin of the world! I was taking about him when I said ‘After me there is coming a man who ranks ahead of me, because before I was born he already was.’ I did not know who he was, but I have come baptizing with water to make him known to Israel.” John also said: 29 30 31 32

“I saw the Spirit come down from heaven like a dove and rest on him. I myself did not know him, but he who sent me to baptize with water, he said to me ‘He on whom you see the Spirit descending, and remaining on him — he it is who baptizes with the Holy Spirit.’ This I have seen myself, and I have declared my belief that he is the Son of God.” 33 34

The next day, when John was standing with two of his disciples, he looked at Jesus as he passed and exclaimed: “There is the Lamb of God!” The two disciples heard him say this, and followed Jesus. But Jesus turned around, and saw them following. “What are you looking for?” he asked. “Rabbi,” they answered (or, as we should say, ‘teacher’), “where are you staying?” “Come, and you will see,” he replied. So they went, and saw where he was staying, and spent that day with him. 35 36 37 38 39

It was then about four in the afternoon. One of the two, who heard what John said and followed Jesus, was Andrew, Simon Peter’s brother. He first found his own brother Simon, and said to him: “We have found the Messiah!” (a word which means ‘Christ,’ or ‘Consecrated’.) Then he brought him to Jesus. Looking straight at him, Jesus said: “You are Simon, the son of John; you will be called Cephas” (which means ‘Peter,’ or ‘Rock’). The following day Jesus decided to leave for Galilee. He found Philip, and said to him: “Follow me.” Philip was from Bethsaida, the same town as Andrew and Peter. He found Nathanael and said to him: “We have found him of whom Moses wrote in the law, and of whom the prophets also wrote — Jesus of Nazareth, Joseph’s son!” 40 41 42 43 44 45

- 46 “Can anything good come out of Nazareth?” asked Nathanael.
 47 “Come and see,” replied Philip. When Jesus saw Nathanael coming towards him, he said: “Here is a true Israelite, in whom there is no deceit!”
 48 “How do you know me?” asked Nathanael. “Even before Philip called you,” replied Jesus, “when you were under the fig tree, I saw you.”
 49 “Rabbi,” Nathanael exclaimed, “you are the Son of God, you are king of Israel!”
 50 “Do you believe in me,” asked Jesus, “because I told you that I saw you under the fig tree? You will see greater things than those!
 51 In truth I tell you,” he added, “you will all see heaven open, and ‘the angels of God ascending and descending’ on the Son of Man.”

The Work in Judaea, Galilee and Samaria

- 2 TWO DAYS AFTER THIS THERE WAS A WEDDING AT CANA IN Galilee, and
 2 Jesus’ mother was there. Jesus himself, too, with his disciples,
 3 was invited to the wedding. And, when the wine ran short, his mother said to him: “They have no wine left.”
 4 “What do you want with me?” answered Jesus. “My time has not
 5 come yet.” His mother said to the servants: “Do whatever he tells
 6 you.” There were standing there six stone water-jars, in accordance with the Jewish rule of ‘purification,’ each holding twenty or thirty gallons.
 7 Jesus said to the servants: “Fill the water-jars with water.” And,
 8 when they had filled them to the brim, he added: “Now take some out, and carry it to the Master of the feast.” The servants did so.
 9 And, when the Master of the feast had tasted the water which had now become wine, not knowing where it had come from —
 10 although the servants who had taken out the water knew — He called the groom and said to him: “Everyone puts good wine on the table first, and inferior wine afterwards, when his guests have drunk freely; but you have kept back the good wine till now!”
 11 This, the first sign of his mission, Jesus gave at Cana in Galilee, and by it revealed his glory; and his disciples believed in him.

After this, Jesus went down to Capernaum — he, his mother, 12
his brothers, and his disciples; but they stayed there only a few
days.

Then, as the Jewish Passover was near, Jesus went up to 13
Jerusalem. In the Temple Courts he found people who were 14
selling bullocks, sheep, and pigeons, and the money changers at
their counters. So he made a whip of cords, and drove them all 15
out of the Temple Courts, and the sheep and bullocks as well; he
scattered the money of the money changers, and overturned
their tables, and said to the pigeon-dealers: "Take these things 16
away. Do not turn my Father's house into a market house." His 17
disciples remembered that scripture said — 'Passion for your
house will consume me.'

Then some of the religious authorities asked Jesus: "What sign 18
are you going to show us, since you act in this way?"

"Destroy this temple," was his answer, "and I will raise it in 19
three days."

"This Temple," the authorities replied, "has been forty-six 20
years in building, and are you going to 'raise it in three days'?"
But Jesus was speaking of his body as a temple. Afterwards, 21
when he had risen from the dead, his disciples remembered that 22
he had said this; and they believed the passage of scripture, and
the words which Jesus had spoken.

While Jesus was in Jerusalem, during the Passover Festival, 23
many came to trust in him, when they saw the signs of his mission
that he was giving. But Jesus did not put himself in their power 24
because he knew what was in their hearts. He did not need any- 25
one to tell him about people because he could read what was in
them..

Now there was a Pharisee named Nicodemus, who was a leading 3
man among his people. This man came to Jesus by night, and said 2
to him: "Rabbi, we know that you are a teacher come from God;
for no one could give such signs as you are giving, unless God
were with him."

- 3 "In truth I tell you," exclaimed Jesus, "unless a person is reborn, they cannot see the kingdom of God."
- 4 "How can a person," asked Nicodemus, "be born when they are old? Can they be born a second time?"
- 5 "In truth I tell you," answered Jesus, "unless a person owes their birth to water and Spirit, they cannot enter the kingdom of God. All that owes its birth to human nature is human, and all that owes its birth to the Spirit is spiritual. Do not wonder at my telling you that you all need to be reborn. The wind blows wherever it wants, and you can hear the sound it makes, but you do not know where it comes from, or where it goes; it is the same with everyone who owes his birth to the Spirit."
- 9 "How can that be?" asked Nicodemus. "What! You a teacher of Israel," exclaimed Jesus, "and yet do not understand this! In truth I tell you that we speak of what we know, and state what we have seen; and yet you do not accept our statements. If, when I tell you earthly things, you do not believe me, how will you believe me when I tell you of heavenly things? No one has ascended to heaven, except him who descended from heaven — the Son of Man himself. And, as Moses lifted up the snake¹ in the desert, so must the Son of Man be lifted up; so that everyone who believes in him may have eternal life."
- 16 For God so loved the world, that he gave his only Son, so that everyone who believes in him may not be lost, but have eternal life. For God did not send his Son into the world to condemn the world, but so that the world might be saved through him. The person who believes in him escapes condemnation, while the person who does not believe in him is already condemned, because they have not believed in the only Son of God. The ground of their condemnation is this, that though the light has come into the world, people preferred the darkness to the light, because their actions were wicked. For the person who lives an evil life hates the light, and will not come to it, fearing that their actions will be exposed; but the person who lives by the truth comes into the light, so it can be clearly seen that God is in all they do.

¹ A bronze snake on a pole, see Num 21:9

After this, Jesus went with his disciples into the country parts 22
of Judea; and there he stayed with them, and baptized. John, also, 23
was baptizing at Aenon near Salim, because there were many
streams there; and people were constantly coming and being bap-
tized. (For John had not yet been imprisoned). Now a discussion 24
arose between some of John's disciples and a fellow Jew on the 25
subject of 'purification;' and the disciples came to John and said: 26
"Rabbi, the man who was with you on the other side of the Jordan,
and to whom you have yourself borne testimony — he, also, is
baptizing, and everybody is going to him." John's answer was — 27
"A person can gain nothing but what is given them from heaven.
You are yourselves witnesses that I said 'I am not the Christ,' but 28
'I have been sent before him as a messenger.' It is the groom who 29
has the bride; but the groom's friend, who stands by and listens
to him, is filled with joy when he hears the groom's voice. This
joy I have felt to the full. He must become greater, and I less." 30
He who comes from above is above all others; but a child of earth 31
is earthly, and his teaching is earthly, too. He who comes from
heaven is above all others. He states what he has seen and what he 32
heard, and yet no one accepts his statement. They who did accept 33
his statement confirm the fact that God is true. For he whom God 34
sent as his messenger gives us God's own teaching, for God does
not limit the gift of the Spirit. The Father loves his Son, and has 35
put everything in his hands. The person who believes in the Son 36
has eternal life, while a person who rejects the Son will not even
see that life, but remains under 'God's displeasure.'

Now, when the Master heard that the Pharisees had been 4
told that he was making and baptizing more disciples than John 4
(Though it was not Jesus himself, but his disciples, who 2
baptized), he left Judea, and set out again for Galilee. He had to 3
pass through Samaria, and, on his way, he came to a Samaritan 3
town called Shechem, near the plot of land that Jacob gave to his 3
son Joseph. Jacob's Spring was there, and Jesus, being tired after 6
his journey, sat down beside the spring, just as he was. It was 6
then about midday. A woman of Samaria came to draw water; 7
and Jesus said to her — "Give me some to drink," For his 8
disciples had gone into the town to buy food. "How is it," 9
replied the Samaritan woman, "that you who are a Jew ask for

- 10 water from a Samaritan woman like me?" (For Jews do not
associate with Samaritans). "If you knew of the gift of God,"
replied Jesus, "and who it is that is saying to you 'Give me some
water,' you would have asked him, and he would have given you
'living water'."
- 11 "You have no bucket, Sir, and the well is deep," she said; "where
12 did you get that 'living water?' Surely you are not greater than
our ancestor Jacob who gave us the well, and used to drink from
it himself, and his sons, and his cattle!"
- 13 "All who drink of this water," replied Jesus, "will be thirsty
14 again; but whoever once drinks of the water that I will give him
will never thirst any more; but the water that I will give him will
become a spring welling up within him — a source of eternal life."
- 15 "Give me this water, Sir," said the woman, "so that I may not
be thirsty, nor have to come all the way here to draw water."
- 16 "Go and call your husband," said Jesus, "and then come back."
- 17 "I have no husband," answered the woman. "You are right in
18 saying 'I have no husband,'" replied Jesus, "For you have had
five husbands, and the man with whom you are now living is not
your husband; in saying that, you have spoken the truth."
- 19 "I see, Sir, that you are a prophet!" exclaimed the woman. "It
20 was on this mountain that our ancestors worshiped; and yet you
Jews say that the proper place for worship is in Jerusalem."
- 21 "Believe me," replied Jesus, "a time is coming when it will be
neither on this mountain nor in Jerusalem that you will worship
22 the Father. You Samaritans do not know what you worship; we
know what we worship, for salvation comes from the Jews. But
23 a time is coming, indeed it is already here, when the true wor-
shipers will worship the Father spiritually and truly; for such are
24 the worshipers that the Father desires. God is Spirit; and those
who worship him must worship spiritually and truly."
- 25 "I know," answered the woman, "that the Messiah, who is
called the Christ, is coming; when once he has come, he will tell
us everything."
- 26 "I am he," Jesus said to her, "I who am speaking to you." At
27 this moment his disciples came up, and were surprised to find
him talking with a woman; but none of them asked 'What do you
28 want?' or 'Why are you talking with her?' So the woman, leaving
her pitcher, went back to the town, and said to the people: "Come
29 and see someone who has told me everything that I have done.

Can he be the Christ?" And the people left the town and went to see Jesus. 30

Meanwhile the disciples kept saying to him: "Take something to eat, Rabbi." 31

"I have food to eat," he answered, "of which you know nothing." 32

"Can anyone have brought him anything to eat?" the disciples said to one another. "My food," replied Jesus, "is to do the will of him who sent me, and to complete his work. Don't you say that it still wants four months to harvest? Why, look up, and see how white the fields are for harvest! Already the reaper is receiving wages and gathering in sheaves for eternal life, so that sower and reaper rejoice together. For here the proverb holds good — 'One sows, another reaps.' I have sent you to reap that on which you have spent no labor; others have labored, and you have reaped the results of their labor." 33 34 35 36 37 38

Many from that town came to believe in Jesus — Samaritans though they were — because the woman had said: 'He has told me everything that I have done.' And, when these Samaritans had come to Jesus, they begged him to stay with them, and he stayed there two days. But far more came to believe in him because of what he said himself, and they said to the woman: "It is no longer because of what you say that we believe in him, for we have heard him ourselves and know that he really is the Savior of the world." 39 40 41 42

After these two days Jesus went on to Galilee; for he himself declared that 'a prophet is not honored in his own country.' When he entered Galilee, the Galileans welcomed him, for they had seen all that he did at Jerusalem during the Festival, at which they also had been present. So Jesus came again to Cana in Galilee, where he had turned the water into wine. Now there was one of the king's officers whose son was lying ill at Capernaum. When this man heard that Jesus had returned from Judea to Galilee, he went to him, and begged him to come down and cure his son; for he was at the point of death. Jesus answered: "Unless you all see signs and wonders, you will not believe." 43 44 45 46 47 48

"Sir," said the officer, "come down before my child dies." And Jesus answered: "Go, your son is living." The man believed what 49 50

51 Jesus said to him, and went; and, while he was on his way down,
52 his servants met him, and told him that his child was living. So
he asked them at what time the boy began to get better. "It was
yesterday, about one o'clock," they said, "that the fever left him."
53 By this the father knew that it was at the very time when Jesus
had said to him 'Your son is living' ; and he himself, with all his
54 household, believed in Jesus. This was the second occasion on
which Jesus gave a sign of his mission on coming from Judea to
Galilee.

5 Sometime after this there was a Jewish Festival; and Jesus went
2 up to Jerusalem. There is in Jerusalem, near the sheep-gate, a bath
with five colonnades around it. It is called in Hebrew 'Bethesda.'
3 In these colonnades a large number of sick people were lying
5 — blind, lame, and crippled. One man who was there had been
6 crippled for thirty-eight years. Jesus saw the man lying there,
and, finding that he had been in this state a long time, said to
him: "Do you wish to be cured?"
7 "I have no one, Sir," the sick man answered, "to put me into the
bath when there is a troubling of the water, and, while I am get-
ting to it, some one else steps down before me."
8 "Stand up," said Jesus, "take up your mat, and walk." The man
9 was cured immediately, and took up his mat and began walk-
10 ing. Now it was the Sabbath. So the religious authorities said to
the man who had been cured: "This is the Sabbath; you must not
carry your mat."
11 "The man who cured me," he answered, "said to me 'Take up
your mat and walk.'"
12 "Who was it," they asked, "that said to you 'Take up your mat
13 and walk?'" But the man who had been restored did not know
who it was; for Jesus had moved away, because there was a crowd
14 there. Afterwards Jesus found the man in the Temple Courts, and
said to him: "You are cured now; do not sin again, or something
worse may happen to you."
15 The man went away, and told the authorities that it was Jesus
16 who had cured him. And that was why they began to persecute
17 Jesus — because he did things of this kind on the Sabbath. But Je-
sus replied: "My Father works to this very hour, and I work also."
18 This made the authorities all the more eager to kill him, because

not only was he doing away with the Sabbath, but he actually called God his own Father — putting himself on an equality with God. So Jesus made this further reply: “In truth I tell you, the Son can do nothing of himself; he does only what he sees the Father doing; whatever the Father does, the Son does also. For the Father loves his Son, and shows him everything that he is doing; and he will show him still greater things — so that you will be filled with wonder. For, just as the Father raises the dead and gives them life, so also the Son gives life to whom he pleases. The Father himself does not judge any one, but has ‘entrusted the work of judging entirely to his Son,’ So that everyone may honor the Son, just as they honor the Father. The person who does not honor the Son fails to honor the Father who sent him. In truth I tell you that the person who listens to my message and believes him who sent me, has eternal life, and does not come under condemnation, but has already passed out of death into life. In truth I tell you that a time is coming, indeed it is already here, when the dead will listen to the voice of the Son of God, and when those who listen will live. For, just as the Father has inherent life within him, so also he has granted to the Son to have inherent life within him; and, because he is Son of Man, he has also given him authority to act as judge. Do not wonder at this; for the time is coming when all who are in their graves will hear his voice, and will come out — those who have done good rising to life, and those who have lived evil lives rising for condemnation. I can do nothing of myself; I judge as I am taught; and the judgment that I give is just, because my aim is not to do my own will, but the will of him who sent me.

If I bear testimony to myself, my testimony is not trustworthy; it is another who bears testimony to me, and I know that the testimony which he bears to me is trustworthy. You have yourselves sent to John, and he as testified to the truth. But the testimony which I receive is not from people; I am saying this for your salvation. He was the ‘Lamp that was burning’ and shining, and you were ready to rejoice, for a time, in his light. But the testimony which I have is of greater weight than John’s; for the work that the Father has given me to carry out — the work that I am doing — is in itself proof that the Father has sent me as his messenger. The Father who has sent me has himself borne testimony to me. You have neither listened to his voice, not seen his form; and you have not taken his message home to your hearts, because you do

39 not believe him whom he sent as his messenger. You search the
scriptures, because you think that you find in them immortal life;
40 and, though it is those scriptures that bear testimony to me, you
refuse to come to me to have life.

41 I do not receive honor from people, but I know this of you,
42 that you have not the love of God in your hearts. I have come in
my Father's name, and you do not receive me; if another comes
43 in his own name, you will receive him. How can you believe in
me, when you receive honor from one another and do not desire
44 the honor which comes from the only God? Do not think that I
will accuse you to the Father; your accuser is Moses, on whom
45 you have been resting your hopes. For, had you believed Moses,
you would have believed me, for it was of me that Moses wrote;
46 but, if you do not believe his writings, how will you believe my
teaching?"

6 After this, Jesus crossed the Sea of Galilee — otherwise called
2 the Lake of Tiberias. A great crowd of people, however, followed
him, because they saw the signs of his mission in his work among
3 those who were sick. Jesus went up the hill, and sat down there
4 with his disciples. It was near the time of the Jewish Festival of
5 the Passover. Looking up, and noticing that a great crowd was
coming towards him, Jesus said to Philip: "Where are we to buy
6 bread for these people to eat?" He said this to test him, for he
7 himself knew what he meant to do. "Even if we spent a years'
wages on bread," answered Philip, "it would not be enough for
each of them to have a little."

8 "There is a boy here," said Andrew, another of his disciples, Si-
9 mon Peter's brother, "Who has five barley loaves and two fishes;
but what is that for so many?"

10 "Make the people sit down," said Jesus. It was a grassy spot;
so the people, who numbered about five thousand, sat down, and
11 then Jesus took the loaves, and, after saying the thanksgiving,
distributed them to those who were sitting down; and the same
12 with the fish, giving the people as much as they wanted. When
they were satisfied, Jesus said to his disciples: "Collect the broken
13 pieces that are left, so that nothing may be wasted." The disciples
did so, and filled twelve baskets with the pieces of the five barley
loaves, which were left after all had eaten.

When the people saw the signs which Jesus gave, they said: 14
"This is certainly 'the prophet who was to come' into the world." 14
But Jesus, having discovered that they were intending to come 15
and carry him off to make him king, went again up the hill, quite 15
alone.

When evening fell, his disciples went down to the Sea, and, 16
getting into a boat, began to cross to Capernaum. By this time 17
darkness had set in, and Jesus had not yet come back to them;
the Sea, too, was getting rough, for a strong wind was blowing. 18
When they had rowed three or four miles, they caught sight of 19
him walking on the water and approaching the boat, and they
were frightened. But Jesus said to them: "It is I; do not be afraid!" 20
And after this they were glad to take him into the boat; and the 21
boat at once arrived off the shore, for which they had been mak-
ing.

The people who remained on the further side of the Sea had 22
seen that only one boat had been there, and that Jesus had not
gone into it with his disciples, but that they had left without him. 23
Some boats, however, had come from Tiberias, from near the 23
spot where they had eaten the bread after the Master had said the
thanksgiving. So, on the next day, when the people saw that Je- 24
sus was not there, or his disciples either, they themselves got into
the boats, and went to Capernaum to look for him. And, when 25
they found him on the other side of the Sea, they said: "When did
you get here, Rabbi?"

"In truth I tell you," answered Jesus, "it is not because of the signs 26
which you saw that you are looking for me, but because you had
the bread to eat and were satisfied. Work, not for the food that 27
perishes, but for the food that lasts for eternal life, which the Son
of Man will give you; for on him the Father — God himself — has
set the seal of his approval."

"How," they asked, "are we to do the work that God wants us 28
to do?"

"The work that God wants you to do," answered Jesus, "is to 29
believe in him whom God sent as his messenger."

"What sign, then," they asked, "are you giving, which we may 30
see, and so believe you? What is the work that you are doing? Our

- 31 ancestors had the manna to eat in the desert; as scripture says —
‘He gave them bread from heaven to eat.’”
- 32 “In truth I tell you,” replied Jesus, “Moses did not give you the
bread from heaven, but my Father does give you the true bread
33 from heaven; for the bread that God gives is that which comes
down from heaven, and gives life to the world.”
- 34 “Master,” they exclaimed, “give us that bread always!”
- 35 “I am the life-giving bread,” Jesus said to them; “whoever
comes to me will never be hungry, and whoever believes in me
36 will never thirst again. But, as I have said already, you have seen
me, and yet you do not believe in me. All those whom the
37 Father gives me will come to me; and no one who comes to me
will I ever turn away. For I have come down from heaven, to do,
38 not my own will, but the will of him who sent me; and his will
is this — that I should not lose one of all those whom he has
39 given me, but should raise them up at the Last day. For it is the
will of my Father that everyone who sees the Son, and believes
40 in him, should have immortal life; and I myself will raise him up
at the Last day.”
- 41 The people began murmuring against Jesus for saying — ‘I
42 am the bread which came down from heaven.’ “Is not this Jesus,
Joseph’s son,” they asked, “whose father and mother we know?
How is it that he now says that he has come down from heaven?”
- 43 “Do not murmur among yourselves,” said Jesus in reply. “No
44 one can come to me, unless the Father who sent me draws him
45 to me; and I will raise him up at the Last day. It is said in the
prophets — ‘And they will all be taught by God.’ Everyone who
46 is taught by the Father and learns from him comes to me. Not
that anyone has seen the Father, except him who is from God —
47 he has seen the Father. In truth I tell you, the person who believes
48 in me has eternal life. I am the life-giving bread. Your ancestors
49 ate the manna in the desert, and yet died. The bread that comes
down from heaven is such that whoever eats of it will never die. I
51 am the living bread that has come down from heaven. If anyone
eats of this bread, they will live for ever; and the bread that I
will give is my flesh, which I will give for the life of the world.”
- 52 They began disputing with one another: “How is it possible for
this man to give us his flesh to eat?”
- 53 “In truth I tell you,” answered Jesus, “unless you eat the flesh
of the Son of Man, and drink his blood, you have not life within

you. Everyone who takes my flesh for their food, and drinks my blood, has eternal life; and I will raise them up at the Last day. For my flesh is true food, and my blood true drink. Everyone who takes my flesh for their food, and drinks my blood, remains united to me, and I to them. As the living Father sent me as his messenger, and as I live because the Father lives, so the person who takes me for their food will live because I live. That is the bread which has come down from heaven — not such as your ancestors ate, and yet died; the person who takes this bread for their food will live for ever.”

All this Jesus said in a synagogue, when he was teaching in Capernaum. On hearing it, many of his disciples said: “This is harsh doctrine! Who can bear to listen to it?” But Jesus, aware that his disciples were murmuring about it, said to them: “Is this a hindrance to you? What, then, if you should see the Son of Man ascending where he was before? It is the Spirit that gives life; human strength achieves nothing. In the teaching that I have been giving you there is Spirit and there is life. Yet there are some of you who do not believe in me.” For Jesus knew from the first who they were that did not believe in him, and who it was that would betray him; and he added: “This is why I told you that no one can come to me, unless enabled by the Father.” After this many of his disciples drew back, and did not go about with him any longer. So Jesus said to the Twelve: “Do you also wish to leave me?” But Simon Peter answered: “Master, to whom would we go? Eternal life is in your teaching; and we have learned to believe and to know that you are the Holy One of God.”

“Did not I myself choose you to be the Twelve?” replied Jesus; “and yet, even of you, one is playing the ‘devil’s’ part.” He meant Judas, the son of Simon Iscariot, who was about to betray him, though he was one of the Twelve.

After this, Jesus went about in Galilee, for he would not do so in Judea, because the religious authorities (in Jerusalem) were eager to put him to death. When the Jewish Festival of Tabernacles was near, his brothers said to him: “Leave this part of the country, and go into Judea, so that your disciples, as well as we, may see the work that you are doing. For no one does a thing privately, if they are seeking to be widely known. Since you do these things,

5 you should show yourself publicly to the world." For even his brothers did not believe in him.

6 "My time," answered Jesus, "is not come yet, but your time is
7 always here. The world cannot hate you, but it does hate me,
8 because I testify that its ways are evil. Go yourselves up to the
Festival; I am not going to this Festival yet, because my time has
9 not yet come." After telling them this, he stayed on in Galilee.

10 But, when his brothers had gone up to the Festival, Jesus also
11 went up — not publicly, but privately. The authorities were look-
12 ing for him at the Festival and asking 'Where is he?'; and there
were many whispers about him among the people, some saying
'He is a good man;' others: 'No! He is leading the people astray.'
13 No one, however, spoke freely about him, because they were
afraid of the authorities.

14 About the middle of the Festival week, Jesus went up into the
15 Temple Courts, and began teaching. The authorities were aston-
ished. "How has this man got his learning," they asked, "when
16 he has never studied?" So, in reply, Jesus said: "My teaching is
17 not my own; it is his who sent me. If anyone has the will to do
God's will, they will find out whether my teaching is from God,
18 or whether I speak on my own authority. The person who speaks
on their own authority seeks honor for themselves; but the person
who seeks the honor of him that sent him is sincere, and there is
19 nothing false in him. Was not it Moses who gave you the law? Yet
not one of you obeys it! Why are you seeking to put me to death?"
20 "You must be possessed by a demon!" the people exclaimed.
"Who is seeking to put you to death?"

21 "There was one thing I did," replied Jesus, "at which you are
22 all still wondering. "Is he going to kill himself," they exclaimed,
23 "that he says — 'You cannot go where I am going?'" When a man
receives circumcision on a Sabbath to prevent the law of Moses
from being broken, how can you be angry with me for making a
man sound and well on a Sabbath? Do not judge by appearances;
24 judge justly." At this some of the people of Jerusalem exclaimed:
25 "Is not this the man who they are seeking to put to death? Yet
26 here he is, speaking out boldly, and they say nothing to him! Is
it possible that our leading men have really discovered that he
27 is the Christ? Yet we know where this man is from; but, when

the Christ comes, no one will be able to tell where he is from.”
Therefore, Jesus, as he was teaching in the Temple Courts, raised 28
his voice and said: “Yes; you know me and you know where I am
from. Yet I have not come on my own authority, but he who sent
me may be trusted; and him you do not know. I do know him, for 29
it is from him that I have come, and he sent me as his messenger.”
So they sought to arrest him; but no one touched him, for his time 30
was not come yet. Many of the people, however, believed in him. 31
“When the Christ comes,” they said, “will he give more signs of
his mission than this man has given?” The Pharisees heard the 32
people whispering about him in this way, and so the chief priests
and the Pharisees sent officers to arrest him; on which Jesus said: 33
“I will be with you but a little longer, and then I am going to him
who sent me. You will look for me, and you will not find me; and 34
you will not be able to come where I will be.”

“Where is this man going,” the people asked one another, “that 35
we would not find him? Will he go to our countrymen abroad, and
teach foreigners? What does he mean by saying ‘You will look for 36
me, and you will not find me; and you will not be able to come
where I will be?’”

On the last and greatest day of the Festival, Jesus, who was 37
standing by, exclaimed: “If anyone thirsts, let him come to me,
and drink. I tell you what I have myself seen in the presence of my 38
Father; and you, in the same way, do what you have learned from
your father.” (By this he meant the Spirit, which those who had 39
believed in him were to receive; for the Spirit had not yet come,
because Jesus had not yet been exalted.) But, as it is, you are seek- 40
ing to put me to death — a man who has told you the truth as he
heard it from God. Abraham did not act in that way. You are do- 41
ing what your own father does.”

“We are not bastards,” they said, “we have one Father — God 42
himself.” Is not it said in scripture that it is of the race of David,
and from Bethlehem, the village to which David belonged, that 43
the Christ is to come?” So there was a sharp division among
the people because of Jesus. Some of them wanted to arrest him, 44
and yet no one touched him. When the officers returned to the 45
chief priests and Pharisees, they were asked: “Why have you not
brought him?”

46 "No one ever spoke as he speaks!" they answered. "What!
 48 Have you been led astray too?" the Pharisees replied. "Have any
 of our leading men believed in him, or any of the Pharisees? As
 49 for these people who do not know the Law — they are cursed!
 50 But one of their number, Nicodemus, who before this had been
 51 to see Jesus, said to them: "Does our law pass judgment on a
 person without first giving them a hearing, and finding out what
 they have been doing?"
 52 "Are you also from Galilee?" they retorted. "Search, and you
 will find that no prophet is to arise in Galilee!"

53 And everyone went home except Jesus, who went to the
 8 Mount of Olives². But he went again into the Temple Courts
 early in the morning, and all the people came to him; and he sat
 3 down and taught them. Presently, however, the Teachers of the
 Law and the Pharisees brought a woman who had been caught
 4 in adultery, and placed her in the middle of the Court, and said
 to Jesus:

"Teacher, this woman was found in the act of adultery. Now
 Moses, in the Law, commanded us to stone such women to
 death; what do you say?"

6 They said this to test him, in order to have a charge to bring
 against him. But Jesus stooped down, and wrote on the ground
 7 with his finger. However, as they continued asking him, he raised
 himself, and said:

"Let the person among you who has never done wrong throw
 the first stone at her."

8 And again he stooped down, and wrote on the ground. When
 9 they heard that, they went out one by one, beginning with the
 eldest; and Jesus was left alone with the woman in the middle of
 10 the Court. Raising himself, Jesus said to her:

"Woman, where are they? Did no one condemn you?"

11 "No one, Sir," she answered.

"Neither do I condemn you," said Jesus "go, and do not sin
 again."

² This passage is inserted in some manuscripts from an ancient source, and found
 either after John 7:53 or after Luke 21.38 or elsewhere.

Jesus again addressed the people. "I am the light of the world," 12
he said. "The person who follows me will not walk in darkness,
but will have the light of life."

"You are bearing testimony to yourself!" exclaimed the Pharisees, 13
"your testimony is not trustworthy."

"Even if I bear testimony to myself," answered Jesus, "my tes- 14
timony is trustworthy; for I know where I came from, and where
I am going; but you do not know where I come from, nor where
I am going. You judge by appearances; I judge no one. Yet, even 15
if I were to judge, my judgment would be trustworthy; because 16
I am not alone, but the Father who sent me is with me. Why, 17
in your own law it is said that the testimony of two persons is
trustworthy. I, who bear testimony to myself, am one, and the 18
Father who sent me also bears testimony to me." "Where is your 19
father, then?" they asked. "You know neither me nor my Father,"
replied Jesus. "If you had known me, you would have also known
my Father." These statements Jesus made in the Treasury, while 20
teaching in the Temple Courts. Yet no one arrested him, for his
time had not then come.

Jesus again spoke to the people. "I am going away," he said, 21
"and you will look for me, but you will die in your sin; you cannot
come where I am going."

"Is he going to kill himself," the people exclaimed, "that he says 22
— 'You cannot go where I am going'?" "You," added Jesus, "are 23
from below, I am from above; you are of this present world, I am
not; and so I told you that you would die in your sins, for, unless 24
you believe that I am what I am, you will die in your sins."

"Who are you?" they asked. "Why ask exactly what I have been 25
telling you?" said Jesus. "I have still much that concerns you to 26
speak of and to pass judgment on; yet he who sent me may be
trusted, and I speak to the world only of the things which I have
heard from him." They did not understand that he meant the Fa- 27
ther. So Jesus added: "When you have lifted up the Son of Man, 28
then you will understand that I am what I am, and that I do noth-
ing of myself, but that I say just what the Father has taught me.
Moreover, he who sent me is with me; he has not left me alone; 29
for I always do what pleases him." While he was speaking in this 30

31 way, many came to believe in him. So Jesus went on to say to those who had believed him: "If you remain constant to my message, you are truly my disciples; and you find out the truth, and the truth will set you free."

32
33 "We are descendants of Abraham," was their answer, "and have never yet been in slavery to anyone. What do you mean by saying 'you will be set free'?" "In truth I tell you," replied Jesus, 34 "everyone who sins is a slave to sin. And a slave does not remain in the home always; but a son remains always. If, then, the 35 Son sets you free, you will be free indeed! I know that you are 36 descendants of Abraham; yet you are seeking to put me to death, 37 because my message finds no place in your hearts. I tell you what I have myself seen in the presence of my Father; and you, in the 38 same way, do what you have learned from your father."

39 "Our father is Abraham," was their answer. "If you are Abraham's children," replied Jesus, "do what Abraham did. But, as it is, you are seeking to put me to death — a man who has told you the truth as he heard it from God. Abraham did not act in that 40 way. You are doing what your own father does."

41 "We are not bastards," they said, "we have one Father — God himself."

42 "If God were your Father," Jesus replied, "you would have loved me, for I came out from God, and now am here; and I have 43 not come of myself, but he sent me as his messenger. How is it that you do not understand what I say? It is because you cannot 44 bear to listen to my message. As for you, you are children of your Father the devil, and you are determined to do what your father loves to do. He was a murderer from the first, and did not stand 45 by the truth, because there is no truth in him. Whenever he lies, he does what is natural to him; because he is a liar, and the father 46 of lying. But, as for me, it is because I speak the truth to you that you do not believe me. Which of you can convict me of sin? Why 47 then don't you believe me, if I am speaking truth? The person who comes from God listens to God's teaching; the reason why you do not listen is because you do not come from God."

48 "Are not we right, after all," replied the people, "in saying that you are a Samaritan, and are possessed by a demon?"

49 "I am not possessed by a demon," Jesus answered, "but I am honoring my Father; and yet you dishonor me. Not that I am seeking honor for myself; there is one who is seeking my honor, and 50

he decides. In truth I tell you, if anyone lays my message to heart, 51
he will never really die."

"Now we are sure that you are possessed by a demon," the 52
people replied. "Abraham died, and so did the prophets; and yet
you say 'If anyone lays my message to heart, they will never know
death.' Are you greater than our ancestor Abraham, who died? 53
And the prophets died too. Whom do you make yourself out to
be?"

"If I do honor to myself," answered Jesus, "such honor counts 54
for nothing. It is my Father who does me honor — and you say
that he is your God; and yet you have not learned to know him; 55
but I know him; and, if I were to say that I do not know him, I
should be a liar like you; but I do know him, and I lay his message
to heart. Your ancestor Abraham rejoiced that he would see my 56
day; and he did see it, and was glad."

"You are not fifty years old yet," the people exclaimed, "and 57
have you seen Abraham?"

"In truth I tell you," replied Jesus, "before Abraham existed I 58
was." At this they took up stones to throw at him; but Jesus hid
himself, and left the Temple Courts. 59

As Jesus passed by, he saw a man who had been blind from 9
his birth. "Rabbi," asked his disciples, "who was it that sinned, 2
this man or his parents, that he was born blind?"

"Neither the man nor the parents," replied Jesus; "but he was 3
born blind so that the work of God should be made plain in him.
We must do the work of him who sent me, while it is day; night 4
is coming, when no one can work. As long as I am in the world, I 5
am the light of the world." Saying this, Jesus spat on the ground, 6
made clay with the saliva, and put it on the man's eyes. "Go," he 7
said, "and wash your eyes in the Bath of Siloam" (a word which
means 'messenger'). So the man went and washed his eyes, and 8
returned able to see. His neighbors, and those who had formerly
known him by sight as a beggar, exclaimed: "Is not this the man
who used to sit and beg?"

"Yes," some said, "it is"; while others said: "No, but he is like 9
him." The man himself said: "I am he."

"How did you get your sight, then?" they asked. "The man 10
whom they call Jesus," he answered, "made clay, and anointed 11

my eyes, and said to me 'Go to Siloam and wash your eyes.' So I went and washed my eyes, and gained my sight."

12 "Where is he?" they asked. I do not know," he answered. They
13 took the man, who had been blind, to the Pharisees. Now it was
14 a Sabbath when Jesus made the clay and gave him his sight. So
the Pharisees also questioned the man as to how he had gained
his sight. "He put clay on my eyes," he answered, "and I washed
them, and I can see."

16 "The man cannot be from God," said some of the Pharisees,
"for he does not keep the Sabbath."

"How is it possible," retorted others, "for a bad man to give
17 signs like this?" So there was a difference of opinion among them,
and they again questioned the man; "What do you yourself say
18 about him, for it is to you that he has given sight?" The religious
authorities, however, refused to believe that he had been blind
and had gained his sight, until they had called his parents and
19 questioned them. "Is this your son," they asked, "who you say
was born blind? If so, how is it that he can see now?"

20 "We know that this is our son," answered the parents, "and
that he was born blind; but how it is that he can see now we do
not know; nor do we know who it was that gave him his sight.
Ask him — he is old enough — he will tell you about himself."

22 His parents spoke in this way because they were afraid of the
authorities; for the authorities had already agreed that, if anyone
should acknowledge Jesus as the Christ, he should be expelled
23 from their synagogues. This was why his parents said 'He is old
enough; ask him.' So the authorities again called the man who
24 had been blind, and said to him: "Give God the praise; we know
that this is a bad man."

25 "I know nothing about his being a bad man," he replied; "one
thing I do know, that although I was blind, now I can see."

26 "What did he do to you?" they asked. "How did he give you
your sight?"

27 "I told you just now," he answered, "and you did not listen.
Why do you want to hear it again? Surely you also do not want to
become his disciples?"

28 "You are his disciple," they retorted scornfully; "but we are
disciples of Moses. We know that God spoke to Moses; but, as
29 for this man, we do not know where he comes from."

“Well,” the man replied, “this is very strange; you do not know 30
where he comes from, and yet he has given me my sight! We 31
know that God never listens to bad people, but, when a person is
god-fearing and does God’s will, God listens to them. Since the 32
world began, such a thing was never heard of as anyone’s giving
sight to a person born blind. If this man had not been from God, 33
he could not have done anything at all.”

“You,” they retorted, “were born totally depraved; and are you 34
trying to teach us?” So they expelled him. Jesus heard of their 35
having put him out; and, when he had found the man, he asked:
“Do you believe in the Son of Man?”

“Tell me who he is, Sir,” he replied, “so that I may believe in 36
him.”

“Not only have you seen him,” said Jesus; “but it is he who is 37
now speaking to you.”

“Then, Sir, I do believe,” said the man, bowing to the ground 38
before him; and Jesus added: “It was to put people to the test that 39
I came into this world, in order that those that cannot see should
see, and that those that can see should become blind.” Hearing 40
this, some of the Pharisees who were with him said: “Then are we
blind too?”

“If you had been blind,” replied Jesus, “you would have had no 41
sin to answer for; but, as it is, you say ‘We can see,’ and so your 42
sin remains. In truth I tell you, whoever does not go into the 10
sheepfold through the door, but climbs up at some other place,
that person is a thief and a robber; but the person who goes in 2
through the door is shepherd to the sheep. For him the watchman 3
opens the door; and the sheep listen to his voice; and he calls his
own sheep by name, and leads them out. When he has brought 4
them all out, he walks in front of them, and his sheep follow him,
because they know his voice. They will not follow a stranger, but 5
will run away from him; because they do not know a stranger’s
voice.” This was the allegory that Jesus told them, but they did 6
not understand of what he was speaking. So he continued: “In 7
truth I tell you, I am the door for the sheep. All who came before 8
me were thieves and robbers; but the sheep did not listen to them.
I am the door; he who goes in through me will be safe, and he 9
will go in and out and find pasture. The thief comes only to steal, 10
to kill, and to destroy; I have come so that they may have life,
and may have it in greater fullness. I am the good shepherd. The 11

12 good shepherd lays down his life for his sheep. The hired man
who is not a shepherd, and who does not own the sheep, when
he sees a wolf coming, leaves them and runs away; then the wolf
13 seizes them, and scatters the flock. He does this because he is
14 only a hired man and does not care about the sheep. I am the
good shepherd; and I know my sheep, and my sheep know me —
15 Just as the Father knows me and I know the Father — and I lay
16 down my life for the sheep. I have other sheep besides, which do
not belong to this fold; I must lead them also, and they will listen
to my voice; and they will become one flock under 'one shepherd.'
17 This is why the Father loves me, because I lay down my life —
18 to receive it again. No one took it from me, but I lay it down of
myself. I have authority to lay it down, and I have authority to
receive it again. This is the command which I received from my
Father."

19 In consequence of these words a difference of opinion again
20 arose among the people. Many of them said: "He is possessed
21 by a demon and is mad; why do you listen to him?" Others said:
"This is not the teaching of one who is possessed by a demon. Can
a demon give sight to the blind?"

22 Soon after this the Festival of the Rededication was held at
23 Jerusalem. It was winter; and Jesus was walking in the Temple
24 Courts, in the Colonnade of Solomon, when the people gathered
around him, and said: "How long are you going to keep us in
suspense? If you are the Christ, tell us so frankly."

25 "I have told you so," replied Jesus, "and you do not believe me.
The work that I am doing in my Father's name bears testimony to
26 me. But you do not believe me, because you are not of my flock.
27 My sheep listen to my voice; I know them, and they follow me;
28 and I give them eternal life, and they will not be lost; nor will any-
29 one snatch them out of my hands. What my Father has entrusted
to me is more than all else; and no one can snatch anything out of
30 the Father's hands. The Father and I are one."

31 Some of the people again brought stones to throw at him; and
32 seeing this, Jesus said: "I have done before your eyes many good
actions, inspired by the Father; for which of them would you stone
me?"

“It is not for any good action that we would stone you,” they 33
answered, “but for blasphemy; and because you, who are only a
man, make yourself out to be God.”

“Are there not,” replied Jesus, “these words in your law — ‘I 34
said “You are gods”’? If those to whom God’s word were ad- 35
dressed were said to be ‘gods’ — and scripture cannot be set aside
— Do you say of one whom the Father has consecrated and sent 36
as his messenger to the world ‘You are blaspheming,’ because I
said ‘I am God’s Son’? If I am not doing the work that my Father 37
is doing, do not believe me; if I am doing it, even though you do 38
not believe me, believe what that work shows; so that you may
understand, and understand more and more clearly, that the Fa-
ther is in union with me, and I with the Father.” The authorities 39
again sought to arrest him; but he escaped their hands.

Then Jesus again crossed the Jordan to the place where John 40
used to baptize at first, and stayed there some time, during which
many people came to see him. “John gave no sign of his mission,” 41
they said; “but everything that he said about this man was true.”
And many learned to believe in Jesus there. 42

Now a man named Lazarus, of Bethany, was lying ill; he 11
belonged to the same village as Mary and her sister Martha. This

Mary, whose brother Lazarus was ill, was the Mary who 2
anointed the Master with perfume, and wiped his feet with her
hair. The sisters, therefore, sent this message to Jesus — ‘Master, 3
your friend is ill’; and, when Jesus heard it, he said: “This illness 4
is not to end in death, but is to redound to the honor of God, in
order that the Son of God may be honored through it.” Jesus 5
loved Martha and her sister, and Lazarus. Yet, when he heard of
the illness of Lazarus, he still stayed two days in the place where 6
he was. Then, after that, he said to his disciples: “Let us go to 7
Judea again.”

“Rabbi,” they replied, “the authorities there were but just now 8
seeking to stone you; and are you going there again?”

“Are not there twelve hours in the day?” answered Jesus. “If 9
someone walks about in the daytime, they do not stumble, be-
cause they can see the light of the sun; but, if they walk about at 10

11 night, they stumble, because they have not the light." And, when he had said this, he added: "Our friend Lazarus has fallen asleep; but I am going so that I may wake him."

12 "If he has fallen asleep, Master, he will get well," said the dis-
13 ciples. But Jesus meant that he was dead; they, however, sup-
14 posed that he was speaking of natural sleep. Then he said to them
15 plainly: "Lazarus is dead; and I am glad for your sakes that I was
16 not there, so that you may learn to believe in me. But let us go to
17 him." At this, Thomas, who was called 'The Twin,' said to his fel-
18 low disciples: "Let us go too, so that we may die with him." When
19 Jesus reached the place, he found that Lazarus had been four
20 days in the tomb already. Bethany being only about two miles
21 from Jerusalem, a number of the people had come there to com-
22 fort Martha and Mary because of brother's death. When Martha
23 heard that Jesus was coming, she went to meet him; but Mary sat
24 quietly at home. "Master," Martha said to Jesus, "if you had been
25 here, my brother would not have died. Even now, I know that
26 God will grant you whatever you ask him."

23 "Your brother will rise to life," said Jesus. "I know that he will,"
24 replied Martha, "in the resurrection at the Last day."

25 "I am the resurrection and the life," said Jesus. "He who be-
26 lieves in me will live, though he die; and he who lives and be-
27 lieves in me will never die. Do you believe this?"

27 "Yes Master," she answered; "I have learned to believe that you
28 are the Christ, the Son of God, 'who was to come' into the world."
29 After saying this, Martha went and called her sister Mary, and
30 whispered: "The teacher is here, and is asking for you." As soon
31 as Mary heard that, she got up quickly, and went to meet him.
32 Jesus had not then come into the village, but was still at the place
33 where Martha had met him. So the people, who were in the house
34 with Mary, comforting her, when they saw her get up quickly and
35 go out, followed her, thinking that she was going to the tomb to
36 weep there. When Mary came where Jesus was and saw him,
she threw herself at his feet. "Master," she exclaimed, "if you had
been here, my brother would not have died!" When Jesus saw her
weeping, and the people who had come with her weeping also,
he groaned deeply, and was greatly distressed. "Where have you
buried him?" he asked. "Come and see, Master," they answered.
Jesus burst into tears. "How he must have loved him!" the people
exclaimed; but some of them said: "Could not this man, who gave

sight to the blind man, have also prevented Lazarus from dying?"
Again groaning inwardly, Jesus came to the tomb. It was a cave, 38
and a stone lay against the mouth of it. "Move the stone away," 39
said Jesus. "Master," said Martha, the sister of the dead man, "by
this time the smell must be offensive, for this is the fourth day
since his death."

"Did not I tell you," replied Jesus, "that, if you would believe in 40
me, you should see the glory of God?" So they moved the stone 41
away; and Jesus, with uplifted eyes, said:

"Father, I thank you that you have heard my prayer; I know 42
that you always hear me; but I say this for the sake of the
people standing near, so that they may believe that you has
sent me as your messenger."

Then, after saying this, Jesus called in a loud voice: "Lazarus! 43
Come out!" The dead man came out, wrapped hand and foot in 44
a winding-sheet; his face, too, had been wrapped in a cloth. "Set
him free," said Jesus, "and let him go."

In consequence of this, many of the people, who had come to 45
visit Mary and had seen what Jesus did, learned to believe in him.
Some of them, however, went to the Pharisees, and told them 46
what he had done. The chief priests and the Pharisees called a 47
meeting of the High Council, and said: "What are we to do, now
that this man is giving so many signs? If we let him alone as 48
we are doing, everyone will believe in him; and the Romans will
come and will take from us both our city and our Nationality."
One of them, however, Caiaphas, who was high priest that year, 49
said to them: "You are utterly mistaken. You do not consider that 50
it is better for you that one person should die for the people, rather
than the whole nation should be destroyed." Now he did not say 51
this of his own accord; but, as high priest that year, he prophesied
that Jesus was to die for the nation — And not for the nation only, 52
but also that he might unite in one body the children of God now
scattered far and wide. So from that day they plotted to put Jesus 53
to death.

In consequence of this, Jesus did not go about publicly among the 54
people any more, but left that neighborhood, and went into the

country bordering on the wilderness, to a town called Ephraim,
 55 where he stayed with his disciples. But the Jewish Festival of the
 Passover was near; and many people had gone up from the coun-
 try to Jerusalem, for their 'purification,' before the Festival began.
 56 So they looked for Jesus there, and said to one another, as they
 stood in the Temple Courts: "What do you think? Do you think he
 57 will come to the Festival?" The chief priests and the Pharisees had
 already issued orders that, if anyone learned where Jesus was, he
 should give information, so that they might arrest him.

The Last Days

12 SIX DAYS BEFORE THE PASSOVER JESUS CAME TO BETHANY, where
 2 Lazarus, whom he had raised from the dead, was living. There
 a supper was given in honor at which Martha waited, while
 3 Lazarus was one of those present at the table. So Mary took a
 pound of choice spikenard perfume of great value, and anointed
 the feet of Jesus with it, and then wiped them with her hair. The
 4 whole house was filled with the scent of the perfume. One of
 the disciples, Judas Iscariot, who was about to betray Jesus,
 5 asked: "Why was not this perfume sold for a year's wages, and
 6 the money given to poor people?" He said this, not because he
 cared for the poor, but because he was a thief, and, being in
 7 charge of the purse, used to take what was put in it. "Leave her
 alone," said Jesus, "so that she may keep it until the day when
 8 my body is being prepared for burial. The poor you always have
 with you, but you will not always have me."
 9 Now great numbers of people found out that Jesus was at
 Bethany; and they came there, not only because of him, but also
 10 to see Lazarus, whom he had raised from the dead. The chief
 priests, however, plotted to put Lazarus, as well as Jesus, to
 11 death, because it was owing to him that many of the people had
 12 left them, and were becoming believers in Jesus. On the
 following day great numbers of people who had come to the
 Festival, hearing that Jesus was on his way to Jerusalem, took
 13 palm branches, and went out to meet him, shouting as they
 went: "'God save Him! Blessed is He who Comes in the name of
 14 the Lord' — The king of Israel!" Having found a young ass,
 Jesus seated himself on it, in accordance with the passage of

scripture — ‘Fear not, people of Zion; Your king is coming to you, Sitting on the foal of an ass.’ His disciples did not understand all this at first; but, when Jesus had been exalted, then they remembered that these things had been said of him in scripture, and that they had done these things for him. Meanwhile the people who were with him, when he called Lazarus out of the tomb and raised him from the dead, were telling what they had seen. This, indeed, was why the crowd met him — because people had heard that he had given this sign of his mission. So the Pharisees said to one another: “You see that you are gaining nothing! Why, all the world has run after him!”

Among those who were going up to worship at the Festival were some Greeks, who went to Philip of Bethsaida in Galilee, and said: “Sir, we wish to see Jesus.” Philip went and told Andrew, and then together they went and told Jesus. This was his reply — “The time has come for the Son of Man to be exalted. In truth I tell you, unless a grain of wheat falls into the ground and dies, it remains solitary; but, if it dies, it becomes fruitful. A person who loves their life loses it; while someone who hates their life in the present world will preserve it for eternal life. If someone is ready to serve me, let them follow me; and where I am, there my servant will be also. If a person is ready to serve me, my Father will honor them. Now I am distressed at heart and what can I say? Father, bring me safe through this hour — yet it was for this reason that I came to this hour — Father, honor your own name.” At this there came a voice from heaven, which said: “I have already honored it, and I will honor it again.” The crowd of bystanders, who heard the sound, said that it was thundering. Others said: “An angel has been speaking to him.” “It was not for my sake that the voice came,” said Jesus, “but for yours. Now this world is on its trial. Now the Spirit that is ruling this world will be driven out; and I, when I am lifted up from the earth, will draw all people to myself.” By these words he indicated what death he was destined to die. “We,” replied the people, “have learned from the law that the ‘Christ is to remain for ever’; how is it, then, that you say that the Son of Man must be ‘lifted up’ Who is this ‘Son of Man’?”

35 “Only a little while longer,” answered Jesus, “will you have the
light among you. Travel on while you have the light, so that dark-
36 ness may not overtake you; he who travels in the darkness does
not know where he is going. While you still have the light, be-
lieve in the light, so that you may be ‘children of light.’” After he
37 had said this, Jesus went away, and hid himself from them. But,
though Jesus had given so many signs of his mission before their
38 eyes, they still did not believe in him, in fulfillment of the words
of the prophet Isaiah, where he says — ‘Lord, who has believed
39 our teaching? And to whom has the might of the Lord been re-
vealed?’ The reason why they were unable to believe is given by
40 Isaiah elsewhere, in these words — ‘He has blinded their eyes,
and blunted their mind, so that they should not see with their
eyes, and perceive with their mind, and turn — And I should heal
41 them.’ Isaiah said this, because he saw Christ’s glory; and it was
of him that he spoke. Yet for all this, even among the leading
42 men there were many who came to believe in Jesus; but, because
of the Pharisees, they did not acknowledge it, because they were
43 afraid that they should be expelled from their Synagogues; for
they valued honor from people more than honor from God. But
44 Jesus had proclaimed: “He who believes in me believes, not in me,
but in him who sent me; and he who sees me sees him who sent
45 me. I have come as a light into the world, so that no one who be-
46 lieves in me should remain in the darkness. When anyone hears
my teaching and pays no heed to it, I am not his judge; for I came
47 not to judge the world, but to save the world. He who rejects me,
and disregards my teaching, has a judge already — the message
48 which I have delivered will itself be his judge at the Last day. For
I have not delivered it on my own authority; but the Father, who
49 sent me, has himself given me his command as to what I should
say, and what message I should deliver. And I know that eternal
50 life lies in keeping his command. Therefore, whatever I say, I say
only what the Father has taught me.”

13 Before the Passover Festival began, Jesus knew that the time
had come for him to leave the world and go to the Father. He had
loved those who were his own in the world, and he loved them to
2 the last. The devil had already put the thought of betraying Jesus
3 into the mind of Judas Iscariot, the son of Simon; and at supper,

Jesus — although knowing that the Father had put everything into his hands, and that he had come from God, and was to return to God — Rose from his place, and, taking off his upper garments, 4
tied a towel around his waist. He then poured some water into 5
the basin, and began to wash the disciples' feet, and to wipe them with the towel which was tied around him. When he came to 6
Simon Peter, Peter said: "You, Master! Are you going to wash my feet?"

"You do not understand now what I am doing," replied Jesus, 7
"but you will learn by and by."

"You will never wash my feet!" exclaimed Peter. "Unless I wash 8
you," answered Jesus, "you have nothing in common with me."

"Then, Master, not my feet only," exclaimed Simon Peter, "but 9
also my hands and my head."

"He who has bathed," replied Jesus, "has no need to wash, 10
unless it be his feet, but is altogether clean; and you," he said to the disciples, "are clean, yet not all of you." For he knew who 11
was going to betray him, and that was why he said 'You are not all clean.' When he had washed their feet, and had put on his 12
upper garments and taken his place, he spoke to them again. "Do you understand what I have been doing to you?" he asked. "You 13
yourselves call me 'the teacher' and 'the Master', and you are right, for I am both. If I, then — 'the Master' and 'the teacher' 14
— have washed your feet, you also ought to wash one another's feet; for I have given you an example, so that you may do just 15
as I have done to you. In truth I tell you, a servant is not greater 16
than their master, neither is a messenger greater than the one who sends them. Now that you know these things, happy are you if 17
you do them. I am not speaking about all of you. I know whom I have chosen; but this is in fulfillment of the words of scripture — 18
'He that is eating my bread has lifted his heel against me.' For the 19
future I will tell you of things before they take place, so that, when they take place, you may believe that I am what I am. In truth I tell 20
you, the one who receives anyone that I send receives me; and the person who receives me receives him who sent me." After saying 21
this, Jesus was much troubled, and said solemnly: "In truth I tell you that it is one of you who will betray me." The disciples looked 22
at one another, wondering whom he meant. Next to Jesus, in the place on his right hand, was one of his disciples, whom he loved. 23
So Simon Peter made signs to that disciple, and whispered: "Tell 24

25 me who it is that he means." Being in this position, that disciple
leant back on Jesus' shoulder, and asked him: "Who is it, Master?"
26 "It is the one," answered Jesus, "to whom I will give a piece of
bread after dipping it in the dish." And, when Jesus had dipped
the bread, he took it and gave it to Judas, the son of Simon Is-
27 cariot; and it was then, after he had received it, that Satan took
possession of him. So Jesus said to him: "Do at once what you
28 are going to do." But no one at the table understood why he said
29 this to Judas. Some thought that, as Judas kept the purse, Jesus
meant that he was to buy some things needed for the Festival, or
30 to give something to the poor. After taking the piece of bread,
Judas went out immediately; and it was night.

31 When Judas had gone out, Jesus said: "Now the Son of Man has
32 been exalted, and God has been exalted through him; and God
will exalt him with himself — yes, he will exalt him forthwith.
33 My children, I am to be with you but a little while longer. You
will look for me; and what I said to the people — 'You cannot
34 come where I am going' — I now say to you. I give you a new
commandment — love one another; love one another as I have
35 loved you. It is by this that everyone will recognize you as my
disciples — by your loving one another."

36 "Where are you going, Master?" asked Peter. "I am going where
you cannot now follow me," answered Jesus, "but you will follow
me later."

37 "Why cannot I follow you now, Master?" asked Peter. "I will
lay down my life for you."

38 "Will you lay down your life for me?" replied Jesus. "In truth I
tell you, the cock will not crow until you have disowned me three
14 times. Do not let your hearts be troubled. Believe in God; believe
2 also in me. In my Father's Home there are many dwellings. If it
had not been so, I should have told you, for I am going to prepare
3 a place for you. And, since I go and prepare a place for you, I will
return and take you to be with me, so that you may be where I
4 am; and you know the way to the place where I am going."

5 "We do not know where you are going, Master," said Thomas;
6 "so how can we know the way?" Jesus answered: "I am the way,
and the truth, and the life; no one ever comes to the Father except
7 through me. If you had recognized me, you would have known

my Father also; for the future you will recognize him, indeed you have already seen him."

"Master, show us the Father," said Philip, "and we will be satisfied." 8

"Have I been all this time among you," said Jesus, "and yet you, Philip, have not recognized me? The person who has seen me has seen the Father, how can you say, then, 'Show us the Father'? Don't you believe that I am in union with the Father, and the Father with me? In giving you my teaching I am not speaking on my own authority; but the Father himself, always in union with me, does his own work. Believe me," he said to them all, "when I say that I am in union with the Father and the Father with me, or else believe me because of the work itself. In truth I tell you, the person who believes in me will themselves do the work that I am doing; and they will do greater work still, because I am going to the Father. Whatever you ask, in my name, I will do, so that the Father may be honored in the Son. If you ask anything, in my name, I will do it. If you love me, you will lay my commands to heart, and I will ask the Father, and he will give you another helper, to be with you always — the Spirit of truth. The world cannot receive this Spirit, because it does not see him or recognize him, but you recognize him, because he is always with you, and is within you. I will not leave you bereaved; I will come to you. In a little while the world will see me no more, but you will still see me; because I am living, you will be living also. At that time you will recognize that I am in union with the Father, and you with me, and I with you. It is they who have my commands and lay them to heart that loves me; and the person who loves me will be loved by my Father, and I will love them, and will reveal myself to them." 9 10 11 12 13 14 15 16 17 18 19 20 21

"What has happened, Master," said Judas (not Judas Iscariot), "that you are going to reveal yourself to us, and not to the world?" 22

"Whoever loves me," Jesus answered, "will lay my message to heart; and my Father will love him, and we will come to him and make our home with him. The person who does not love me will not lay my message to heart; and the message to which you are listening is not my own, but comes from the Father who sent me. I have told you all this while still with you, but the helper — the Holy Spirit whom the Father will send in my name — will teach you all things, and will recall to your minds all that I have said to 23 24 25 26

27 you. Peace be with you! My own peace I give you. I do not give
28 to you as the world gives. Do not let your hearts be troubled, or
29 dismayed. You heard me say that I was going away and would
30 return to you. Had you loved me, you would have been glad that
31 I was going to the Father, because the Father is greater than I.
29 And this I have told you now before it happens, so that, when
30 it does happen, you may still believe in me. I will not talk with
31 you much more, for the Spirit that is ruling the world is coming.
He has nothing in common with me; but he is coming so that the
world may see that I love the Father, and that I do as the Father
commanded me. Come, let us be going.

15 I am the True Vine, and my Father is the Vine-grower. Any un-
2 fruitful branch in me he takes away, and he cleanses every fruitful
3 branch, so that it may bear more fruit. You are already clean be-
4 cause of the message that I have given you. Remain united to me,
5 and I will remain united to you. As a branch cannot bear fruit by
6 itself, unless it remains united to the vine; no more can you, un-
7 less you remain united to me. I am the Vine, you are the branches.
8 If you remains united to me, while I remain united to you — you
9 bear fruit plentifully; for you can do nothing apart from me. If
10 anyone does not remain united to me, they are thrown away, as a
11 branch would be, and withers up. Such branches are collected and
12 thrown into the fire, and are burnt. If you remain united to me,
13 and my teaching remains in your hearts, ask whatever you wish,
14 and it will be yours. It is by your bearing fruit plentifully, and so
15 showing yourselves my disciples, that my Father is honored. As
16 the Father has loved me, so have I loved you; remain in my love.
If you lay my commands to heart, you will remain in my love;
just as I have laid the Father's commands to heart and remain in
his love. I have told you all this so that my own joy may be yours,
and that your joy may be complete. This is my command — love
one another, as I have loved you. No one can give greater proof of
love than by laying down their life for their friends. And you are
my friends, if you do what I command you. I no longer call you
'servants,' because a servant does not know what their master is
doing; but I have given you the name of 'friends,' because I made
known to you everything that I learned from my Father. It was
not you who chose me, but I who chose you, and I appointed you

to go and bear fruit — fruit that should remain, so that the Father might grant you whatever you ask in my name. I am giving you these commands that you may love one another. If the world hates you, you know that it has first hated me. If you belonged to the world, the world would love its own. Because you do not belong to the world, but I have chosen you out of the world — that is why the world hates you. Remember what I said to you — ‘A servant is not greater than their master.’ If they have persecuted me, they will also persecute you; if they have laid my message to heart, they will lay yours to heart also. But they will do all this to you, because you believe in my name, for they do not know him who sent me. If I had not come and spoken to them, they would have had no sin to answer for; but as it is, they have no excuse for their sin. The person who hates me hates my Father also. If I had not done among them such work as no one else ever did, they would have had no sin to answer for; but, as it is, they have both seen and hated both me and my Father. And so is fulfilled what is said in their law — ‘They hated me without cause.’ But, when the helper comes, whom I will send to you from the Father — the Spirit of truth, who comes from the Father — will bear testimony to me; yes, and you also are to bear testimony, because you have been with me from the first. I have spoken to you in this way so that you may not falter. They will expel you from their Synagogues; indeed the time is coming when anyone who kills you will think that they are making an offering to God. They will do this, because they have not learned to know the Father, or even me. But I have spoken to you of these things so that, when the time for them comes, you may remember that I told you about them myself. I did not tell you all this at first, because I was with you. But now I am to return to him who sent me; and yet not one of you asks me — ‘Where are you going?’ Although your hearts are full of sorrow at all that I have been saying to you. Yet I am only telling you the truth; it is for your good that I should go away. For otherwise the helper will never come to you, but, if I leave you, I will send him to you. And he, when he comes, will bring conviction to the world as to sin, and as to righteousness, and as to judgment; as to sin, for people do not believe in me; as to righteousness, for I am going to the Father, and you will see me no longer; as to judgment, for the Spirit that is ruling this world has been condemned. I have still much to say to you, but you

13 cannot bear it now. Yet when he — The Spirit of truth — comes,
he will guide you into all truth; for he will not speak on his own
14 authority, but he will speak of all that he hears; and he will tell
15 you of the things that are to come. He will honor me; because he
will take of what is mine, and will tell it to you. Everything that
the Father has is mine; that is why I said that he takes of what is
16 mine, and will tell it to you. In a little while you will no longer
17 see me; and then in a little while you will see me indeed." At
some of his disciples said to one another: "What does he mean by
saying to us 'In a little while you will not see me, and then in a
little while you will see me indeed'; and by saying 'Because I am
18 going to the Father'? What does he mean by 'In a little while'?"
19 they said; "we do not know what he is speaking about." Jesus
saw that they were wanting to ask him a question, and said: "Are
you trying to find out from one another what I meant by saying
'In a little while you will not see me; and then in a little while you
20 will see me indeed'? In truth I tell you that you will weep and
mourn, but the world will rejoice; you will suffer pain, but your
21 pain will turn to joy. A woman in labor is in pain because her
time has come; but no sooner is the child born, than she forgets
her trouble in her joy that a child has been born into the world.
22 You, in the same way, are sorry now; but I will see you again, and
23 your hearts will rejoice, and no one will rob you of your joy. And
at that time you will not ask me anything; in truth I tell you, if you
ask the Father for anything, he will grant it to you in my name. So
24 far you have not asked for anything, in my name; ask, and you
25 will receive, so that your joy may be complete. I have spoken to
you of all this in figures; a time is coming, however, when I will
not speak any longer to you in figures, but will tell you about the
26 Father plainly. You will ask, at that time, in my name; and I do
27 not say that I will intercede with the Father for you; for the Father
himself loves you, because you have loved me, and have believed
28 that I came from the Father. I came out from the Father, and have
come into the world; and now I am to leave the world, and go to
the Father."
29 "At last," exclaimed the disciples, "you are using plain words and
30 not speaking in figures at all. Now we are sure that you know
everything, and need not wait for anyone to question you. This
makes us believe that you did come from God."

“Do you believe that already?” Jesus answered. “Listen! A 31
time is coming — indeed it has already come — when you are 32
to be scattered, each going his own way, and to leave me alone;
and yet I am not alone, because the Father is with me. I have spo- 33
ken to you in this way, so that in me you may find peace. In the
world you will find trouble; yet, take courage! I have conquered
the world.”

After saying this, Jesus raised his eyes heaven-wards, and said: 17

“Father, the hour has come; honor your Son, so that your
Son may honor you; even as you gave him power over all 2
humanity, so that he should give eternal life to all those
whom you has given him. And the eternal life is this — to 3
know you the one true God, and Jesus Christ whom you
has sent as your messenger. I have honored you on earth 4
by completing the work which you has given me to do;
and now do you honor me, Father, at your own side, with 5
the honor which I had at your side before the world be-
gan. I have revealed you to those whom you gave me from 6
the world; they were your own, and you gave them to me;
and they have laid your message to heart. They recognize 7
now that everything that you gave me was from you; for
I have given them the teaching which you gave me, and 8
they received it, and clearly understood that I came from
you, and they believed that you has sent me as your mes-
senger. I intercede for them; I am not interceding for the 9
world, but for those whom you has given me, for they are
your own — All that is mine is yours, and all that is yours 10
is mine — and I am honored in them. Now I am to be in 11
this world no longer, but they are still to be in the world,
and I am to come to you. Holy Father, keep them by that
revelation of your name which you has given me, so that
they may be one, as we are. Whilst I was with them, I kept 12
them by that revelation, and I have guarded them; and not
one of them has been lost, except that lost soul — in ful-
fillment of scripture. But now I am to come to you; and I 13
am speaking like this, while still in the world, so that they
may have my own joy, in all its fullness, in their hearts. I 14
have given them your message; and the world hated them,

15 because they do not belong to the world, even as I do not
16 belong to the world. I do not ask you to take them out of
17 the world, but to keep them from evil. They do not belong
18 to the world, even as I do not belong to the world. Con-
19 secrate them by the truth; your message is truth. Just as
20 you has sent me as your messenger to the world, so I send
21 them as my messengers to the world. And it is for their
22 sakes that I am consecrating myself, so that they also may
23 be truly consecrated. But it is not only for them that I am
24 interceding, but also for those who believe in me through
25 their message, that they all may be one — that as you, Fa-
26 ther, are in union with us — and so the world may believe
that you have sent me as your messenger. I have given
them the honor which you has given me, so that they may
be one as we are one — I in union with them and you
with me — that so they may be perfected in their union,
and so that the world may know that you have sent me
as your messenger, and that you have loved them as you
have loved me. Father, my desire for all those whom you
have given me is that they may be with me where I am, so
that they may see the honor which you have given me; for
thou did love me before the beginning of the world. Right-
eous Father, though the world did not know you, I knew
you; and these people knew that you have sent me as your
messenger. I have made you known to them, and will do
so still; that the love that you have had for me may be in
their hearts, and that I may be in them also.”

18 When Jesus had said this, he went out with his disciples and
crossed the brook Kedron to a place where there was a garden,
2 into which he and his disciples went. The place was well known
to Judas, the betrayer, for Jesus and his disciples had often met
3 there. So Judas, who had obtained the soldiers of the Roman
garrison, and some police officers from the chief priests and the
Pharisees, came there with lanterns, torches, and weapons. Jesus,
4 aware of all that was coming upon him, went to meet them, and
said to them: “For whom are you looking?”
5 “Jesus of Nazareth,” was their answer. “I am he,” said Jesus. (Ju-
6 das, the betrayer, was also standing with them.) When Jesus said

'I am he,' they drew back and fell to the ground. So he again 7
asked for whom they were looking, and they answered: "Jesus of
Nazareth."

"I have already told you that I am he," replied Jesus, "so, if it 8
is for me that you are looking, let these people go." This was in 9
fulfillment of his words — 'Of those whom you have given me I
have not lost one.' At this, Simon Peter, who had a sword with 10
him, drew it, and struck the high priest's servant, and cut off his
right ear. The servant's name was Malchus. But Jesus said to Pe- 11
ter: "Sheathe your sword. Should I not drink the cup which the
Father has given me?"

So the soldiers of the garrison, with their commanding officer 12
and the Jewish police, arrested Jesus and bound him, and took 13
him first of all to Annas. Annas was the father-in-law of Caiaphas,
who was high priest that year. It was Caiaphas who had counseled 14
the religious authorities, that it was best that one person
should die for the people. Meanwhile Simon Peter followed Je- 15
sus, and so did another disciple. That disciple, being well-known
to the high priest, went with Jesus into the high priest's courtyard,
while Peter stood outside by the door. Presently the other disciple 16
— the one well-known to the high priest — went out and spoke
to the portress, and brought Peter in. So the maidservant said to 17
Peter: "Aren't you also one of this man's disciples?"

"No, I am not," he said. The servants and police officers were 18
standing around a charcoal fire (which they had made because
it was cold), and were warming themselves. Peter, too, was with
them, standing and warming himself. The high priest questioned 19
Jesus about his disciples and about his teaching. "For my part," 20
answered Jesus, "I have spoken to all the world openly. I always
taught in some synagogue, or in the Temple Courts, places where
everyone assembles, and I never spoke of anything in secret. Why
question me? Question those who have listened to me as to what 21
I have spoken about to them. They must know what I said." When
Jesus said this, one of the police officers, who was standing near, 22
gave him a blow with his hand. "Do you answer the high priest
like that?" he exclaimed. "If I said anything wrong, give evidence 23
about it," replied Jesus; "but if not, why do you strike me?" Annas
sent him bound to Caiaphas the high priest. Meanwhile Simon 24

25

Peter was standing there, warming himself; so they said to him: "Aren't you also one of his disciples?" Peter denied it. "No, I am not," he said. One of the high priest's servants, a relation of the man whose ear Peter had cut off, exclaimed: "Did not I myself see you with him in the garden?" Peter again denied it; and at that moment a cock crowed.

28 From Caiaphas they took Jesus to the Government house. It was early in the morning. But they did not enter the Government house themselves, otherwise they might become 'defiled,' and so be unable to eat the Passover. Therefore Pilate came outside to speak to them. "What charge do you bring against this man?" he asked. "If he had not been a criminal, we should not have given him up to you," they answered. "Take him yourselves," said Pilate, "and try him by your own law."

"We have no power to put anyone to death," the authorities replied — In fulfillment of what Jesus had said when indicating the death that he was destined to die. After that, Pilate went into the Government house again, and calling Jesus up, asked him: "Are you the king of the Jews?"

34 "Do you ask me that yourself?" replied Jesus, "or did others say it to you about me?"

35 "Do you take me for a Jew?" was Pilate's answer. "It is your own nation and the chief priests who have given you up to me. What have you done?"

36 "My kingly power," replied Jesus, "is not due to this world. If it had been so, my servants would be doing their utmost to prevent my being given up to the authorities; but my kingly power is not from the world."

37 "So you are a king after all!" exclaimed Pilate. "Yes, it is true I am a king," answered Jesus. "I was born for this, I have come into the world for this — to bear testimony to the truth. Everyone who is on the side of truth listens to my voice."

38 "What is truth?" exclaimed Pilate. After saying this, he went out to the crowd again, and said: "For my part, I find nothing with which he can be charged. It is, however, the custom for me to grant you the release of one man at the Passover Festival. Do you wish for the release of the king of the Jews?"

“No, not this man,” they shouted again, “but Barabbas!” This 40
Barabbas was a robber.

After that, Pilate had Jesus scourged. The soldiers made a 19
crown with some thorns and put it on his head and threw a purple 2
robe around him. They kept coming up to him and saying: “Long 3
live the king of the Jews!” and they gave him blow after blow with
their hands. Pilate again came outside, and said to the people: 4
“Look! I am bringing him out to you, so that you may know that
I find nothing with which he can be charged.” Then Jesus came 5
outside, wearing the crown of thorns and the purple robe; and
Pilate said to them: “Here is the man!” When the chief priests and 6
the police officers saw him, they shouted: “Crucify him! Crucify
him!”

“Take him yourselves and crucify him,” said Pilate. “For my part,
I find nothing with which he can be charged.”

“But we,” replied the crowd, “have a law, under which he de- 7
serves death for making himself out to be the Son of God.” When
Pilate heard what they said, he became still more alarmed; and, 8
going into the Government house again, he said to Jesus: “Where 9
do you come from?” But Jesus made no reply. So Pilate said to 10
him: “Do you refuse to speak to me? Don’t you know that I have
power to release you, and have power to crucify you?”

“You would have no power over me at all,” answered Jesus, 11
“if it had not been given you from above; and, therefore, the man
who betrayed me to you is guilty of the greater sin.” This made 12
Pilate anxious to release him; but the crowd shouted: “If you re-
lease that man, you are no friend of the Emperor! Anyone who
makes himself out to be a king is setting himself against the Em-
peror!” On hearing what they said, Pilate brought Jesus out, and 13
took his seat on the Bench at a place called ‘The Stone Pavement’
— in Hebrew ‘Gabbatha.’ It was the Passover Preparation day, 14
and about noon. Then he said to the crowd: “Here is your king!”
At that the people shouted: “Kill him! Kill him! Crucify him!” 15

“What! Should I crucify your king?” exclaimed Pilate. “We
have no king but the Emperor,” replied the chief priests; so 16
Pilate gave Jesus up to them to be crucified.

So they took Jesus;

17 and he went out, carrying his cross himself, to the place which
18 is named from a scull, or, in Hebrew, Golgotha. There they crucified him, and two others with him — one on each side, and Jesus between them. Pilate also had these words written and put up over the cross — ‘JESUS OF NAZARETH, THE KING OF THE
19 JEWS.’ These words were read by many people, because the place where Jesus was crucified was near the city; and they were written in Hebrew, Latin and Greek. The chief priests said to Pilate:
20 “Do not write ‘The king of the Jews’, but write what the man said — ‘I am the king of the Jews.’” But Pilate answered: “What I have written, I have written.”

23 When the soldiers had crucified Jesus, they took his clothes and divided them into four shares — a share for each soldier — and they took the coat also. The coat had no seam, being woven in one
24 piece from top to bottom. So they said to one another: “Do not let us tear it, but let us cast lots for it, to see who will have it.” This was in fulfillment of the words of scripture —

‘They shared my clothes among them,
And over my clothing they cast lots.’

25 That was what the soldiers did. Meanwhile near the cross of Jesus were standing his mother and his mother’s sister, as well as Mary the wife of Clopas and Mary of Magdala. When Jesus saw his mother, and the disciple whom he loved, standing near, he said
26 to his mother: “There is your son.” Then he said to that disciple: “There is your mother.” And from that very hour the disciple took her to live in his house.

28 Afterwards, knowing that everything was now finished, Jesus said, in fulfillment of the words of scripture: “I am thirsty.” There
29 was a bowl standing there full of common wine; so they put a sponge soaked in the wine on the end of a hyssop-stalk, and held it up to his mouth. When Jesus had received the wine, he exclaimed: “All is finished!” Then, bowing his head, he resigned his
30 spirit to God. It was the Preparation day, and so, to prevent the bodies from remaining on the crosses during the Sabbath (for that Sabbath was a great day), the Jews asked Pilate to have the legs
31 broken and the bodies removed. Accordingly the soldiers came
32

and broke the legs of the first man, and then those of the other who had been crucified with Jesus; but, on coming to him, when they saw that he was already dead, they did not break his legs. One of the soldiers, however, pierced his side with a spear, and blood and water immediately flowed from it. This is the statement of one who actually saw it — and his statement may be relied on, and he knows that he is speaking the truth — and it is given in order that you also may be convinced. For all this happened in fulfillment of the words of scripture — ‘Not one of its bones will be broken.’ And there is another passage which says — ‘They will look on him whom they pierced.’ After this, Joseph of Ramah, a disciple of Jesus — but a secret one, owing to his fear of the religious authorities — begged Pilate’s permission to remove the body of Jesus. Pilate gave him leave; so Joseph went and removed the body. Nicodemus, too — the man who had formerly visited Jesus by night — came with a roll of myrrh and aloes, weighing nearly a hundred pounds. They took the body of Jesus, and wound it in linen with the spices, according to the Jewish mode of burial. At the place where Jesus had been crucified there was a garden, and in the garden a newly made tomb in which no one had ever been laid. And so, because of its being the Preparation day, and as the tomb was close at hand, they laid Jesus there.

The Risen Life

ON THE FIRST DAY OF THE WEEK, early in the morning, while it was still dark, Mary of Magdala went to the tomb, and saw that the stone had been removed. So she came running to Simon Peter, and to that other disciple who was Jesus’ friend, and said to them: “They have taken away the Master out of the tomb, and we do not know where they have laid him!” So, Peter started off with that other disciple, and they went to the tomb. The two began running together; but the other disciple ran faster than Peter, and reached the tomb first. Stooping down, he saw the linen wrappings lying there, but did not go in. Presently Simon Peter came following behind him, and went into the tomb; and he looked at the linen wrappings lying there, and the cloth which had been on Jesus’ head, not lying with the wrappings, but rolled up on one side,

8 separately. Then the other disciple, who had reached the tomb
first, went inside too, and he saw for himself and was convinced.
9 For they did not then understand the passage of scripture which
10 says that Jesus must rise again from the dead. The disciples then
returned to their companions.
11 Meanwhile Mary was standing close outside the tomb, weeping.
12 Still weeping, she leant forward into the tomb, and perceived
two angels clothed in white sitting there, where the body of Je-
sus had been lying, one where the head and the other where the
13 feet had been. "Why are you weeping?" asked the angels. "They
have taken my Master away," she answered, "and I do not know
14 where they have laid him." After saying this, she turned around,
and looked at Jesus standing there, but she did not know that it
15 was Jesus. "Why are you weeping? Whom are you seeking?" he
asked. Supposing him to be the gardener, Mary answered: "If it
was you, Sir, who carried him away, tell me where you have laid
him, and I will take him away myself."
16 "Mary!" said Jesus. She turned around, and exclaimed in He-
brew: "Rabboni!" (or, as we should say, 'teacher'). "Do not hold
17 me," Jesus said; "for I have not yet ascended to the Father. But
go to my brothers, and tell them that I am ascending to him who
is my Father and their Father, my God and their God." Mary of
18 Magdala went and told the disciples that she had seen the Master,
and that he had said this to her.

19 In the evening of the same day — the first day of the week
— after the doors of the room, in which the disciples were, had
been shut because they were afraid of the religious authorities,
Jesus came and stood among them and said: "Peace be with you";
20 after which he showed them his hands and his side. The disciples
21 were filled with joy when they saw the Master. Again Jesus said
to them: "Peace be with you. As the Father has sent me as his
22 messenger, so I am sending you." After saying this, he breathed
23 on them, and said: "Receive the Holy Spirit; if you remit anyone's
sins, they have been remitted; and, if you retain them, they have
been retained."

But Thomas, one of the Twelve, called 'The Twin,' was not with 24
them when Jesus came; so the rest of the disciples said to him: 25
"We have seen the Master!"
"Unless I see the marks of the nails in his hands," he exclaimed,
"and put my finger into the marks, and put my hand into his side,
I will not believe it." A week later the disciples were again in the 26
house, and Thomas with them. After the doors had been shut,
Jesus came and stood among them, and said: "Peace be with you."
Then he said to Thomas: "Place your finger here, and look at my 27
hands; and place your hand here, and put it into my side; and do
not refuse to believe, but believe." And Thomas exclaimed: "My 28
Master, and my God!"
"Is it because you have seen me that you have believed?" said 29
Jesus. "Blessed are they who have not seen, and yet have
believed!"

There were many other signs of his mission that Jesus gave 30
in presence of the disciples, which are not recorded in this book;
but these have been recorded so that you may believe that Jesus 31
is the Christ, the Son of God — and that, through your belief in
his name, you may have life.

Later on, Jesus showed himself again to the disciples by the Sea 21
of Tiberias. It was in this way: — Simon Peter, Thomas, who was
called 'The Twin,' Nathanael of Cana in Galilee, Zebedee's sons,
and two other disciples of Jesus, were together, when Simon Peter
said: "I am going fishing."
"We will come with you," said the others. They went out and 3
got into the boat, but caught nothing that night. Just as day was
breaking, Jesus came and stood on the beach; but the disciples 4
did not know that it was he. "My children," he said, "have you
anything to eat?" 5
"No," they answered. "Cast your net to the right of the boat," 6
he said, "and you will find fish." So they cast the net, and now
they could not haul it in because of the quantity of fish. The 7
disciple whom Jesus loved said to Peter: "It is the Master!"
When Simon Peter heard that it was the Master, he fastened his
coat around him (for he had taken it off), and threw himself into

8 the Sea. But the rest of the disciples came in the boat (for they
9 were only about a hundred yards from shore), dragging the net
10 full of fish. When they had come ashore, they found a charcoal
11 fire ready, with some fish already on it, and some bread as well.
12 "Bring some of the fish which you have just caught," said Jesus.
13 So Simon Peter got into the boat and hauled the net ashore full
14 of large fish, a hundred and fifty-three of them; and yet,
15 although there were so many, the net had not been torn. And
16 Jesus said to them: "Come and breakfast." Not one of the
17 disciples ventured to ask him who he was, knowing that it was
18 the Master. Jesus went and took the bread and gave it to them,
19 and the fish too. This was the third time that Jesus showed
20 himself to the disciples after he had risen from the dead.

21 When breakfast was over, Jesus said to Simon Peter: "Simon,
22 son of John, do you love me more than the others?"
23 "Yes, Master," he answered, "you know that I am your friend."
24 "Feed my lambs," said Jesus. Then, a second time, Jesus asked:
25 "Simon, son of John, do you love me?"
26 "Yes, Master," he answered, "you know that I am your friend."
27 "Tend my sheep," said Jesus. The third time, Jesus said to him:
28 "Simon, son of John, are you my friend?" Peter was hurt at his
29 third question being 'Are you my friend?'; and exclaimed: "Mas-
30 ter, you know everything! You can tell that I am your friend."
31 "Feed my sheep," said Jesus. "In truth I tell you," he continued,
32 "when you were young, you used to put on your own clothes,
33 and walk wherever you wished; but, when you have grown old,
34 you will have to stretch out your hands, while some one else puts
35 on your clothes, and takes you where you do not wish." Jesus
36 said this to show the death by which Peter was to honor God,
37 and then he added: "Follow me." Peter turned around, and saw
38 the disciple whom Jesus loved following — the one who at the
39 supper leant back on the Master's shoulder, and asked him who
40 it was who would betray him. Seeing him, Peter said to Jesus:
41 "Master, what about this man?"
42 "If it is my will that he should wait until I come," answered
43 Jesus, "what has that to do with you? Follow me yourself." So
44 the report spread among his followers that that disciple was not
45 to die; yet Jesus did not say that he was not to die, but said "If it

is my will that he should wait until I come, what has that to do with you?"

It is this disciple who states these things, and who recorded 24 them; and we know that his statement is true.

There are many other things which Jesus did; but, if every one of 25 them were to be recorded in detail, I suppose that even the world itself would not hold the books that would be written.

THE
ACTS
OF THE APOSTLES

The Church and the Jews

The Doings of the Apostles Peter and John

THE FIRST ACCOUNT WHICH I DREW UP, Theophilus, dealt with all 1
that Jesus did and taught from the very first, down to that day 2
on which he was taken up to heaven, after he had, by the help of
the Holy Spirit, given instructions to the apostles whom he had
chosen. With abundant proofs, he showed himself to them, still 3
living, after his death; appearing to them from time to time during
forty days, and speaking of all that related to the kingdom of God.
And once, when he had gathered them together, he charged them 4
not to leave Jerusalem, but to wait there for the fulfillment of the
Father's promise — "that promise," he said, "of which you have
heard me speak; for, while John baptized with water, you will be 5
baptized with the Holy Spirit before many days have passed."

So, when the apostles had met together, they asked Jesus this 6
question — "Master, is this the time when you intend to re-estab-
lish the kingdom for Israel?" His answer was: "It is not for you 7
to know times or hours, for the Father has reserved these for his
own decision; but you will receive power, when the Holy Spirit 8
will have descended on you, and will be witnesses for me not only
in Jerusalem, but throughout Judea and Samaria, and to the ends
of the earth."

No sooner had Jesus said this than he was caught up before 9
their eyes, and a cloud received him from their sight. While they
were still gazing up into the heavens, as he went, suddenly two 10
men, clothed in white, stood beside them, and said: "People of
Galilee, why are you standing here looking up into the heavens? 11
This same Jesus, who has been taken from you into the heavens,

will come in the same way in which you have seen him go into the heavens."

- 12 Then the apostles returned to Jerusalem from the hill called
 Olivet, which is about three quarters of a mile from the city. When
 13 they reached Jerusalem, they went to the upstairs room, where
 they were staying. There were there Peter, John, James, and An-
 drew, Philip and Thomas, Bartholomew and Matthew, James the
 son of Alphaeus, Simon the Zealot, and Judas the son of James.
 14 They all united in devoting themselves to prayer, and so did some
 women, and Mary, the mother of Jesus, and his brothers.

- 15 About this time, at a meeting of the Lord's followers, when
 there were about a hundred and twenty present, Peter rose to
 16 speak. "Friends," he said, "it was necessary who the prediction
 of scripture should be fulfilled, which the Holy Spirit made by
 the lips of David about Judas, who acted as guide to the men that
 17 arrested Jesus, for he was one of our number and had his part
 allotted him in this work of ours." (This man had bought a piece
 18 of land with the price of his treachery; and, falling heavily, his
 body had burst open, and all his bowels protruded. This became
 known to everyone living in Jerusalem, so that the field came to
 be called, in their language, 'Akeldama,' which means the 'Field
 of Blood.')

- 20 "For in the book of Psalms," Peter continued, "it is said —

'Let his home,
 And let no one live in it';

and also —

'His office let another take.'

- 21 Therefore, from among the men who have been with us all the
 time that Jesus, our Master, went in and out among us — From
 22 his baptism by John down to that day on which he was taken
 from us — some one must be found to join us as a witness of
 23 his resurrection." So they put forward two men, Joseph called
 24 Barsabas, whose other name was Justus, and Matthias; and they
 offered this prayer —

- 25 "Lord, who reads all hearts, show which of these two men
 you have chosen To take the place in this apostolic work,
 which Judas has abandoned, to go to his proper place."

Then they drew lots between them; and, the lot having fallen on Matthias, he was added to the number of the eleven apostles. 26

In the course of the Festival at the close of the Harvest the disciples had all met together, when suddenly there came from the heavens a noise like a strong wind rushing by; it filled the whole house in which they were sitting. Then there appeared tongues of what seemed to be flame, separating, so that one settled on each of them; and they were all filled with the Holy Spirit, and began to speak with strange 'tongues' as the Spirit prompted their utterances. 2

Now there were then staying in Jerusalem religious Jews from every country in the world; and, when this sound was heard, numbers of people collected, in the greatest excitement, because each of them heard the disciples speaking in his own language. They were utterly amazed, and kept asking in astonishment: 5

"What! Are not all these people who are speaking Galileans? Then how is it that we each of us hear them in our own language? Some of us are Parthians, some Medes, some Elamites; and some of us live in Mesopotamia, in Judea and Cappadocia, in Pontus and Roman Asia, in Phrygia and Pamphylia, in Egypt and the districts of Libya adjoining Cyrene; some of us are visitors from Rome, either Jews by birth or converts, and some are Cretans and Arabians — yet we all alike hear them speaking in our own tongues of the great things that God has done." They were all utterly amazed and bewildered. 7

"What does it mean?" they asked one another. But there were some who said with a sneer: "They have had too much new wine." 13

Then Peter, surrounded by the eleven other apostles, stood up, and, raising his voice, addressed the crowd. "People of Judea," he began, "and all you who are staying in Jerusalem, let me tell you what this means. Mark well my words. These people are not drunk, as you suppose; for it is only now nine in the morning! No! This is what is spoken of in the prophet Joel — 14

'It will come about in the last days,' God says, 17
That I will pour out my Spirit on all humanity;
Your sons and your daughters will become prophets,
Your young men will see visions,
And your old men dream dreams;

- 18 Yes, even on the slaves — for they are mine — both
men and women,
I will in those days pour out my Spirit,
And they will become prophets;
- 19 And I will show wonders in the heavens above,
And signs on the earth below —
Blood and fire and mist of smoke;
- 20 The sun will become darkness,
And the moon blood-red,
Before the day of the Lord comes — that great and aw-
ful day.
- 21 Then will everyone who invokes the name of the
Lord be saved.'
- 22 People of Israel, listen to what I am saying. Jesus of Nazareth,
a man whose mission from God to you was proved by miracles,
wonders, and signs, which God showed among you through him,
- 23 as you know full well — He, I say, in accordance with God's defi-
nite plan and with his previous knowledge, was betrayed, and
you, by the hands of lawless men, nailed him to a cross and put
- 24 him to death. But God released him from the pangs of death and
raised him to life, it being impossible for death to retain its hold
- 25 on him. Indeed he was the one David was referring to when he
said —
- 'I have had the Lord ever before my eyes,
For he stands at my right hand, so that I should not be
disquieted.
- 26 Therefore my heart was cheered, and my tongue told its
delight;
Yes, even my body, too, will rest in hope;
- 27 For you will not abandon my soul to the place of death,
Nor surrender me, your holy one, to undergo corrup-
tion.
- 28 You have shown me the path to life,
You will fill me with gladness in your presence.'
- 29 Friends, I can speak to you the more confidently about the pa-
triarch David, because he is dead and buried, and his tomb is
- 30 here among us to this very day. David, then, prophet as he was,
knowing that God 'had solemnly sworn to him to set one of his
31 descendants on his throne,' looked into the future, and referred

to the resurrection of the Christ when he said that 'he had not been abandoned to the place of death, nor had his body undergone corruption.' It was this Jesus, whom God raised to life; and of that we are ourselves all witnesses. And now that he has been exalted to the right hand of God, and has received from the Father the promised gift of the Holy Spirit, he has begun to pour out that gift, as you yourselves now see and hear. It was not David who went up into heaven; for he himself says —

'The Lord said to my master: "Sit on my right hand,
Until I put your enemies as a footstool under your feet."' 35

So let the whole nation of Israel know beyond all doubt, that God has made him both Lord and Christ — this Jesus whom you crucified."

When the people heard this, they were conscience-smitten, and said to Peter and the rest of the apostles: "Friends, what can we do?"

"Repent," answered Peter, "and be baptized every one of you in the faith of Jesus Christ for the forgiveness of your sins; and then you will receive the gift of the Holy Spirit. For the promise is for you and for your children, and also for all those now far away, who may be called by the Lord our God."

Peter spoke to them for a long time using many other arguments and pleaded with them — "Save yourselves from the perverse spirit of this age." So those who accepted his teaching were baptized, and about three thousand people joined the disciples on that day alone. They devoted themselves to the teaching of the apostles and to the Common life of the church, to the breaking of the bread and to the Prayers.

A deep impression was made on everyone, and many wonders and signs were done at the hands of the apostles. All who became believers in Christ held everything for the common use; they sold their property and their goods, and shared the proceeds among them all, according to their individual needs. Every day they devoted themselves to meeting together in the Temple Courts, and to the breaking of bread at their homes, while they partook of their food in simple-hearted gladness, praising God, and winning the goodwill of all the people. And the Lord daily added to their company those who were in the path of salvation.

3 One day, as Peter and John were going up into the Temple
4 Courts for the three o'clock Prayers, a man, who had been lame
5 from his birth, was being carried by. This man used to be set down
6 every day at the gate of the Temple called 'the Beautiful Gate,' to
7 beg of those who went in. Seeing Peter and John on the point of
8 entering, he asked them to give him something. Peter fixed his
9 eyes on him, and so did John, and then Peter said: "Look at us."
10 The man was all attention, expecting to get something from them;
11 but Peter added: "I have no gold or silver, but I give you what I
12 have. In the name of Jesus Christ of Nazareth, get up and walk."
13 Grasping the lame man by the right hand, Peter lifted him up.
14 Instantly the man's feet and ankles became strong, and, leaping
15 up, he stood and began to walk about, and then went with them
16 into the Temple Courts, walking, and leaping, and praising God.
17 All the people saw him walking about and praising God; and,
18 when they recognized him as the man who used to sit begging
19 at the Beautiful Gate of the Temple, they were utterly astonished
20 and amazed at what had happened to him. While the man still
21 clung to Peter and John, the people all quickly gathered around
22 them in the Colonnade named after Solomon, in the greatest as-
23 tonishment.

24 On seeing this, Peter said to the people: "People of Israel, why
25 are you surprised at this? And why do you stare at us, as though
26 we, by any power or piety of our own, had enabled this man to
27 walk? The God of Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob, the God of our
28 ancestors, has done honor to his servant Jesus — him whom you
29 gave up and disowned before Pilate, when he had decided to set
30 him free. You, I say, disowned the holy and righteous one, and
31 asked for the release of a murderer! The guide to life you put to
32 death! But God raised him from the dead — and of that we are
33 ourselves witnesses. And it is by faith in the name of Jesus, that
34 this man, whom you all see and know, has — by his name — been
35 made strong. Yes, it is the faith inspired by Jesus that has made
36 this complete cure of the man, before the eyes of you all. And
37 yet, my friends, I know that you acted as you did from ignorance,
38 and your rulers also. But it was in this way that God fulfilled all
39 that he had long ago foretold, as to the sufferings of his Christ,
40 by the lips of all the prophets. Therefore, repent and turn so that
41 your sins may be wiped away; so that happier times may come

from the Lord himself, and so that he may send you, in Jesus, 20
your long-appointed Christ. But heaven must be his home, until 21
the days of the Universal Restoration, of which God has spoken
by the lips of his holy prophets from the very first. Moses himself 22
said —

‘The Lord your God will raise up from among yourselves
a prophet, as he raised me. To him you will listen when-
ever he speaks to you. And it will be that should anyone 23
among the people not listen to that prophet, he will be ut-
terly destroyed.’

Yes, and all the prophets from Samuel onwards, and all their 24
successors who had a message to deliver, told of these days. You
yourselves are the heirs of the prophets, and heirs, too, of the 25
covenant which God made with your ancestors, when he said to
Abraham —

‘In your descendants will all the nations of the earth be
blessed.’

For you, first, God raised up his servant, and sent him to bless 26
you, by turning each one of you from his wicked ways.” While 4
Peter and John were still speaking to the people, the chief priest,
with the officer in charge at the Temple and the Sadducees, came
up to them, much annoyed because they were teaching the peo- 2
ple, and because, through Jesus, they were preaching the resur-
rection from the dead. They arrested the apostles and, as it was 3
already evening, had them placed in custody until the next day.
Many, however, of those who had heard the apostles’ message be- 4
came believers in Christ, the number of the men alone amounting
to about five thousand.

The next day, a meeting of the leaders of the people, the coun- 5
cillors, and the teachers of the law was held in Jerusalem. There
were present Annas the high priest, Caiaphas, John, Alexander, 6
and all who were of High-Priestly rank. They had Peter and John 7
brought before them, and questioned them.
“By what power,” they asked, “Or in whose name have men like
you done this thing?”

Then, Peter, filled with the Holy Spirit, said: “Leaders of the 8
people and councillors, since we are on our trial today for a kind 9

10 act done to a helpless man, and are asked in what way the man
here before you has been cured, let me tell you all and all the
people of Israel, that it is by the name of Jesus Christ of Nazareth,
whom you crucified and whom God raised from the dead — it
is, I say, by his name that this man stands here before you lame
11 no longer. Jesus is ‘the stone which, scorned by you the builders,
12 has yet become the corner stone.’ And salvation is in him alone;
for there is no other name in the whole world, given to people, to
which we must look for our salvation.”

13 When the Council saw how boldly Peter and John spoke, and
found that they were uneducated men of humble station, they
were surprised, and realized that they had been companions of
14 Jesus. But, when they looked at the man who had been healed,
15 standing there with them, they had nothing to say. So they ordered
them out of court, and then began consulting together.

16 “What are we to do to these men?” they asked one another.
“That a remarkable sign has been given through them is obvious
17 to everyone living in Jerusalem, and we cannot deny it. But, to
prevent this thing from spreading further among the people, let
us warn them not to speak in this name any more to anyone what-
ever.”

18 So they called the apostles in, and ordered them not to speak
or teach in the name of Jesus.

19 But Peter and John replied: “Whether it is right, in the sight of
20 God, to listen to you rather than to him — judge for yourselves,
for we cannot help speaking of what we have seen and heard.”
21 However, after further warnings, the Council set them at liberty,
not seeing any safe way of punishing them, because of the people,
22 for they were all praising God for what had occurred; for the man
who was the subject of this miraculous cure was more than forty
years old.

23 After they had been set at liberty, the apostles went to their
friends and told them what the chief priests and the councillors
24 had said to them. All who heard their story, moved by a common
impulse, raised their voices to God in prayer:

25 “Sovereign Lord, it is you who has ‘made the heavens, the
earth, the sea, and everything that is in them,’ And who,

by the lips of our ancestor, your servant David, who spoke under the influence of the Holy Spirit, have said —

‘Why did the nations rage,
And the peoples form vain designs?
The kings of the earth set their array, 26
And its rulers gathered together,
Against the Lord and against his Christ.’

There have indeed gathered together in this city against 27
your holy servant Jesus, whom you has consecrated the
Christ, not Herod and Pontius Pilate only, but the nations
and the people of Israel besides — Yet only to do what you, 28
by your power and of your own will, did long ago destine
to be done. Now, therefore, Lord, mark their threats, and 29
enable your servants, with all fearlessness, to tell your mes-
sage, while you stretch out your hand to heal, and cause 30
signs and wonders to take place through the name of your
holy servant Jesus.”

When their prayer was ended, the place in which they were as- 31
sembled was shaken; and they were all filled with the Holy Spirit,
and began to tell God’s message fearlessly.

The whole body of those who had become believers in Christ 32
were of one heart and mind. Not one of them claimed any of his
goods as his own, but everything was held for the common use.
The apostles continued with great power to bear their testimony 33
to the resurrection of the Lord Jesus, and God’s blessing rested on
them all abundantly. Nor was there anyone in need among them, 34
for all who were owners of land or houses sold them, and brought
the proceeds of the sales And laid them at the apostles’ feet; and 35
then everyone received a share in proportion to his wants. A 36
Levite of Cyprian birth, named Joseph, (who had received from
the apostles the additional name of ‘Barnabas’ — which means
‘The Consoler,’) Sold a farm that belonged to him, and brought 37
the money and laid it at the apostles’ feet.

There was, however, a man named Ananias, who, with his wife 5
Sapphira, sold some property, and, with her connivance, kept 2

back some of the proceeds. He brought only a part and laid it at the apostles' feet.

3 "Ananias," Peter exclaimed, "how is it that Satan has so taken
possession of your heart that you have lied to the Holy Spirit, and
4 kept back a part of the money paid for the land? While it was
unsold, was not it your own? And after it was sold, was not the
money at your own disposal? How did you come to think of such
a thing? You have lied, not to people, but to God!"

5 As Ananias heard these words, he fell down and expired; and
6 everyone who heard of it was appalled. The young men got up,
and, winding the body in a sheet, carried it out and buried it.

7 After an interval of about three hours his wife came in, not
8 knowing what had happened. "Is it true," Peter asked, address-
ing her, "that you sold your land for such a sum?"

9 "Yes," she answered, "we did." Then Peter said: "How did you
come to agree to provoke the Spirit of the Lord? Listen! The foot-
steps of those who have buried your husband are at the door; and
they will carry you out too."

10 Instantly Sapphira fell down at Peter's feet and expired. On
coming in, the young men found her dead; so they carried her
11 out and buried her by her husband's side. The whole church and
all who heard of these events were appalled.

12 Many signs and wonders continued to occur among the peo-
ple, through the instrumentality of the apostles, whose custom it
13 was to meet all together in the Colonnade of Solomon; but of the
rest no one ventured to join them. On the other hand, the people
14 were full of their praise, and still larger numbers, both of men and
women, as they became believers in the Lord, were added to their
15 number. The consequence was that people would bring out their
sick even into the streets, and lay them on mattresses and mats,
in the hope that, as Peter came by, at least his shadow might fall
16 on some one of them. Besides this, the inhabitants of the towns
around Jerusalem flocked into the city, bringing with them their
sick and those who were troubled by foul spirits; and they were
cured everyone.

At this the high priest was roused to action, and he and all his supporters (who formed the party of the Sadducees), moved by jealousy, arrested the apostles, and had them placed in custody. An angel of the Lord, however, opened the prison doors at night and led them out. "Go," he said, "and stand in the Temple Courts, and tell the people the whole message of this new life." When they heard this, they went at daybreak into the Temple Courts, and began to teach. The high priest and his party, on their arrival, summoned the High Council, including all the leaders of the people among the Israelites, and sent to the jail to fetch the apostles. But, when the officers got there, they did not find them in the prison; so they returned and reported that, while they had found the goal barred securely and the guards posted at the doors, yet, on opening them, they had not found anyone inside. When the officer in charge at the Temple and the chief priests heard their story, they were perplexed about the apostles and as to what all this would lead to. Presently, however, some one came and told them, that the men whom they had put in prison were actually standing in the Temple Courts, teaching the people. Then, the officer went with his men and fetched the apostles — without using violence, for they were afraid of being stoned by the people — And then brought them before the Council. The high priest demanded an explanation from them.

"We gave you strict orders," he said, "not to teach in this name. Yet you have actually flooded Jerusalem with your teaching, and you want to make us responsible for the death of this man."

To this Peter and the apostles replied: "We must obey God rather than people. The God of our ancestors raised Jesus, whom you put to death by hanging him on a cross. It is this Jesus whom God has exalted to his right hand, to be a guide and a Savior, to give Israel repentance and forgiveness of sins. And we are witness to the truth of this, and so is the Holy Spirit — the gift of God to those who obey him."

The members of the Council became frantic with rage on hearing this, and were for putting the apostles to death. But Gamaliel, a Pharisee, who was a Doctor of the law and who was held in universal respect, rose in the Council, and directed that the men should be taken out of court for a little while.

35 He then said: "People of Israel, take care as to what you intend
36 to do with these men. For not long ago Theudas appeared, pro-
fessing to be somebody, and was joined by a body of some four
37 hundred men. But he was killed; and all his followers scattered
and dwindled away. After him, Judas the Galilean appeared at
the time of the census, and induced people to follow him; Yet
38 he, too, perished and all his followers were dispersed. And, in
this present case, my advice to you is not to interfere with these
men, but to let them alone, for, if their designs and their work are
39 merely of human origin, they will come to an end; but, if they are
of divine origin, you will be powerless to put an end to them —
or else you may find yourselves fighting against God!"

40 The Council followed his advice, and, calling the apostles in,
had them flogged, and then, after cautioning them not to speak in
41 the name of Jesus, set them free. But the apostles left the Council,
rejoicing that they had been thought worthy to suffer disgrace for
42 that name; and never for a single day, either in the Temple Courts
or in private houses, did they cease to teach, or to tell the good
news of Jesus, the Christ.

6 About this time, when the number of the disciples was con-
stantly increasing, complaints were made by the Greek speaking
Jews against the Aramaic speaking Jews, that their widows were
2 being overlooked in the daily distribution. The Twelve, therefore,
called together the general body of the disciples and said to them:
"It is not well for us to see to the distribution at the tables and ne-
3 glect God's message. Therefore, friends, look for seven men of
reputation among yourselves, wise and spiritually-minded men,
4 and we will appoint them to attend to this matter; while we, for
our part, will devote ourselves to prayer, and to the delivery of
the message."

5 This proposal was unanimously agreed to; and the disciples
chose Stephen — a man full of faith and of the Holy Spirit —
and Philip, Prochorus, Nicanor, Timon, Parmenas, and Nicholas
6 of Antioch, a former convert to Judaism; and they brought these
men to the apostles, who, after praying, placed their hands on
them.

So God's message spread, and the number of the disciples continued to increase rapidly in Jerusalem, and a large body of the priests accepted the faith. 7

Meanwhile Stephen, divinely helped and strengthened, was showing great wonders and signs among the people. But some members of the Synagogue of the Freed Slaves (as it was called), Cyrenians, Alexandrians, and Visitors from Cilicia and Roman Asia, were roused to action and began disputing with Stephen; yet they were quite unable to withstand the wisdom and the inspiration with which he spoke. Then they induced some men to assert that they had heard Stephen saying blasphemous things against Moses, and against God; and they stirred up the people, as well as the councillors and the teachers of the law, and set on Stephen, and arrested him, and brought him before the High Council. There they produced witnesses who gave false evidence. 8 9 10 11 12 13

"This man," they said, "is incessantly saying things against this Holy place and the law; indeed, we have heard him declare that this Jesus of Nazareth will destroy this place, and change the customs handed down to us by Moses." The eyes of all the members of the Council were riveted on Stephen, and they saw his face looking like the face of an angel. 14 15

Then the high priest asked: "Is this true?" Stephen replied: 7
"Brothers and fathers, hear what I have to say. God, who manifests himself in the glory, appeared to our ancestor Abraham when he was in Mesopotamia, and before he settled in Haran, and said to him — 'Leave your country and your kindred, and come into the country that I will show you.' And so Abraham left the country of the Chaldeans and settled in Haran; and from there, after his father's death, God caused him to migrate into this country, in which you are now living. God did not at that time give him any part of it, not even a foot of ground. But he promised to 'give him possession of it and his descendants after him, though at that time he had no child. God's words were these — 'Abraham's descendants will live in a foreign country, where they will be enslaved and ill-treated for four hundred years. But I myself will judge the nation, to which they will be enslaved,' God said, 'and after that they will leave 2 3 4 5 6 7

8 the country and worship me in this place.' Then God made with
Abraham the covenant of circumcision; and under it Abraham
became the father of Isaac, and circumcised him when he was
eight days old; and Isaac became the father of Jacob; and Jacob
9 of the Twelve Patriarchs. The Patriarchs, out of jealousy, sold
10 Joseph into slavery in Egypt; but God was with him, and
delivered him out of all his troubles, and enabled him to win
favor and show wisdom before Pharaoh, king of Egypt, who
appointed him Governor of Egypt and of his whole household.
11 Then a famine spread over the whole of Egypt and Canaan,
causing great distress, and our ancestors could find no food.
12 Hearing, however, that there was corn in Egypt, Jacob sent our
13 ancestors there on their first visit. In the course of their second
visit, Joseph revealed himself to his brothers, and his family
14 became known to Pharaoh. Then Joseph sent an urgent
invitation to his father Jacob and to his relations, seventy-five
15 persons in all; and so Jacob went down into Egypt. There he
16 died, and our ancestors also, and their bodies were removed to
Shechem, and laid in the tomb which Abraham had bought for a
17 sum of money from the sons of Hamor in Shechem. As the time
drew near for the fulfillment of the promise which God had
made to Abraham, the people increased largely in numbers in
18 Egypt, until a new king, who knew nothing of Joseph, came to
19 the throne. This king acted deceitfully towards our race and
ill-treated our ancestors, making them abandon their own
20 infants, so that they should not be reared. It was just at this time
that Moses was born. He was an exceedingly beautiful child,
and for three months was brought up in his own father's house;
21 and, when he was abandoned, the daughter of Pharaoh found
22 him and brought him up as her own son. So Moses was
educated in all the learning of the Egyptians, and proved his
23 ability both by his words and actions. When he was in his
24 fortieth year, he resolved to visit his fellow Israelites; and,
seeing an Israelite ill-treated, he defended him, and avenged the
man, who was being wronged, by striking down the Egyptian.
25 He thought his own people would understand that God was
26 using him to save them; but they failed to do so. The next day
he again appeared on the scene, when some of them were
fighting, and tried to make peace between them. 'Men,' he said,
'you are brothers; how is it that you are ill-treating one another?'

But the man who was ill-treating his fellow workman pushed 27
Moses aside saying — ‘Who made you a ruler and judge over 28
us? Do you mean to make away with me as you did yesterday 29
with that Egyptian?’ At these words Moses took to flight, and
became an exile in Midian; and there he had two sons born to 30
him. Forty years had passed when there appeared to him, in the
desert of Mount Sinai, an angel in a flame of fire in a bush. When 31
Moses saw it, he was astonished at the vision; but on his going
nearer to look at it more closely, the voice of the Lord was heard 32
to say — ‘I am the God of your ancestors, the God of Abraham,
Isaac, and Jacob.’ Moses trembled, and did not dare to look. 33
Then the Lord said to him — ‘Take your sandals off your feet, 34
for the spot where you are standing is holy ground. I have seen
the oppression of my people who are in Egypt, and heard their 35
groans, and I have come down to deliver them. Come now and I
will send you into Egypt.’ This same Moses, whom they had 36
disowned with the words — ‘Who made you a ruler and a
judge?’ was the man whom God sent to be both a ruler and a 37
deliverer, under the guidance of the angel that had appeared to
him in the bush. He it was who led them out, after he had 38
shown wonders and signs in Egypt, in the Red Sea, and in the
desert during forty years. This was the Moses who said to the 39
people of Israel — ‘God will raise up for you, from among
yourselves, a prophet, as he raised up me.’ He, too, it was who 40
was present at the assembly in the desert, with the angel who
talked to him on Mount Sinai, and with our ancestors, and who 41
received living truths to impart to you. Yet our ancestors
refused him obedience; more than that, they rejected him, and in 42
their hearts turned back to Egypt, while they said to Aaron —
‘Make us Gods who will lead the way for us, since, as for this
Moses who has brought us out of Egypt, we do not know what
has become of him.’ That was the time when they made the calf 43
and offered sacrifice to their idol, and held festivities in honor of
their own handiwork! So God turned from them and left them
to the worship of the Starry Host, as is written in the book of the
prophets —

‘Did you offer victims and sacrifices to me, house of Israel,
All those forty years in the desert?
You took with you the tent where Moloch is worshipped 43

And the star of the god Rephan —
 The images which you had made to worship.
 Therefore I will exile you beyond Babylon.'

44 Our ancestors had the tent where they worshipped God in the
 45 desert, constructed, just as he who spoke to Moses had directed
 him to make it, after the model which he had seen. This tent,
 which was handed down to them, was brought into this country
 by our ancestors who accompanied Joshua (at the conquest of the
 nations that God drove out before their advance), and remained
 46 here until the time of David. David found favor with God, and
 prayed that he might provide the God of Jacob with a place to
 47 reside. But it was Solomon who built a house for God. Yet it is
 48 not in buildings made by hands that the Most High dwells. As
 the prophet says —

49 "The heavens are a throne for me,
 And the earth a stool for my feet.
 What manner of house will you build me, saith the Lord,
 Or what place is there where I may rest?

50 Was it not my hand that made all these things?'

51 Stubborn race, heathen in heart and ears, you are for ever resist-
 52 ing the Holy Spirit; your ancestors did it, and you are doing it
 still. Which of the prophets escaped persecution at their hands?
 They killed those who foretold the coming of the righteous one;
 of whom you, in your turn, have now become the betrayers and
 53 murderers — You who received the law as transmitted by angels
 and yet failed to keep it."

54 As they listened to this, the Council grew frantic with rage, and
 55 gnashed their teeth at Stephen. He, filled as he was with the Holy
 Spirit, fixed his eyes intently on the heavens, and saw the glory of
 God and Jesus standing at God's right hand.

56 "Look," he exclaimed, "I see heaven open and the Son of Man
 57 standing at God's right hand!" At this, with a loud shout, they
 stopped their ears and all rushed on him, forced him outside the
 58 city, and began to stone him, the witnesses laying their clothes at
 59 the feet of a young man named Saul. And they stoned Stephen,
 while he cried to the Lord: "Lord Jesus! Receive my spirit!" Falling
 60 on his knees, he called out loudly: "Lord! Do not charge them
 with this sin;" and with these words he fell asleep.

8 Saul approved of his being put to death.

On that very day a great persecution broke out against the church which was in Jerusalem; and its members, with the exception of the apostles, were all scattered over the districts of Judea and Samaria. Some religious men buried Stephen, with loud lamentations for him. But Saul began to devastate the church; he entered house after house, dragged out men and women alike, and threw them into prison.

Now those who were scattered in different directions went from place to place proclaiming the good news. Philip went down to the city of Samaria, and there began to preach the Christ. The people, one and all, listened attentively to what Philip told them, when they heard of, and saw, the miracles which he was working. For there were many instances of people with foul spirits, where the spirits, with loud screams, came out of them; and many who were paralyzed or lame were cured, so that there was great rejoicing throughout that city. There was staying in the city a man named Simon, who had been practicing magic there and mystifying the Samaritan people, giving himself out to be some great being. Everyone, high and low, paid attention to him. 'This man,' they used to say, 'must be that power of God which people call "The Great Power."' And they paid attention to him because they had for a long time been mystified by his magic arts. However, when they came to believe Philip, as he told them the good news about the kingdom of God and the name of Jesus Christ, they were baptized, both men and women. Even Simon believed, and after his baptism attached himself to Philip, and was in his turn mystified at seeing signs and great miracles constantly occurring.

When the apostles at Jerusalem heard that the Samaritans had welcomed God's message, they sent Peter and John to them; and they, on their arrival, prayed that the Samaritans might receive the Holy Spirit. (As yet the Spirit had not descended on any of them; they had only been baptized into the faith of the Lord Jesus). Then Peter and John placed their hands on them, and they received the Holy Spirit.

When Simon saw that it was through the placing of the apostles' hands on them that the Spirit was given, he brought them a sum of money and said: "Give me also this power of yours,

so that, if I place my hands on anyone, he may receive the Holy Spirit."

20 "A curse on you and on your money," Peter exclaimed, "for
21 thinking that God's free gift can be bought with gold! You have
22 no share or part in our message, for your 'heart is not right with
23 God.' Therefore repent of this wickedness of yours, and pray to
the Lord, that, if possible, you may be forgiven for such a thought;
for I see that you have fallen into the 'bitterness of envy' and the
'fetters of sin.'"

24 "Pray to the Lord for me, all of you," Simon answered, "so that
none of the things you have spoken of may happen to me."

25 Peter and John, having borne their testimony and delivered the
Lord's message, returned to Jerusalem, telling the good news, as
they went, in many Samaritan villages.

26 Meanwhile an angel of the Lord had said to Philip: "Set out
on a journey southwards, along the road that runs down from
27 Jerusalem to Gaza." (It is now deserted). So Philip set out on a
journey; and on his way he came on an official of high rank, in
the service of Candace, Queen of the Abyssinians. He was her
28 treasurer, and had been to Jerusalem to worship, and was now
on his way home, sitting in his carriage and reading the prophet
Isaiah.

29 The Spirit said to Philip: "Go up to the carriage over there and
30 keep close to it." So Philip ran up, and he heard the Abyssinian
reading the prophet Isaiah.

"Do you understand what you are reading?" he asked. "How
31 can I," the other answered, "unless some one will explain it to
32 me?" and he invited Philip to get up and sit by his side. The pas-
sage of scripture which he was reading was this —

'Like a sheep, he was led away to slaughter,
And as a lamb is dumb in the hands of its shearer,
So he refrains from opening his lips.

33 He was humiliated and justice was denied him.
Who will tell the story of his generation?
For his life is cut off from earth.'

34 "Now," said the Treasurer, addressing Philip, "tell me, of whom
is the prophet speaking? Of himself, or of some one else?" Then
35 Philip began, and, taking this passage as his text, told him the
good news about Jesus.

Presently, as they were going along the road, they came to some water, and the Treasurer exclaimed: "Look! Here is water; what is to prevent my being baptized?" So he ordered the carriage to stop, and they went down into the water — both Philip and the Treasurer — and Philip baptized him. But, when they came up out of the water, the Spirit of the Lord caught Philip away, and the Treasurer saw no more of him; for he continued his journey with a joyful heart. But Philip was found at Ashdod, and, as he went on his way, he told the good news in all the towns through which he passed, until he came to Caesarea.

Meanwhile Saul, still breathing murderous threats against the disciples of the Lord, went to the high priest, and asked him to give him letters to the Jewish congregations at Damascus, authorizing him, if he found there any supporters of the cause, whether men or women, to have them put in chains and brought to Jerusalem.

While on his journey, as he was nearing Damascus, suddenly a light from the heavens flashed around him. He fell to the ground and heard a voice saying to him — "Saul, Saul, why are you persecuting me?"

"Who are you, Lord?" he asked.

"I am Jesus, whom you are persecuting," the voice answered; "Yet stand up and go into the city, and you will be told what you must do."

The men traveling with Saul were meanwhile standing speechless; they heard the sound of the voice, but saw no one. When Saul got up from the ground, though his eyes were open, he could see nothing. So his men led him by the hand, and brought him into Damascus; and for three days he was unable to see, and took nothing either to eat or to drink.

Now there was at Damascus a disciple named Ananias, to whom, in a vision, the Lord said: "Ananias."

"Yes, Lord," he answered. "Go at once," said the Lord, "to the 'Straight Street', and ask at Judas's house for a man named Saul, from Tarsus. He is at this moment praying, and he has seen, in

a vision, a man named Ananias coming in and placing his hands on him, so that he may recover his sight.”

13 “Lord,” exclaimed Ananias, “I have heard from many people
14 about this man — how much harm he has done at Jerusalem to
15 your people there. And, here, too, he holds authority from the
16 chief priests to put in chains all those who invoke your name.” But
17 the Lord said to him: “Go, for this man is my chosen instrument
18 to uphold my name before the Gentiles and their kings, and the
19 people of Israel. I will myself show him all that he has to suffer
20 for my name.”

21 So Ananias went, entered the house, and, placing his hands on
22 Saul, said: “Saul, my brother, I have been sent by the Lord — by
23 Jesus, who appeared to you on your way here — so that you may
24 recover your sight and be filled with the Holy Spirit.” Instantly it
25 seemed as if a film fell from Saul’s eyes, and his sight was restored.
26 Then he got up and was baptized, and, after he had taken food,
27 he felt his strength return.

Saul stayed for some days with the disciples who were at Dam-
28 ascus, and at once began in the Synagogues to proclaim Jesus as
29 the Son of God. All who heard him were amazed.

30 “Is not this,” they asked, “the man who worked havoc in
31 Jerusalem among those that invoke this name, and who had also
32 come here for the express purpose of having such persons put in
33 chains and taken before the chief priests?” Saul’s influence,
34 however, kept steadily increasing, and he confounded the Jewish
35 people who lived in Damascus by the proofs that he gave that
36 Jesus was the Christ.

37 After some time some of them laid a plot to kill Saul, but it be-
38 came known to him. They even watched the gates day and night,
39 to kill him; but his disciples let him down by night through an
40 opening in the wall, lowering him in a basket.

41 On his arrival in Jerusalem, Saul attempted to join the disciples,
42 but they were all afraid of him, as they did not believe that he
43 was really a disciple. Barnabas, however, taking him by the hand,
44 brought him to the apostles, and told them the whole story of
45 how Saul on his journey had seen the Lord, and how the Lord had
46 talked to him, and how in Damascus he had spoken out fearlessly
47 in the name of Jesus. After that, Saul remained in Jerusalem, in

close intercourse with the apostles; and he spoke fearlessly in the name of the Lord, talking and arguing with the Jews of foreign birth, who, however, made attempts to kill him. But, when the followers found this out, they took him down to Caesarea, and sent him on his way to Tarsus. 29 30

And so it came about that the church, throughout Judea, Galilee, and Samaria, enjoyed peace and became firmly established; and, ordering its life by respect for the Lord and the help of the Holy Spirit, it increased in numbers. 31

Peter, while traveling from place to place throughout the country, went down to visit the people of Christ living at Lydda. There he found a man named Aeneas, who had been bedridden for eight years with paralysis. "Aeneas," Peter said to him, "Jesus Christ cures you. Get up, and make your bed." Aeneas got up at once; and all the inhabitants of Lydda and of the Plain of Sharon saw him, and came over to the Lord's side. 32 33 34 35

At Jaffa there lived a disciple whose name was Tabitha, which is in Greek 'Dorcas' — a Gazelle. Her life was spent in doing kind and charitable actions. Just at that time she was taken ill, and died; and they had washed her body and laid it out in an upstairs room. Jaffa was near Lydda, and the disciples, having heard that Peter was at Lydda, sent two men with the request that he come to them without delay. Peter returned with them at once. On his arrival, he was taken upstairs, and all the widows came around him in tears, showing the coats and other clothing which Dorcas had made while she was among them. But Peter sent everybody out of the room, and knelt down and prayed. Then, turning to the body, he said: "Tabitha! Stand up." She opened her eyes, and, seeing Peter, sat up. Giving her his hand, Peter raised her up, and, calling in the widows and others of Christ's people, presented her to them alive. This became known all through Jaffa, and numbers of people came to believe in the Lord. And Peter stayed some days at Jaffa with a tanner named Simon. 36 37 38 39 40 41 42 43

10 At Caesarea there was a man named Cornelius, a captain in the
2 regiment known as the 'Italian Regiment,' A religious man and
one who revered God, with all his household. He was liberal
in his charities to the people, and prayed to God constantly. One
3 afternoon, about three o'clock, he distinctly saw in a vision an
4 angel from God come to him, and call him by name. Cornelius
fixed his eyes on him and, in great alarm, said: "What is it, Lord?"
"Your prayers and your charities," the angel answered, "have
5 been an acceptable offering to God. And now, send messengers
to Jaffa and fetch a man called Simon, who is also known as
6 Peter. He is lodging with a tanner named Simon, who has a
house near the sea."

7 When the angel, who had spoken to him, had gone, Cornelius
called two servants and a religious soldier, who was one of his
8 constant attendants, and, after telling them the whole story, sent
them to Jaffa.

9 On the next day, while these men were on their way, just as
they were nearing the town, Peter went up on the housetop about
10 midday to pray. He became hungry and wanted something to eat;
11 but while it was being prepared, he fell into a trance, and saw that
the heavens were open, and that something like a great sail was
12 descending, let down by its four corners towards the earth. In it
13 were all kinds of quadrupeds, reptiles, and birds. Then he was
aware of a voice which said — "Stand up, Peter, kill something,
and eat."

14 "No, Lord, I cannot," answered Peter, "for I have never eaten
15 anything 'defiled' and 'unclean.'" Again he was aware of a voice
which said — "What God has pronounced 'clean', do not regard
16 as 'defiled.'" This happened three times, and then suddenly it
was all taken up into the heavens.

17 While Peter was still perplexed as to the meaning of the vision
that he had seen, the men sent by Cornelius, having enquired the
18 way to Simon's house, came up to the gate, and called out and
asked if the Simon, who was also known as Peter, was lodging
19 there. Peter was still pondering over the vision, when the Spirit
said to him: "There are two men looking for you at this moment.
20 Go down at once and do not hesitate to go with them, for I have
sent them."

Peter went down to the men and said: "I am the person you are looking for. What is your reason for coming?" 21

The men replied: "Our captain, Cornelius, a pious man who reverences God and is well spoken of by the whole Jewish nation, has been instructed by a holy angel to send for you to his house, and to listen to what you have to say." So Peter invited them in and entertained them. 22 23

The next day he lost no time in setting out with them, accompanied by some of the Lord's followers from Jaffa; and the day following he entered Caesarea. Cornelius was expecting them, and had invited his relations and intimate friends to meet them. So, when Peter entered the city, Cornelius met him, and, throwing himself at Peter's feet, bowed to the ground. Peter, however, lifted him up, saying as he did so: "Stand up, I am only human like yourself." 24 25 26

Talking with him as he went, Peter entered the house, where he found a large gathering of people, to whom he said: "You are doubtless aware that it is forbidden for a Jew to be intimate with a foreigner, or even to enter his house; and yet God has shown me that I ought not to call anyone 'defiled' or 'unclean.' That was why I came, when I was sent for, without raising any objection. And now I ask your reason for sending for me." 27 28 29

"Just three days ago this very hour," Cornelius said, "I was in my house, saying the Afternoon Prayers, when a man in dazzling clothing suddenly stood before me. 'Cornelius,' he said, 'your prayer has been heard, and your charities have been accepted, by God. Therefore send to Jaffa, and invite the Simon, who is also known as Peter, to come here. He is lodging in the house of Simon the tanner, near the sea.' Accordingly I sent to you at once, and you have been so good as to come. And now we are all here in the presence of God, to listen to all that you have been instructed by the Lord to say." Then Peter began. 30 31 32 33 34

"I see, beyond all doubt," he said, "that 'God does not show partiality,' But that in every nation he who reverences him and does what is right is acceptable to him. God has sent his message to the Israelites and told them, through Jesus Christ, the good news of peace — and Jesus is Lord of all! You yourselves know the story which spread through all Judea, how, beginning from Galilee, after the baptism which John proclaimed — The story, I mean, of Jesus of Nazareth, and how God consecrated him his 35 36 37 38

Christ by enduing him with the Holy Spirit and with power; and how he went about doing good and curing all who were under
39 the power of the devil, because God was with him. We are our-
selves, too, witnesses to all that he did in Judea and in Jerusalem;
40 yet they put him to death by hanging him on a cross! This Je-
41 sus God raised on the third day, and enabled him to appear, not
indeed to everyone, but to witnesses chosen beforehand by God
— to us, who ate and drank with him after his resurrection from
42 the dead. Further, God charged us to proclaim to the people, and
solemnly affirm, that it is Jesus who has been appointed by God
43 judge of the living and the dead. To him it is that all the prophets
bear witness, when they say that everyone who believes in him
receives through his name forgiveness of sins.”

44 Before Peter had finished saying these words, the Holy Spirit
45 fell on all who were listening to the message. Those converts from
Judaism, who had come with Peter, were amazed that the gift of
46 the Holy Spirit had been bestowed even on the Gentiles; for they
heard them speaking with ‘tongues’ and extolling God. At this Pe-
47 ter asked: “Can anyone refuse the water for the baptism of these
people, now that they have received the Holy Spirit as we did
48 ourselves?” And he directed that they should be baptized in the
faith of Jesus Christ; after which they asked him to stay there a
few days longer.

11 The apostles and the followers throughout Judea heard that
2 even the Gentiles had welcomed God’s message. But, when Pe-
ter went up to Jerusalem, those who were converts from Judaism
3 began to attack him, on the ground that he had visited people
4 who were not circumcised, and had taken meals with them. So
5 Peter began to relate the facts to them as they had occurred. “I
was in the town of Jaffa,” he said, “and was praying; and, while
in a trance, I saw a vision. There was something like a great sail
descending, let down by its four corners out of the heavens; and
6 it came right down to me. Looking intently at it, I began to dis-
7 tinguish quadrupeds, wild beasts, reptiles, and birds; and I also
heard a voice saying to me — ‘Stand up, Peter, kill something and
8 eat.’ ‘No, Lord, I cannot,’ I answered, ‘for nothing ‘defiled’ or ‘un-
9 clean’ has ever passed my lips.’ Then a second time there came
a voice from the heavens. “What God has pronounced ‘clean’,”

it said, "you must not call 'defiled.'" This happened three times, 10
and then all was drawn up again into the heavens. At that mo- 11
ment three men, who had been sent from Caesarea to see me,
came up to the house in which we were. The Spirit told me to 12
go with them without hesitation. These six companions also went
with me. And, when we came into the man's house, he told us 13
how he had seen the angel standing in his house, and how the an-
gel had said to him — 'Send to Jaffa and fetch the Simon, who is 14
also known as Peter; for he will tell you truths, which will prove
the means of salvation to you and all your household.' I had but 15
just begun to speak," continued Peter, "when the Holy Spirit fell
on them, exactly as on us at the first; and I recalled the saying of 16
the Master — 'John baptized with water, but you will be baptized
with the Holy Spirit.' Since then, God had given them the very 17
same gift as he gave us when we became believers in Jesus Christ
the Master — who was I that I could thwart God?"
On hearing this statement, they said no more, but broke out into 18
praise of God. "So even to the Gentiles," they exclaimed, "God
has granted the repentance which leads to life!"

Now those who had been scattered in different directions, in 19
consequence of the persecution that followed the death of
Stephen, went as far as Phoenicia, Cyprus, and Antioch, telling 20
the message — but only to Jews. Some of them, however, who
were men of Cyprus and Cyrene, on coming to Antioch,
addressed themselves also to the Jews of foreign birth, telling 21
them the good news about that Lord Jesus. The power of the
Lord was with them, so that a great number who had learned to
believe came over to the Lord's side. The news about them 22
reached the ears of the church at Jerusalem, and they sent
Barnabas to Antioch. On coming there he saw to his great joy 23
these tokens of the loving kindness of God, and encouraged
them all to make up their minds to be faithful to the Lord — For 24
Barnabas was a good man and full of the Holy Spirit and of faith
— and a large number of people took their stand on the Lord's
side. Afterwards Barnabas left for Tarsus to look for Saul; and 25
when he had found him, he brought him to Antioch. And so it 26
came about that, for a whole year, they attended the meetings of

the church there, and taught a large number of people; and it was in Antioch that the disciples were first called 'Christians.'

27 During this time, some prophets came to Antioch from
28 Jerusalem. One of them, named Agabus, came forward and,
under the influence of the Spirit, foretold a great famine that
was to spread over all the world — a famine which occurred in
29 the reign of Claudius. So the disciples, without exception,
determined, in proportion to their means, to send something to
30 help the followers living in Judea. And this they did, sending it
to the officers of the church by the hands of Barnabas and Saul.

12 It was at that time that King Herod began to ill-treat some of the
2 members of the church. He had James, the brother of John, be-
3 headed; and, when he saw that the Jews were pleased with this,
he proceeded to arrest Peter also. (This was during the Festival
4 of the unleavened bread.) After seizing Peter, Herod put him in
prison, and entrusted him to the keeping of four Guards of four
5 soldiers each, intending, after the Passover, to bring him up be-
fore the people. So Peter was kept in prison, but meanwhile the
6 prayers of the church were being earnestly offered to God on his
behalf. Just when Herod was intending to bring him before the
7 people, on that very night Peter was asleep between two soldiers,
chained to them both, while there were sentries in front of the
8 door, guarding the prison. Suddenly an angel of the Lord stood
by him, and a light shone in the cell. The angel struck Peter on
the side, and roused him with the words: "Get up quickly." The
9 chains dropped from his wrists, and then the angel said: "Put on
your belt and sandals." When Peter had done so, the angel added:
10 "Throw your cloak around you and follow me."
Peter followed him out, not knowing that what was happening
under the angel's guidance was real, but thinking that he was see-
11 ing a vision. Passing the first Guard, and then the second, they
came to the iron gate leading into the city, which opened to them
of itself; and, when they had passed through that, and had walked
along one street, all at once the angel left him.
Then Peter came to himself and said: "Now I know beyond
all doubt that the Lord has sent his angel, and has rescued me

from Herod's hands and from all that the Jewish people have been expecting." As soon as he realized what had happened, he went to the house of Mary, the mother of John who was also known as Mark, where a number of people were gathered together, praying. On his knocking at the door in the gate, a maidservant, named Rhoda, came to answer it. She recognized Peter's voice, but in her joy left the gate unopened, and ran in, and told them that Peter was standing outside.

"You are mad!" they exclaimed. But, when she persisted that it was so, they said: "It must be his spirit!"

Meanwhile Peter went on knocking, and, when they opened the gate and saw him, they were amazed. Peter signed to them with his hand to be silent, and then told them how the Lord had brought him out of the prison, adding: "Tell James and the others all this." Then he left the house, and went away to another place.

In the morning there was a great stir among the soldiers — what could have become of Peter! And, when Herod had made further search for him and failed to find him, he closely questioned the Guard, and ordered them away to execution. Then he went down from Judea to stay at Caesarea.

It happened that Herod was deeply offended with the people of Tyre and Sidon, but they went in a body to him, and, having succeeded in winning over Blastus, the Chamberlain, they begged Herod for a reconciliation, because their country was dependent on the king's for its food supply. On an appointed day Herod, wearing his state robes, seated himself on his throne, and delivered an oration. The people kept shouting: "It is the voice of God, and not of a person!"

Instantly an angel of the Lord struck him, because he did not give God the glory; and he was attacked with worms, and died. Meanwhile the Lord's message kept extending, and spreading far and wide.

When Barnabas and Saul had carried out their mission, they returned to Jerusalem, and took with them John, who was also known as Mark.

*The Church and the Gentiles**Doings of the Apostle Paul*

- 13 AMONG THE MEMBERS OF THE CHURCH AT ANTIOCH THERE WERE SEVERAL prophets and teachers — Barnabas, Simeon who was known by the name of 'Black', Lucius of Cyrene, Manaen, foster-brother of
- 2 Prince Herod, and Saul. While they were engaged in the worship of the Lord and were fasting, the Holy Spirit said: "Set apart for me Barnabas and Saul, for the work to which I have called them."
- 3 Accordingly, after fasting and prayer, they placed their hands on them and dismissed them.
- 4 Barnabas and Saul, sent on this mission, as they were, by the Holy Spirit, went down to Seleucia, and from there sailed to
- 5 Cyprus. On reaching Salamis, they began to tell the message of God in the Jewish Synagogues; and they had John with them as
- 6 an assistant. After passing through the whole island, they reached Paphos, where they found an astrologer who pretended to be a prophet — a Jew by birth, whose name was Barjoshua.
- 7 He was at the court of the Governor, Sergius Paulus, a man of intelligence, who sent for Barnabas and Saul and asked to be
- 8 told God's message. But Elymas, the astrologer (for that is the meaning of the word), opposed them, eager to divert the
- 9 Governor's attention from the faith. However, Saul (who is the same as Paul), full of the Holy Spirit, fixed his eyes on him and
- 10 said: "You incarnation of deceit and all fraud! You son of the devil! You opponent of all that is good! Will you never cease to
- 11 divert 'the straight paths of the Lord'? Listen! The hand of the Lord is on you even now, and you will be blind for a time and
- 12 unable to see the sun." Immediately a mist and darkness fell on him, and he went feeling about for some one to guide him. When the Governor saw what had happened, he became a believer in Christ, being greatly impressed by the teaching about the Lord.
- 13 After this, Paul and his companions set sail from Paphos and went to Perga in Pamphylia, where John left them and returned to
- 14 Jerusalem. The others went on from Perga and arrived at Antioch in Pisidia. There they went into the synagogue on the Sabbath and
- 15 took their seats. After the reading of the law and the prophets,

the synagogue leader sent them this message — “Friends, if you have any helpful words to address to the people, now is the time to speak.” So Paul rose and, motioning with his hand, said: 16
“People of Israel and all here who worship God, hear what I have to say. The God of this people Israel chose our ancestors, and during their stay in Egypt increased the prosperity of the people, 17
and then ‘with uplifted arm brought them out from that land.’ For about forty years ‘he bore with them in the desert’; then, 18
after destroying seven heathen nations in Canaan, he allotted their land to this people — For about four hundred and fifty 19
years. In later times he gave them Judges, of whom the prophet Samuel was the last. And, when they demanded a king, God gave 20
them Saul the son of Kish, a man of the tribe of Benjamin, who reigned for forty years. After removing him, he raised David to 21
the throne, and bore this testimony to him — ‘In David, the son of Jesse, I have found a man after my own heart, who will carry 22
out all my purposes.’ It was from this man’s descendants that God, in accordance with his promise, gave Israel a Savior — Je- 23
sus; John having first proclaimed, before the appearance of Jesus, a baptism on repentance for all the people of Israel. As John was 24
drawing towards the end of his career, he said what do you suppose that I am? I am not the Christ. But there is “one coming” 25
after me, whose sandal I am not worthy to untie.’ Brothers and 26
sisters, descendants of Abraham, and all those among you who worship God, it was to us that the message of this salvation was 27
sent. The people of Jerusalem and their leaders, failing to recognize Jesus, and not understanding the utterances of the prophets that are read every Sabbath, fulfilled them by condemning him. 28
They found no ground at all for putting him to death, and yet demanded his execution from Pilate; and, after carrying out every- 29
thing written about him, they took Jesus down from the cross, and laid him in a tomb. But God raised him from the dead; and 30
he appeared for many days to those who had gone up with him from Galilee to Jerusalem, and who are now witnesses for him to 31
the people. We also have good news to tell you, about the promise made to our ancestors — That our children have had this promise 32
completely fulfilled to them by God, by his raising Jesus. That is just what is said in the second Psalm — 33

‘You are my Son; this day I have become your Father.’

34 As to his raising Jesus from the dead, never again to return to corruption, this is what is said —

‘I will give to you the sacred promises made to David;’

35 And, therefore, in another Psalm it is said —

‘You will not give up the Holy One to undergo corruption.’

36 David, after obediently doing God’s will in his own time, ‘fell asleep and was laid by the side of his ancestors, and did undergo corruption; but Jesus, whom God raised from the dead, did not
37 undergo corruption. I would, therefore, like you to know, friends,
38 that through Jesus forgiveness of sins is being proclaimed to you,
39 and that, in union with him, everyone who believes in him is absolved from every sin from which under the law of Moses you
40 could not be absolved. Beware, therefore, that what is said in the prophets does not come true of you —

41 ‘Look, you despisers, and wonder, and perish;

For I am doing a deed in your days —

A deed which, though told you in full, you will never believe.’”

42 As Paul and Barnabas were leaving the synagogue, the people begged for a repetition of this teaching on the next Sabbath. After the congregation had dispersed, many of the Jews, and of the converts who joined in their worship, followed Paul and Barnabas, who talked with them and urged them to continue to rely on the loving kindness of God.

44 On the following Sabbath, almost all the city gathered to hear
45 God’s message. But the sight of the crowds of people filled the minds of the Jews with jealousy, and they kept contradicting
46 Paul’s statements in violent language. Then Paul and Barnabas spoke out fearlessly, and said:

“It was necessary that the message of God should be told to you first; but, since you reject it and reckon yourselves not worthy of the eternal life — we turn to the Gentiles! For this is the Lord’s command to us —

‘I have destined you for a light to the Gentiles,
A means of salvation to the ends of the earth.’”

48 On hearing this, the Gentiles were glad and extolled God’s message; and all those who had been enrolled for eternal life became

believers in Christ; and the Lord's message was carried through- 49
 out that district. But the Jews incited the women of high social 50
 standing who worshiped with them, and the leading men of the
 town, and started a persecution against Paul and Barnabas, and
 drove them out of their neighborhood. They, however, shook the 51
 dust off their feet in protest, and went to Iconium, leaving the 52
 disciples full of joy and of the Holy Spirit.

The same thing occurred in Iconium, where Paul and Barnabas 14
 went into the Jewish synagogue, and spoke in such a way that a
 great number of both Jews and Greeks believed in Christ. But 2
 the Jews who refused to believe stirred up the Gentiles, and poi-
 soned their minds against the Lord's followers. Therefore Paul 3
 and Barnabas spent a long time there, and spoke out fearlessly,
 relying on the Lord, who confirmed the message of his love by
 permitting signs and wonders to take place at their hands. But 4
 the townspeople were divided, some siding with the Jews, some
 with the apostles; and, when there was an attempt on the part 5
 of both Gentiles and Jews, with their leaders, to resort to violence
 and to stone them, the apostles heard of it, and took refuge in 6
 Lystra and Derbe, towns in Lycaonia, and in the district around,
 and there they continued to tell the good news. 7
 In the streets of Lystra there used to sit a man who had no power 8
 in his feet; he had been lame from his birth, and had never walked.
 This man was listening to Paul speaking, when Paul, looking in- 9
 tently at him, and seeing that he had the faith to be healed, said 10
 loudly: "Stand upright on your feet."

The man leaped up, and began walking about, and the crowd, 11
 seeing what Paul had done, called out in the Lycaonian language:
 "The Gods have come down to us in human form." So they called 12
 Barnabas 'Zeus,' and Paul 'Hermes,' because he took the lead in
 speaking; and the priest of Zeus-beyond-the-Walls, accompanied 13
 by the crowd, brought bullocks and garlands to the gates, with the
 intention of offering sacrifices. But, when the apostles Barnabas 14
 and Paul heard of it, they tore their clothes and rushed out into
 the crowd.

"Friends, why are you doing this?" they shouted. "We are 15
 only people like yourselves, and we have come with the good
 news that you should turn away from these follies to a living

16 God, 'who made the heavens, the earth, the sea, and everything
17 that is in them.' In bygone times he permitted all the nations to
18 go their own ways. Yet he has not failed to give you, in the good
19 he does, some revelation of himself — sending you from heaven
20 rain and fruitful seasons, and gladdening your hearts with
21 plenty and good cheer." Even with this appeal they could
22 hardly restrain the people from offering sacrifice to them.

19 Presently, however, there came some Jews from Antioch, and
Iconium who, after they had won over the people, stoned Paul,
20 and dragged him out of the town, thinking him to be dead. But,
when the disciples had gathered around him, he got up and went
back into the town; the next day he went with Barnabas to Derbe.
21 After telling the good news throughout that town, and making
a number of converts, they returned to Lystra, Iconium, and An-
22 tioch, reassuring the minds of the disciples, urging them to re-
main true to the faith, and showing that it is only through many
23 troubles that we can enter the kingdom of God. They also ap-
pointed officers for them in every church, and, after prayer and
fasting, commended them to the Lord in whom they had learned
24 to believe. Paul and Barnabas then went through Pisidia, and
25 came into Pamphylia, and, after telling the message at Perga,
26 went down to Attaleia. From there they sailed to Antioch — the
27 place where they had been committed to the gracious care of God
for the work which they had now finished. After their arrival,
they gathered the church together, and gave an account of all that
28 God had helped them to do, and especially how he had opened
to the Gentiles the door of faith; and at Antioch they stayed with
the disciples for a considerable time.

15 But certain persons came down from Judea, and began to teach
the Lord's followers that, unless they were circumcised, in ac-
cordance with the custom required by Moses, they could not be
2 saved. This gave rise to a serious dispute, and much discussion,
between Paul and Barnabas and these people, and it was there-
fore settled that Paul and Barnabas and others of their number
should go up to Jerusalem, to consult the apostles and officers of
the church about the matter under discussion.

3 The church, therefore, sent them on their journey, and they made
their way through Phoenicia and Samaria, telling the story of the

conversion of the Gentiles, to the great joy of all the followers. On their arrival at Jerusalem, they were welcomed by the church, as well as by the apostles and the officers, and gave an account of all that God had helped them to do. Some of the Pharisees' party, however, who had become believers in Christ, came forward and declared that they were bound to circumcise converts and to direct them to observe the law of Moses. The apostles and the officers of the church held a meeting to consider this question. After much discussion, Peter rose and said:

"You, my friends, know well that long ago God singled me out — that through my lips the Gentiles should hear the message of the good news, and become believers in Christ. Now God, who reads all hearts, declared his acceptance of the Gentiles, by giving them the Holy Spirit, just as he did to us. He made no distinction between them and us, when he purified their hearts by their faith. Why, then, do you now provoke God, by putting on the necks of these disciples a yoke which neither our ancestors nor we were able to bear? No, it is through the loving kindness of the Lord Jesus that we, just as they do, believe that we have been saved."

Every voice in the assembly was hushed, as they listened to Barnabas and Paul, while they gave an account of all the signs and wonders which God had shown among the Gentiles through them. After they had finished speaking, James addressed the Council.

"Friends," he began, "hear what I have to say. Simon has described the manner in which God first visited the Gentiles, in order to take from among them a people to bear his name. And that is in harmony with the words of the prophets, where they say —

"After this I will return;

And I will rebuild the house of David which has fallen —

Its ruins I will rebuild,

And will set it up once more;

That so the rest of mankind may earnestly seek the Lord

—

Even all the Gentiles on whom my name has been bestowed."

Says the Lord, as he does these things, foreknown from of old.'

19 In my judgment, therefore, we should not add to the difficulties
20 of those Gentiles who are turning to God, but we should write
to them to abstain from food that has been polluted by being sac-
21 rificed to idols, from impurity, from eating the flesh of strangled
animals, and from blood. For in every town, for generations past,
there have been those who preach Moses, read as he is in the Syn-
agogues every Sabbath.”

22 It was then decided by the apostles and the officers, with the
assent of the whole church, to choose some of their number, and
send them to Antioch with Paul and Barnabas. Those chosen were
Judas (called Barsabas) and Silas, who were leaders among the
23 community. They were bearers of the following letter —

“The apostles, and the followers who are the officers of the
church, send their greetings to the followers of the Lord
24 of Gentile birth in Antioch, Syria, and Cilicia. As we had
heard that some of our number had upset you by their as-
sertions, and unsettled your minds — without instructions
25 from us — We met and decided to choose certain men and
send them to you with our dear friends Barnabas and Paul,
26 who have risked their lives for the name of our Lord, Je-
sus Christ. We are accordingly sending Judas and Silas,
27 and they will tell you by word of mouth what we are now
writing. We have, therefore, decided, under the guidance
28 of the Holy Spirit, to lay no further burden on you beyond
these necessary conditions — That you abstain from food
29 offered to idols, from blood, from eating the flesh of stran-
gled animals, and from impurity. If you guard yourselves
against such things, it will be well with you. Farewell.”

30 So the bearers of this letter were sent on their way, and went down
31 to Antioch. There they called a meeting of all the followers, and
delivered the letter, the reading of which caused great rejoicing by
32 its encouraging contents. Judas and Silas, who were themselves
prophets, further encouraged the them by many an address, and
33 strengthened their faith. After some stay, they were dismissed
with kind farewells from the followers, and returned to those who
had sent them.

35 Paul and Barnabas, however, remained in Antioch, where they
taught and, with the help of many others, told the good news of
36 the Lord’s message. Some time after this, Paul said to Barnabas:

“Let us go back and visit the Lord’s followers in every town in which we have told the Lord’s message, and see how they are prospering.” Barnabas wished to take with them John, whose other name was Mark; but Paul felt that they ought not to take with them the man who had deserted them in Pamphylia, and had not gone on with them to their work. This caused such unpleasant feeling between them that they parted ways, Barnabas taking Mark and sailing for Cyprus, while Paul chose Silas for his companion and, after he had been committed by the followers to the gracious care of the Lord, started on his journey and went through Syria and Cilicia, strengthening the churches in the faith.

Among other places Paul went to Derbe and Lystra. At the latter place they found a disciple, named Timothy, whose mother was a Jewess who had become a believer in Christ, while his father was a Greek, and who was well spoken of by the followers of the Lord in Lystra and Iconium. Wishing to take this man with him on his journey, Paul caused him to be circumcised out of consideration for the Jews in that neighborhood, for they all knew that his father had been a Greek. As they traveled from town to town, they gave the followers the decisions which had been reached by the apostles and officers of the church at Jerusalem, for them to observe.

So the churches grew stronger in the faith, and increased in numbers from day to day.

They next went through the Phrygian district of Galatia, but were restrained by the Holy Spirit from delivering the message in Roman Asia. When they reached the borders of Mysia, they attempted to go into Bithynia, but the Spirit of Jesus did not permit them. Passing through Mysia, they went down to Troas; and there one night Paul saw a vision. A Macedonian was standing and appealing to him — ‘Come over to Macedonia and help us.’ So, immediately after Paul had seen the vision, we looked for an opportunity to cross over to Macedonia, concluding that God had summoned us to tell the good news to the people there.

Accordingly we set sail from Troas, and ran before the wind to Samothrace, reaching Neapolis the next day. From there we made our way to Philippi, which is the principal city of that part of Macedonia, and also a Roman Settlement.

13 In that city we spent several days. On the Sabbath we went out-
side the gate to the riverside, where we supposed there would
14 be a place of prayer; and we sat down and talked to the women
Lydia, belonging to Thyatira, a dealer in purple cloth, who was
accustomed to join in the worship of God. The Lord touched this
15 woman's heart, so that she gave attention to the message deliv-
ered by Paul, and, when she and her household had been bap-
tized, she urged us to become her guests.

"Since you have shown your conviction," she said, "that I really
am a believer in the Lord, come and stay in my house." And she
insisted on our doing so.

16 One day, as we were on our way to the place of prayer, we
were met by a girl possessed by a divining spirit, who made large
17 profits for her masters by fortune-telling. This girl followed Paul
and the rest of us, calling: "These men are servants of the most
high God, and they are bringing you news of a way to salvation."
18 She had been doing this for several days, when Paul, much vexed,
turned and said to the spirit within her: "In the name of Jesus
Christ I command you to leave her." That very moment the spirit
left her.

19 When her masters saw that there was no hope of further profit
from her, they seized Paul and Silas, dragged them into the public
20 square to the authorities, and took them before the Magistrates.

"These men are causing a great disturbance in our town," they
21 complained; "They are Jews, and they are teaching customs
which it is not right for us, as Romans, to sanction or adopt."

22 The mob rose as one person against them, and the Magistrates
stripped them of their clothing and ordered them to be beaten
23 with rods. After beating them severely, the Magistrates put them
in prison, with orders to the jailer to keep them in safe custody.
24 On receiving so strict an order, the Governor put them into the
inner cell, and secured their feet in the stocks. About midnight,
25 while Paul and Silas were praying and singing hymns to God, and
while the prisoners were listening to them, suddenly there was an
26 earthquake of such violence that the jail was shaken to its founda-
tions; all the doors flew open, and all the prisoners' chains were
27 loosened. Roused from his sleep, and seeing the prison doors
open, the Governor drew his sword intending to kill himself, in

the belief that the prisoners had escaped. But Paul called out loudly: "Do not harm yourself; we are all here." 28

Calling for a light, the Governor rushed in, and flung himself trembling at the feet of Paul and Silas. Then he led them out, and said: "What must I do to be saved?" 29 30

"Believe in Jesus, our Lord," they replied, "and you will be saved, you and your household too." Then they spoke to him of God's message, and to all his household as well. And that very hour of the night he took them and washed their wounds, and he himself and everyone belonging to him were baptized without delay. Afterwards he took them up to his house and set before them something to eat, rejoicing that he, with all his household, had come to believe in God. 31 32 33 34

In the morning the Magistrates sent the police with an order for the men to be discharged. The jailer told Paul of his instructions. "The Magistrates have sent an order for your discharge," he said, "so you had better leave the place at once and go quietly away." 35 36

But Paul's answer to them was: "They have flogged us in public without trial, though we are Roman citizens, and they have put us in prison, and now they are for sending us out secretly! No, indeed! Let them come and take us out themselves." The police reported his words to the Magistrates, who, on hearing that Paul and Silas were Roman citizens, were alarmed, and went to the prison, and did their best to conciliate them. Then they took them out, and begged them to leave the city. When Paul and Silas left the prison, they went to Lydia's house, and, after they had seen the Lord's followers, and encouraged them, they left the place. 37 38 39 40

After passing through Amphipolis and Apollonia, Paul and Silas came to Thessalonica. Here the Jews had a synagogue; and, following his usual custom, Paul joined them, and for three Sabbaths addressed them, drawing his arguments from the scriptures. He laid before them and explained that the Christ must undergo suffering and rise from the dead; and "It is this man," he declared, "who is the Christ — this Jesus about whom I am telling you." 17 2 3

4 Some of the people were convinced, and threw in their lot with Paul and Silas, as did also a large body of Greeks who were accustomed to join in the Jewish services, and a great number of leading women. But the Jewish leaders, becoming jealous, engaged some worthless fellows from the streets, and, getting a mob together, kept the city in an uproar. They attacked Jason's house, with the intention of bringing Paul and Silas before the Popular Assembly; and, not finding them there, they proceeded to drag Jason and some of the Lord's followers before the city magistrates, shouting out:

7 "These men, who have turned the world upside down, have now come here, and have been harbored by Jason! They say that some one else is king — a man called Jesus!"

8 On hearing this, the people and the city magistrates were much concerned; and, before letting them go, they took bail from Jason and the others. That very night the followers sent Paul and Silas off to Beroea; and on reaching that place, they went to the Jewish synagogue. These Jews of Beroea were better disposed than those in Thessalonica, for they welcomed the message with great readiness, and daily examined the scriptures to see if what was said was true. As a consequence, many of them became believers in Christ, besides a considerable number of Greek women of position, and of men also. But, when the Jewish leaders in Thessalonica found out that God's message had been delivered by Paul at Beroea, they came there too, exciting and disturbing the minds of the people. The followers immediately arranged for Paul to go away to the coast, but both Silas and Timothy stayed behind in Beroea. The friends who escorted Paul took him as far as Athens, and, after receiving a message for Silas and Timothy to join him as quickly as possible, they started on their return.

16 While Paul was waiting for them at Athens, his heart was stirred at seeing the whole city full of idols. So he argued in the synagogue with the Jews and with those who joined in their worship, as well as daily in the public Square with those who happened to be there. Among others, some Epicurean and Stoic Philosophers joined issue with him. Some asked "What is this prater wanting to make out?", while others said "He seems to be a preacher of foreign Deities." (This was because he was telling

the good news about Jesus and the resurrection). So they laid 19
hold of him and took him to the Court of Areopagus.

"May we hear," they asked, "what new teaching this is which you 20
are giving? For you are bringing some strange things to our notice, and we should like to know what they mean." (All Athenians 21
and the foreigners staying in the city found no time for anything else but telling, or listening to, the last new thing.)

So Paul took his stand in the middle of the Court, and said — 22
"People of Athens, on every hand I see signs of your being very devout. For as I was going about, looking at your sacred shrines, 23
I came upon an altar with this inscription — 'To an Unknown God.' What, therefore, you worship in ignorance, that I am now proclaiming to you. The God who made the world and all things 24
that are in it — he, Lord as he is of heaven and Earth, does not live in temples made by hands, neither do human hands minister to 25
his wants, as though he needed anything, since he himself gives, to all, life, and breath, and all things. He made all races of the 26
earth's surface — fixing a time for their rise and fall, and the limits of their settlements — That they might search for God, if by any 27
means they might feel their way to him and find him. And yet he is not really far from any one of us; for in him we live and move 28
and are. To use the words of some of your own poets —

'His offspring, too, are we.'

Therefore, as the offspring of God, we must not think that the 29
Deity has any resemblance to anything made of gold, or silver, or stone — a work of human art and imagination. True, God looked 30
with indulgence on the days of people's ignorance, but now he is announcing to everyone everywhere the need for repentance, because he has fixed a day on which he intends to 'judge the 31
world with justice,' by a man whom he has appointed — and of this he has given all people a pledge by raising this man from the dead."

On hearing of a resurrection of the dead, some began jeer- 32
ing, but others said that they wanted to hear what he had to say about that another time. And so Paul left the Court. There were, 33
however, some people who joined him, and became believers in Christ. Among them were Dionysius, a member of the Court of 34
Areopagus, a woman named Damaris, and several others.

18 On leaving Athens, Paul next went to Corinth. There he met
2 a Jew of the name of Aquila, from Pontus, who, with his wife
Priscilla, had lately come from Italy, in consequence of the order
which had been issued by the Emperor Claudius for all Jews to
3 leave Rome. Paul paid them a visit, and, since their trade was
the same as his, he stayed and worked with them — their trade
4 was tent-making. Every Sabbath Paul gave addresses in the syn-
agogue, trying to convince both Jews and Greeks.

5 But, when Silas and Timothy had come down from Macedonia,
Paul devoted himself entirely to delivering the message, earnestly
maintaining before the Jews that Jesus was the Christ. However,
6 as they set themselves against him and became abusive, Paul
shook his clothes in protest and said to them: "Your blood be on
your own heads. My conscience is clear. From this time forward I
will go to the Gentiles."

7 So he left, and went to the house of a certain Titius Justus, who
had been accustomed to join in the worship of God, and whose
8 house was next door to the synagogue. Crispus, the synagogue
leader, came to believe in the Lord, and so did all his household;
and many of the Corinthians, as they listened to Paul, became
9 believers in Christ and were baptized. One night the Lord said to
Paul, in a vision: "Have no fear, but continue to speak, and refuse
10 to be silenced; for I am with you, and no one will do you harm,
11 for I have many people in this city." So he settled there for a year
and a half, and taught God's message among the people.

12 While Gallio was governor of Greece, some of the Jewish lead-
ers made a combined attack on Paul, and brought him before the
13 Governor's Bench, charging him with persuading people to wor-
ship God in a way forbidden by the law. Just as Paul was on the
14 point of speaking, Gallio said to them:

"If this were a case of misdemeanor or some serious crime,
there would be some reason for my listening patiently to you; but,
15 since it is a dispute about words, and names, and your own law,
you must see to it yourselves. I do not choose to be a judge in such
matters."

16 Saying this, he drove them back from the Bench. Then they all
17 set on Sosthenes, the synagogue leader, and beat him in front of
the Bench, but Gallio did not trouble himself about any of these
things.

Paul remained there some time after this, and then took leave 18
of the followers, and sailed to Syria with Priscilla and Aquila, but
not before his head had been shaved at Cenchreae, because he
was under a vow. They put into Ephesus, and there Paul, leav- 19
ing his companions, went into the synagogue and addressed the
Jews. When they asked him to prolong his stay, he declined, say- 20
ing however, as he took his leave, "I will come back again to you,
please God," and then set sail from Ephesus. On reaching Cae- 21
sarea, he went up to Jerusalem and exchanged greetings with the
church, and then went down to Antioch. After making some stay 22
in Antioch, he set out on a tour through the Phrygian district of
Galatia, strengthening the faith of all the disciples as he went. 23

Meanwhile there had come to Ephesus an Alexandrian Jew, 24
named Apollos, an eloquent man, who was well-versed in the
scriptures. He had been well-instructed in the cause of the Lord, 25
and with burning zeal he spoke of, and taught carefully, the facts
about Jesus, though he knew of no baptism but John's. This man 26
began to speak out fearlessly in the synagogue; and when Priscilla
and Aquila heard him, they took him home and explained the
cause of God to him more carefully still. When he wanted to cross 27
to Greece, the followers furthered his plans, and wrote to the dis-
ciples there to welcome him. On his arrival he proved of great
assistance to those who had, through the loving kindness of God,
become believers in Christ, for he vigorously confuted the Jews, 28
publicly proving by the scriptures that Jesus was the Christ.
While Apollos was at Corinth, Paul passed through the inland 19
districts of Roman Asia, and went to Ephesus. There he found
some disciples, of whom he asked: "Did you, when you became 2
believers in Christ, receive the Holy Spirit?"

"No," they answered, "we did not even hear that there was a
Holy Spirit."

"What then was your baptism?" Paul asked. "John's baptism 3
was a baptism on repentance," rejoined Paul, "and John told the
people (speaking of the 'one coming; after him) that they should 4
believe in him — that is in Jesus."

On hearing this, they were baptized into the faith of the Lord 5
Jesus, and, after Paul had placed his hands on them, the Holy 6

7 Spirit descended on them, and they began to speak with ‘tongues’
and to preach. There were about twelve of them in all.

8 Paul went to the synagogue there, and for three months spoke
out fearlessly, giving addresses and trying to convince his hear-
9 ers, about the kingdom of God. Some of them, however, hard-
ened their hearts and refused to believe, denouncing the cause be-
fore the people. So Paul left them and withdrew his disciples, and
10 gave daily addresses in the lecture-hall of Tyrannus. This went
on for two years, so that all who lived in Roman Asia, Jews and
Greeks alike, heard the Lord’s message.

11 God did miracles of no ordinary kind by Paul’s hands; so that
12 people would carry home to the sick handkerchiefs or aprons that
had touched his body, and their diseases would leave them and
13 the wicked spirits go out of them. An attempt was made by some
itinerant Jews, who were exorcists, to use the name of the Lord
Jesus over those who had wicked spirits in them.

14 “I order you,” they would say, “by the Jesus, whom Paul
preaches.” The seven sons of Sceva, a Jewish chief priest, were
15 doing this; but the wicked spirit answered them: “Jesus I
acknowledge, and Paul I know, but you — who are you?”

16 Then the man, in whom this wicked spirit was, sprang on
them, mastered both of them, and so completely overpowered
them, that they fled out of the house, stripped of their clothes,
17 and wounded. This incident came to the knowledge of all the
Jews and Greeks living at Ephesus; they were all awe-struck,
and the name of the Lord Jesus was held in the highest honor.
18 Many, too, of those who had become believers in Christ came
19 with a full confession of their practices; while a number of
people, who had practiced magic, collected their books and
burnt them publicly; and on reckoning up the price of these,
20 they found it amounted to fifty thousand silver coins. So
irresistibly did the Lord’s message spread and prevail.

21 Sometime after these events Paul resolved to go through Mace-
donia and Greece, and then make his way to Jerusalem. “And after
22 I have been there,” he said, “I must visit Rome also.” So he sent
to Macedonia two of his helpers, Timothy and Erastus, while he
himself stayed for some time longer in Roman Asia.

Just about that time a great disturbance arose about the cause. 23
 A silversmith named Demetrius, who made silver models of the 24
 shrine of Artemis, and so gave a great deal of work to the arti-
 sans, got these men together, as well as the workmen engaged in 25
 similar occupations, and said:

“Men, you know that our prosperity depends on this work, and 26
 you see and hear that not only at Ephesus, but in almost the whole
 of Roman Asia, this Paul has convinced and won over great num-
 bers of people, by his assertion that those Gods which are made 27
 by hands are not Gods at all. So that not only is this business
 of ours likely to fall into discredit, but there is the further dan-
 ger that the Temple of the great Goddess Artemis will be thought
 nothing of, and that she herself will be deprived of her splendor
 — though all Roman Asia and the whole world worship her.”

When they heard this, the men were greatly enraged, and be- 28
 gan shouting — “Great is Artemis of the Ephesians!” The com- 29
 motion spread through the whole city, and the people rushed
 together into the amphitheater, dragging with them Gaius and
 Aristarchus, two Macedonians who were Paul’s traveling compan- 30
 ions. Paul wished to go into the amphitheater and face the
 people, but the disciples would not let him, while some of the 31
 chief religious officials of the province, who were friendly to him,
 sent repeated entreaties to him not to trust himself inside. Mean- 32
 while some were shouting one thing and some another, for the
 Assembly was all in confusion, most of those present not even
 knowing why they had met. But some of the crowd prompted 33
 Alexander, whom several of the Jewish leaders had pushed to the
 front, and he waved his hand to show that he wanted to speak in
 their defense to the people. However, when they recognized him 34
 as a Jew, one cry broke from them all, and they continued shout-
 ing for two hours — “Great is Artemis of the Ephesians!”

When the Recorder had succeeded in quieting the crowd, he 35
 said: “People of Ephesus, who is there, I ask you, who needs to
 be told that this city of Ephesus is the Warden of the Temple of
 the great Artemis, and of the statue which fell down from Zeus?
 As these are undeniable facts, you ought to keep calm and do 36
 nothing rash; for you have brought these men here, though they 37
 are neither robbers of Temples nor blasphemers of our Goddess.
 If, however, Demetrius and the artisans who are acting with him 38
 have a charge to make against anyone, there are court days and

39 there are Magistrates; let both parties take legal proceedings. But
if you want anything more, it will have to be settled in the regular
40 Assembly. For I tell you that we are in danger of being proceeded
against for today's riot, there being nothing to account for it; and
in that case we will be at a loss to give any reason for this disorderly
gathering."

41 With these words he dismissed the Assembly.

20 When the uproar had ceased, Paul sent for the disciples, and,
with encouraging words, bade them goodbye, and started on his
2 journey to Macedonia. After going through those districts and
speaking many encouraging words to the disciples, he went into
3 Greece, where he stayed three months. He was about to sail to
Syria, when he learned that a plot had been laid against him by
several of the Jewish leaders; so he decided to return by way of
4 Macedonia. He was accompanied by Sopater the son of Pyrrhus,
of Beroea, Aristarchus and Secundus from Thessalonica, Gaius
of Derbe, and Timothy, as well as by Tychicus and Trophimus of
5 Roman Asia. These people went to Troas and waited for us there;
6 while we ourselves sailed from Philippi after the Passover, and
joined them five days later at Troas, where we stayed for a week.
7 On the first day of the week, when we had met for the breaking
of bread, Paul, who was intending to leave the next day, began to
address those who were present, and prolonged his address until
8 midnight. There were a good many lamps in the upstairs room,
9 where we had met; and a young man named Eutychus, sitting
at the window, was gradually overcome with great drowsiness,
as Paul continued his address. At last, quite overpowered by his
drowsiness, he fell from the third story to the ground, and was
10 picked up for dead. But Paul went down, threw himself on him,
and put his arms around him.

11 "Do not be alarmed," he said, "he is still alive." Then he went
upstairs; and, after breaking and partaking of the bread, he talked
with them at great length until daybreak, and then left. Mean-
12 while they had taken the lad away alive, and were greatly com-
forted.

13 We started first, went on board ship, and sailed for Assos, in-
tending to take Paul on board there. This was by his own arrange-
14 ment, as he intended to go by land himself. So, when he met us

at Assos, we took him on board and went on to Mitylene. The 15
day after we had sailed from there, we arrived off Chios, touched
at Samos the following day, and the next day reached Miletus;
for Paul had decided to sail past Ephesus, so as to avoid spend- 16
ing much time in Roman Asia. He was making haste to reach
Jerusalem, if possible, by the Festival at the close of the Harvest.

From Miletus, however, he sent to Ephesus and invited the offi- 17
cers of the church to meet him; and, when they came, he said to 18
them: "You know well the life that I always led among you from
the very first day that I set foot in Roman Asia, serving the Lord,
as I did, in all humility, amid the tears and trials which fell to my 19
lot through the plots of some of the Jewish leaders. I never shrank
from telling you anything that could be helpful to you, or from 20
teaching you both in public and in private. I earnestly pointed
both Jews and Greeks to the repentance that leads to God, and 21
to faith in Jesus, our Lord. And now, under spiritual constraint, 22
I am here on my way to Jerusalem, not knowing what will hap-
pen to me there, except that in town after town the Holy Spirit 23
plainly declares to me that imprisonment and troubles await me.
But I count my life of no value to myself, if only I may complete 24
the course marked out for me, and the task that was allotted me
by the Lord Jesus — which was to declare the good news of the 25
love of God. And now, I tell you, I know that none of you will
ever see my face again — you among whom I have gone about 26
proclaiming the kingdom. Therefore I declare to you this day,
that my conscience is clear in regard to the fate of any of you, for
I have not shrunk from announcing the whole purpose of God 27
regarding you. Be watchful over yourselves, and over the whole 28
flock, of which the Holy Spirit has placed you in charge, to shep-
herd the church of God, which he won for himself at the cost of
his life. I know that, after my departure, merciless wolves will 29
get in among you, who will not spare the flock; and from among
yourselves, too, people will arise, who will teach perversions of 30
truth, so as to draw away the disciples after them. Therefore, be
on your guard, remembering how for three years, night and day, 31
I never ceased, even with tears, to warn each one of you. And 32
now I commend you to the Lord and to the message of his love
— a message which has the power to build up your characters,

33 and to give you your place among all those who have become
34 Christ's people. I have never coveted anyone's gold or silver or
35 clothing. You, yourselves, know that these hands of mine pro-
vided not only for my own wants, but for my companions also. I
left nothing undone to show you that, laboring as I labored, you
ought to help the weak, and to remember the words of the Lord
Jesus, how he said himself — 'It is more blessed to give than to
36 receive.'" When Paul had finished speaking, he knelt down and
37 prayed with them all. All were in tears; and throwing their arms
38 around Paul's neck, they kissed him again and again, grieving
most of all over what he had said — that they would never see his
face again. Then they escorted him to the ship.

21 When we had torn ourselves away and had set sail, we ran before
the wind to Cos; the next day we came to Rhodes, and from there
2 to Patara, where we found a ship crossing to Phoenicia, and went
3 on board and set sail. After sighting Cyprus and leaving it on the
left, we sailed to Syria, and put into Tyre, where the ship was to
4 discharge her cargo. There we found the disciples and stayed a
week with them. Speaking under the influence of the Spirit, they
5 warned Paul not to set foot in Jerusalem. However, when we had
come to the end of our visit, we went on our way, all the disciples
with their wives and children escorting us out of the city. We knelt
6 down on the beach, and prayed, and then said goodbye to one
another; after which we went on board, and they returned home.
7 After we had made the run from Tyre, we landed at Ptolemais,
and exchanged greetings with the followers there, and spent a
8 day with them. The next day we left, and reached Caesarea,
where we went to the house of Philip, the missionary, who was
9 one of 'the Seven,' and stayed with him. He had four unmarried
10 daughters, who had the gift of prophecy. During our visit,
which lasted several days, a prophet, named Agabus, came
11 down from Judea. He came to see us, and, taking Paul's belt,
and binding his own feet and hands with it, said: "This is what
the Holy Spirit says — 'The man to whom this belt belongs will
be bound like this by the religious authorities in Jerusalem, and
12 they will give him up to the Gentiles.'" When we heard that, we
and the people of the place began to entreat Paul not to go up to
Jerusalem.

It was then that Paul made the reply: “Why are you weeping and breaking my heart like this? For my part, I am ready not only to be bound, but even to suffer death at Jerusalem for the name of the Lord Jesus.” So, as he would not be persuaded, we said no more to him, only adding — “The Lord’s will be done.”

At the end of our visit, we made our preparations, and started on our way up to Jerusalem. Some of the disciples from Caesarea went with us, and brought Mnason with them, a Cypriot disciple of long standing, with whom we were to stay. On our arrival at Jerusalem, the followers of the Lord there gave us a hearty welcome; and the next day Paul went with us to see James, and all the officers of the church were present. After greeting them, Paul related in detail all that God had done among the Gentiles through his efforts; and, when they had heard it, they began praising God, and said to Paul:

“You see, brother, that those of our people who have become believers in Christ may be numbered by tens of thousands, and they are all naturally earnest in upholding the Jewish law. Now they have heard it said about you, that you teach all of our people in foreign countries to forsake Moses, for you tell them not to circumcise their children or even to observe Jewish customs. Well now, as they are certain to hear of your arrival, do what we are going to suggest. We have four men here, who have of their own accord put themselves under a vow. Join these men, share their purification, and bear their expenses, so that they may shave their heads; and then all will see that there is no truth in what they have been told about you, but that, on the contrary, you yourself rule your life in obedience to the Jewish law. As to the Gentiles who have become believers in Christ, we have sent our decision that they should avoid food offered to idols, and blood, and the flesh of strangled animals, and impurity.”

Paul joined the men, and the next day shared their purification, and went into the Temple, and gave notice of the expiration of the period of purification when the usual offering should have been made on behalf of each of them.

27 But, just as the seven days were drawing to a close, some of the Jewish people from Roman Asia caught sight of Paul in the Temple, and caused great excitement among all the people present, 28 by seizing Paul and shouting: "People of Israel! Help! This is the man who teaches everyone everywhere against our people, our law, and this place; and, what is more, he has actually brought 29 Greeks into the Temple and defiled this sacred place." (For they had previously seen Trophimus the Ephesian in Paul's company in the city, and were under the belief that Paul had taken him into the Temple.)

30 The whole city was stirred, and the people quickly collected, seized Paul, and dragged him out of the Temple, when the doors 31 were immediately shut. They were bent on killing him, when it was reported to the officer commanding the garrison, that all 32 Jerusalem was in commotion. He instantly got together some officers and soldiers, and charged down on the crowd, who, when they saw the commanding officer and his soldiers, stopped beating Paul. Then he went up to Paul, arrested him, ordered him to 33 be doubly chained, and proceeded to inquire who he was, and what he had been doing. Some of the crowd said one thing, and 34 some another; and, as he could get no definite reply because of the uproar, he ordered Paul to be taken into the barracks. When Paul 35 reached the steps, he was actually being carried by the soldiers, owing to the violence of the mob; for the people were following 36 in a mass, shouting out: "Kill him!"

37 Just as he was about to be taken into the Fort, Paul said to the commanding officer: "May I speak to you?"

38 "Do you know Greek?" asked the commanding officer. "Aren't you, then, the Egyptian who some time ago raised an insurrection and led the four thousand Bandits out into the wilderness?"

39 "No," said Paul, "I am a Jew of Tarsus in Cilicia, a citizen of a city of some note; and I beg you to give me permission to speak to the people."

40 The commanding officer gave his permission, and Paul, standing on the steps, made signs with his hand to the people, and, when comparative silence had been obtained, he said to them in 22 Hebrew: "Brothers and fathers, listen to the defense which I am 2 about to make." When they heard that he was speaking to them in Hebrew, they were still more quiet; and Paul went on:

“I am a Jew, from Tarsus in Cilicia, but I was brought up in 3
this city under the teaching of Gamaliel, and educated in accor-
dance with the strict system of our ancestral law. I was as zealous 4
in God’s service as any of you who are here today. In my per-
secution of this cause I did not stop even at the taking of life. I 5
put in chains, and imprisoned, men and women alike — And to
that the high priest himself and all the Council can testify. For I 6
had letters of introduction from them to our fellow Jews at Dam-
ascus, and I was on my way to that place, to bring those whom
I might find there prisoners to Jerusalem for punishment. While 7
I was still on my way, just as I was getting close to Damascus, 8
about midday, suddenly there flashed from the heavens a great
light all around me. I fell to the ground, and heard a voice say- 9
ing to me ‘Saul, Saul, why are you persecuting me?’ ‘Who are 10
you, Lord?’ I replied. Then the voice said ‘I am Jesus of Nazareth
whom you are persecuting.’ The men with me saw the light, but 11
did not hear the speaker’s voice. Then I said ‘What am I to do, 12
Lord?’ ‘Get up and go into Damascus,’ The Lord said to me, ‘and
there you will be told all that you have been appointed to do.’ In 13
consequence of that dazzling light I could not see, but my com-
panions held me by the hand, until I reached Damascus. There a 14
man named Ananias, a strict observer of our law, well spoken of
by all the Jewish inhabitants, came to see me. Standing close to 15
me, he said ‘Saul, my brother, recover your sight.’ And then and
there I recovered my sight and looked up at him. Then he said 16
‘The God of our ancestors has appointed you to learn his will,
and to see the righteous one, and to hear words from his lips; for 17
you will be a witness for him to all the world of what you have
just seen and heard. And now why wait any longer: Be baptized 18
at once, wash away your sins, and invoke his name. After my re-
turn to Jerusalem, while I was praying one day in the Temple, I fell 19
into a trance, and saw Jesus saying to me ‘Make haste and leave
Jerusalem at once, because they will not accept your testimony
about me.’ ‘Lord,’ I answered, ‘these people know that I used to 20
imprison and scourge, in synagogue after synagogue, those who
believed in you; and, when the blood of your martyr, Stephen,
was being shed, I was myself standing by, approving of his death,
and took charge of the clothes of those who were murdering him.
But Jesus said to me ‘Go; for I will send you to the Gentiles far 21
away.’”

22 Up to this point the people had been listening to Paul, but at
these words they called out: "Kill him! A fellow like this ought
23 not to have been allowed to live!" As they were shouting, tearing
24 off their clothes, and throwing dust in the air, the commanding
officer ordered Paul to be taken into the Fort, and directed that he
should be examined under the lash so that he might find out the
reason for their outcry against him.

25 But just as they had tied him up to be scourged, Paul said to
the captain standing near: "Is it legal for you to scourge a Roman
26 citizen, unconvicted?" On hearing this, the captain went and re-
ported it to the commanding officer. "Do you know what you are
27 doing?" he said. "This man is a Roman citizen." So the command-
ing officer went up to Paul and said: "Tell me, are you a Roman
citizen?"

28 "Yes," replied Paul. "I had to pay a heavy price for my position
as citizen," said the officer. "I am one by birth," rejoined Paul.

29 The men who were to have examined Paul immediately drew
back, and the officer, finding that Paul was a Roman citizen, was
alarmed at having put him in chains.

30 On the next day the commanding officer, wishing to find out
the real reason why Paul was denounced by the Jewish leaders,
had his chains taken off, and directed the chief priests and the
whole of the High Council to assemble, and then took Paul down
23 and brought him before them. Paul fixed his eyes on the Council,
and began:

"Brothers, for my part, I have always ordered my life before God,
2 with a clear conscience, up to this very day." At this, the high
priest Ananias ordered the men standing near to strike him on
3 the mouth; Paul turned to him and said:

"God will strike you, you whitewashed wall! Are you sitting
there to try me in accordance with law, and yet, in defiance of
4 law, order me to be struck?" The people standing near said to
Paul: "Do you know that you are insulting God's high priest?"

5 "I did not know, brothers, that it was the high priest," said Paul,
"for scripture says —

'Of the Ruler of your people you should speak no ill!'

Noticing that some of those present were Sadducees and others 6
Pharisees, Paul called out in the Council: "Brothers, I am a Phar-
isee and a son of Pharisees. It is on the question of hope for the
dead and of their resurrection that I am on my trial."

As soon as he said this, a dispute arose between the Pharisees 7
and the Sadducees; and there was a sharp division of opinion
among those present. (For Sadducees say there is no such thing 8
as a resurrection, and that there is neither angel nor spirit, while
Pharisees believe in both.) So a great uproar ensued, and some 9
of the Teachers of the law belonging to the Pharisees' party stood
up and hotly protested: "We find nothing whatever wrong in this
man. Suppose a spirit did speak to him, or an angel..." The dis- 10
pute was becoming so violent, that the commanding officer, fear-
ing that Paul would be torn in pieces between them, ordered the
Guard to go down and rescue him from them, and take him into
the Fort.

That night the Lord came and stood by Paul, and said: 11
"Courage! You have borne witness for me in Jerusalem and you
must bear witness in Rome also." In the morning some Jewish 12
men combined together, and took an oath that they would not
eat or drink until they had killed Paul. There were more than 13
forty in the plot; and they went to the chief priests and the
councillors, and said: "We have taken a solemn oath not to touch 14
food until we have killed Paul. So we want you now, with the
consent of the Council, to suggest to the commanding officer 15
that he should bring Paul down before you, as though you
intended to go more fully into his case; but, before he comes
here, we will be ready to make away with him."

However, the son of Paul's sister, hearing of the plot, went to 16
the Fort, and on being admitted, told Paul about it. Paul called 17
one of the Captains of the garrison and asked him to take the lad
to the commanding officer, as he had something to tell him. The
captain went with the lad to the commanding officer, and said: 18
"The prisoner Paul called me and asked me to bring this lad to
you, as he has something to tell you."

The commanding officer took the lad by the hand, and, step- 19
ping aside, asked what it was he had to tell him. "Some men 20
have agreed," answered the lad, "to ask you to bring Paul down
before the Council tomorrow, on the plea of your making further
inquiry into his case. But do not let them persuade you, for more 21

than forty of them are lying in wait for him, who have taken an oath that they will not eat or drink, until they have made away with him; and they are at this very moment in readiness, counting on your promise." The commanding officer then dismissed the lad, cautioning him not to mention to anybody that he had given him that information. Then he called two Captains, and ordered them to have two hundred soldiers ready to go to Caesarea, as well as seventy troopers and two hundred lancers, by nine o'clock that night, and to have horses ready for Paul to ride, so that they might take him safely to Felix, the Governor. He also wrote a letter along these lines:

26 'Claudius Lysias sends his compliments to His Excellency
27 Felix the Governor. The man whom I send with this had
been seized by some Jews, and was on the point of being
killed by them, when I came upon them with the force under
my command, and rescued him, as I learned that he
28 was a Roman citizen. Wanting to know exactly the ground
of the charges they made against him, I brought him before
29 their Council, when I found that their charges were connected
with questions of their own law, and that there was
nothing alleged involving either death or imprisonment.
30 Having, however, information of a plot against the man,
which was about to be put into execution, I am sending
him to you at once, and I have also directed his accusers to
prosecute him before you.'

31 The soldiers, in accordance with their orders, took charge of Paul
32 and conducted him by night to Antipatris; and on the next day,
leaving the troopers to go on with him, they returned to the Fort.
33 On arriving at Caesarea, the troopers delivered the letter to the
34 Governor, and brought Paul before him. As soon as Felix had read
the letter, he enquired to what province Paul belonged, and, learning
35 that he came from Cilicia, he said: "I will hear all you have to
say as soon as your accusers have arrived." And he ordered Paul
to be kept under guard in Herod's Government house.

24 Five days afterwards the high priest Ananias came down with
some of the councillors and a barrister named Tertullus. They laid
2 an information with the Governor against Paul; and, when the

hearing came on, Tertullus began his speech for the prosecution. "We owe it to your Excellency," he said, "that we are enjoying profound peace, and we owe it to your foresight that this nation is constantly securing reforms — advantages which we very gratefully accept at all times and places. But — not to be tedious — I beg you, with your accustomed fairness, to listen to a brief statement of our case. We have found this man a public pest; he is one who stirs up disputes among our people all the world over, and is a ringleader of the Nazarene heretics. He even attempted to desecrate the Temple itself, but we caught him; and you will be able, by examining him on all these points, to satisfy yourself as to the charges which we are bringing against him."

The Jewish crowd also joined in the attack and bore out his statements. On a sign from the Governor, Paul made this reply:

"Knowing, as I do, for how many years you have acted as judge to this nation, it is with confidence that I undertake my own defense. For you can easily verify that it is not more than twelve days ago that I went up to worship at Jerusalem, where my prosecutors never found me holding discussions with anyone, or causing a crowd to collect — either in the Temple, or in the Synagogues, or about the city; and they cannot establish the charges which they are now making against me. This, however, I do acknowledge to you, that it is as a believer in the cause which they call heretical, that I worship the God of my ancestors. At the same time, I believe everything that is in accordance with the law and that is written in the prophets; and I have a hope that rests in God — a hope which they also cherish — that there will one day be a resurrection of good and bad alike. This being so, I strive at all times to keep my conscience clear before both God and people. After some years' absence I had come to bring charitable gifts to my nation, and to make offerings; and it was while engaged in this that they found me in the Temple, after completing a period of purification, but not with any crowd or disorder. There were, however, some Jews from Roman Asia who ought to have been here before you, and to have made any charge that they may have against me — Or else let my opponents here say what they found wrong in me when I was before the Council, except as to the one sentence that I shouted out as I stood among them — 'It is about the resurrection of the dead that I am on my trial before you today'."

22 Felix, however, adjourned the case — though he had a fairly accurate knowledge of all that concerned the cause — with the promise: “When Lysias, the commanding officer, comes down, I will give my decision in your case.” So he gave orders to the captain in charge of Paul to keep him in custody, but to relax the regulations, and not to prevent any of his personal friends from attending to his wants.

24 Some days later Felix came with his wife Drusilla, who was herself a Jewess, and, sending for Paul, listened to what he had to say about faith in Christ Jesus. But, while Paul was speaking at length about righteousness, self-control, and the coming judgment, Felix became terrified, and interrupted him — “Go for the present, but, when I find an opportunity, I will send for you again.” He was hoping, too, for a bribe from Paul, and so he used to send for him frequently and talk with him. But, after the lapse of two years, Felix was succeeded by Porcius Festus; and, wishing to gain popularity with the Jewish leaders, he left Paul a prisoner.

25 Three days after Festus had arrived in his province, he left Caesarea and went up to Jerusalem. There the chief priests and the leading men among the Jews laid an information before him against Paul, and asked a favor of him, to Paul’s injury — to have Paul brought to Jerusalem. All the while they were plotting to make away with him on the road. But Festus answered that Paul was in prison at Caesarea, and that he himself would be leaving for that place shortly.

5 “So let the influential men among you,” he said, “go down with me, and if there is anything amiss in the man, charge him formally with it.” After staying among them some eight or ten days, Festus went down to Caesarea. The next day he took his seat on the Bench, and ordered Paul to be brought before him. On Paul’s appearance, the Jewish leaders who had come down from Jerusalem surrounded him, and made many serious charges, which they failed to establish. Paul’s answer to the charge was — ‘I have not committed any offense against the Jewish law, or the Temple, or the Emperor.’ But, as Festus wished to gain popularity with the Jews, he interrupted Paul with the question:

“Are you willing to go up to Jerusalem and be tried on these charges before me there?”

“No,” replied Paul, “I am standing at the Emperor’s court, 10
where I ought to be tried. I have not wronged the Jews, as you
yourself are well aware. If, however, I am breaking the law and 11
have committed any offense deserving death, I do not ask to es-
cape the penalty; but, if there is nothing in the accusations of these
people, no one has the power to give me up to them. I appeal to
the Emperor.”

Festus, after conferring with his Council, answered: “You have 12
appealed to the Emperor; to the Emperor you will go.”

Some days later King Agrippa and Bernice came down to Cae- 13
sarea, and paid a visit of congratulation to Festus; and, as they 14
were staying there for several days, Festus laid Paul’s case be-
fore the king. “There is a man here,” he said, “left a prisoner by
Felix, about whom, when I came to Jerusalem, the Jewish chief 15
priest and the councillors laid an information, demanding judg-
ment against him. My answer to them was, that it was not the 16
practice of Romans to give up anyone to their accusers until the
accused had met them face to face, and had also had an oppor-
tunity of answering the charges brought against them. So they 17
met here, and without loss of time I took my seat on the Bench
the very next day, and ordered the man to be brought before me.
But, when his accusers came forward, they brought no charge of 18
wrong-doing such as I had expected; but I found that there were 19
certain questions in dispute between them about their own reli-
gion, and about some dead man called Jesus, whom Paul declared
to be alive. And, as I was at a loss how to enquire into questions 20
of this kind, I asked Paul if he were willing to go up to Jerusalem,
and be put on trial there. Paul, however, appealed to have his 21
case reserved for the consideration of his August Majesty, so I or-
dered him to be detained in custody, until I could send him to the
Emperor.”

“I should like to hear this man myself,” Agrippa said to Festus. 22

“You will hear him tomorrow,” Festus answered.

So the next day, when Agrippa and Bernice had come in full 23
state and had entered the Audience Chamber, with the superior
officers and the principal people of the city, by the order of Festus
Paul was brought before them. Then Festus said: “King Agrippa, 24
and all here present, you see before you the man about whom the
whole Jewish people have applied to me, both at Jerusalem and
here, loudly asserting that he ought not to be allowed to live. I 25

found, however, that he had not done anything deserving death; so, as he had himself appealed to his August Majesty, I decided to
26 send him. But I have nothing definite to write about him to my Imperial Master; and for that reason I have brought him before you all, and especially before you, King Agrippa, that, after ex-
27 amining him, I may have something to write. For it seems to me absurd to send a prisoner, without at the same time stating the charges made against him.”

26 Turning to Paul, Agrippa said: “You are at liberty to speak for yourself.” Then Paul stretched out his hand and began his
2 defense. “I have been congratulating myself, King Agrippa,” he said, “that it is before you that I have to make my defense today, with regard to all the charges brought against me by my own peo-
3 ple, especially as you are so well-versed in all the customs and questions of the Jewish world. I beg you therefore to give me a
4 patient hearing. My life, then, from youth upwards, was passed, from the very first, among my own nation, and in Jerusalem, and
5 is within the knowledge of all Jews; and they have always known — if they choose to give evidence — that, in accordance with the very strictest form of our religion, I lived a true Pharisee. Even
6 now, it is because of my hope in the promise given by God to our ancestors that I stand here on my trial — A promise which
7 our twelve tribes, by earnest service night and day, hope to see fulfilled. It is for this hope, your Majesty, that I am accused —
8 and by Jews themselves! Why do you all hold it incredible that God should raise the dead? I myself, it is true, once thought it
9 my duty to oppose in every way the name of Jesus of Nazareth; and I actually did so at Jerusalem. Acting on the authority of
10 the chief priests, I myself threw many of the people of Christ into prison, and, when it was proposed to put them to death, I gave
11 my vote for it. Time after time, in every synagogue, I tried by punishments to force them to blaspheme. So frantic was I against
12 them, that I pursued them even to towns beyond our borders. It was while I was traveling to Damascus on an errand of this kind,
13 entrusted with full powers by the chief priests, that at midday, your Majesty, I saw right in my path, coming from the heavens, a light brighter than the glare of the sun, which shone all around me
14 and those traveling with me. We all fell to the ground, and then I heard a voice saying to me in Hebrew — ‘Saul, Saul, why are you persecuting me? By kicking against the goad you are punishing

yourself.' 'Who are you, Lord?' I asked. And the Lord said: "I am 15
 Jesus, whom you are persecuting; but get up and stand upright; 16
 for I have appeared to you in order to appoint you a servant and
 a witness of those revelations of me which you have already had,
 and of those in which I will yet appear to you, since I am choosing 17
 you out from your own people and from the Gentiles, to whom I
 now send you, to open their eyes, and to turn them from darkness 18
 to light, and from the power of Satan to God; so that they may re-
 ceive pardon for their sins, and a place among those who have
 become God's people, by faith in me.' After that, King Agrippa, 19
 I did not fail to obey the heavenly vision; on the contrary, first to 20
 those at Damascus and Jerusalem, and then through the whole of
 Judea, and to the Gentiles as well, I began to preach repentance
 and conversion to God, and a life befitting that repentance. This 21
 is why some men seized me in the Temple, and made attempts on
 my life. However I have received help from God to this very day, 22
 and so stand here, and bear my testimony to high and low alike
 — without adding a word to what the prophets, as well as Moses,
 declared should happen — That the Christ must suffer, and that, 23
 by rising from the dead, he was destined to be the first to bring
 news of light, not only to our nation, but also to the Gentiles."

While Paul was making this defense, Festus called out loudly: 24
 "You are mad, Paul; your great learning is driving you mad."

"I am not mad, your Excellency," he replied; "on the contrary, 25
 the statements that I am making are true and sober. Indeed, the 26
 king knows about these matters, so I speak before him without
 constraint. I am sure that there is nothing whatever of what I
 have been telling him that has escaped his attention; for all this 27
 has not been done in a corner. King Agrippa, do you believe the
 prophets? I know you do."

But Agrippa said to Paul: "You are soon trying to make a Chris- 28
 tian of me!"

"Whether it is soon or late," answered Paul, "I pray to God 29
 that not only you, but all who are listening to me, might today be- 30
 come just what I am myself — except for these chains!" Then the
 king rose, with the Governor and Bernice and those who had been
 sitting with them, and, after retiring, discussed the case among 31
 themselves. "There is nothing," they said, "deserving death or
 imprisonment in this man's conduct"; and, speaking to Festus, 32

Agrippa added: "The man might have been discharged, if he had not appealed to the Emperor."

- 27 As it was decided that we were to sail to Italy, Paul and some other prisoners were put in charge of a captain of the Augustan Guard, named Julius. We went on board a ship from Adramyttium, which was on the point of sailing to the ports along the coast of Roman Asia, and put to sea. Aristarchus, a Macedonian from Thessalonica, went with us. The next day we put in to Sidon, where Julius treated Paul in a friendly manner, and allowed him to go to see his friends and receive their hospitality. Putting to sea again, we sailed under the lee of Cyprus, because the wind was against us; and, after crossing the sea of Cilicia and Pamphylia, we reached Myra in Lycia. There the Roman officer found an Alexandrian ship on her way to Italy, and put us on board of her. For several days our progress was slow, and it was only with difficulty that we arrived off Cnidus. As the wind was still unfavorable when we came off Cape Salmone, we sailed under the lee of Crete, and with difficulty, by keeping close in shore, we reached a place called 'Fair Havens,' near which was the town of Lasea.
- 9 This had taken a considerable time, and sailing was already dangerous, for the Fast was already over; and so Paul gave this warning. "My friends," he said, "I see that this voyage will be attended with injury and much damage, not only to the cargo and the ship, but to our own lives also."
- 11 The Roman officer, however, was more influenced by the captain and the owner than by what was said by Paul. And, as the harbor was not a suitable one to winter in, the majority were in favor of continuing the voyage, in hope of being able to reach Phoenix, and winter there. Phoenix was a Cretan harbor, open to the north-east and south-east. So, when a light wind sprang up from the south, thinking that they had found their opportunity, they weighed anchor and kept along the coast of Crete, close in shore. But shortly afterwards a hurricane came down on us off the land — a north-easter, as it is called. The ship was caught by it and was unable to keep her head to the wind, so we had to give way and let her drive before it. Running under the lee of a small island called Cauda, we only just managed to secure the ship's

boat, and, after hoisting it on board, the men frapped the ship. 17
But, afraid of being driven on to the Syrtis Sands, they lowered
the yard, and then drifted. So violently were we tossed about by 18
the storm, that the next day they began throwing the cargo over-
board, and, on the following day, threw out the ship's tackle with 19
their own hands. As neither sun nor stars were visible for several 20
days, and, as the gale still continued severe, all hope of our being
saved was at last abandoned.

It was then, when they had gone a long time without food, 21
that Paul came forward, and said: "My friends, you should have
listened to me, and not have sailed from Crete and so incurred
this injury and damage. Yet, even as things are, I beg you not to 22
lose courage, for there will not be a single life lost among you —
only the ship. For last night an angel of the God to whom I belong, 23
and whom I serve, stood by me, and said — 'Have no fear, Paul;
you must appear before the Emperor, and God himself has given 24
you the lives of all your fellow voyagers.' Therefore, courage, my
friends! For I believe God, that everything will happen exactly as 25
I have been told. We will, however, have to be driven on some
island." 26

It was now the fourteenth night of the storm, and we were 27
drifting about in the Adriatic Sea, when, about midnight, the
sailors began to suspect that they were drawing near land. So 28
they took soundings, and found twenty fathoms of water. After
waiting a little, they took soundings again, and found fifteen
fathoms. Then, as they were afraid of our being driven on some 29
rocky coast, they let go four anchors from the stern, and longed
for daylight. The sailors wanted to leave the ship, and had 30
lowered the boat, on pretense of running out anchors from the
bows, when Paul said to the Roman officer and his men: 31
"Unless the sailors remain on board, you cannot be saved." So 32
the soldiers cut the ropes which held the boat, and let her drift
away. In the interval before daybreak Paul kept urging them all 33
to take something to eat.

"It is a fortnight today," he said, "that, owing to your anxiety,
you have gone without food, taking nothing. So I beg you to take 34
something to eat; your safety depends on it, for not one of you
will lose even a hair of his head." With these words he took some 35
bread, and, after saying the thanksgiving to God before them all,
broke it in pieces, and began to eat; and the men all felt cheered 36

37 and had something to eat themselves. There were about sev-
38 enty-six of us on board, all told. After satisfying their hunger,
they further lightened the ship by throwing the grain into the
39 sea. When daylight came, they could not make out what land it
was, but, observing a creek in which there was a beach, they con-
sulted as to whether they could run the ship safely into it. Then
40 they cast off, and abandoned the anchors, and at the same time
unlashed the gear of the steering oars, hoisted the foresail to the
41 wind, and made for the beach. They got, however, into a kind of
channel, and there ran the ship aground. The bows stuck fast and
could not be moved, while the stern began breaking up under the
42 strain. The advice of the soldiers was that the prisoners should be
killed, so that none of them could swim away and make their es-
43 cape. But the Roman officer, anxious to save Paul, prevented their
carrying out their intention, and ordered that those who could
swim should be the first to jump into the sea and try to reach the
44 shore; and that the rest should follow, some on planks, and oth-
ers on different pieces of the ship. In these various ways everyone
managed to get safely ashore.

28 When we were all safe, we found that the island was called
2 Malta. The island's people showed us marked kindness, for they
lit a fire and took us all under shelter, because it had come on to
3 rain and was cold. Paul had gathered a quantity of dry sticks and
laid them on the fire, when a poisonous snake, driven out by the
4 heat, fastened on his hand. When the islanders saw the creature
hanging from his hand, they said to one another: "Evidently this
man is a murderer, for though he has been saved from the sea,
5 Justice has not allowed him to live." However, Paul shook the
6 creature off into the fire and took no harm. The islanders were
expecting inflammation to set in, or that he would suddenly fall
dead; but, after waiting for a long time, and seeing that there was
nothing amiss with him, they changed their minds and said that
he was a God.
7 In that neighborhood there was an estate belonging to the Gov-
ernor of the island, whose name was Publius. He took us up to
his house, and for three days entertained us most courteously. It
8 happened that the father of Publius was lying ill of fever and
dysentery. So Paul went to see him; and, after praying, he placed

his hands on him and cured him. After this, all the people in the island who had any illness came to Paul, and were cured. They also presented us with many gifts, and when we set sail they put supplies of necessaries on board.

After three months, we set sail in a ship that had wintered in the island. She was an Alexandrian vessel, and had the Twin sons of Zeus for her figure-head. We put in at Syracuse and stayed there three days, and from there we worked to windward and so got to Rhegium. A day later a south wind sprang up and took us to Puteoli in two days. There we found some of the Lord's followers, and were urged to stay a week with them; after which we went on to Rome. The followers there had heard about us, and came out as far as the Market of Appius and the Three Taverns to meet us. At sight of them Paul thanked God and was much cheered. On our reaching Rome, Paul was allowed to live by himself, except for the soldier who was in charge of him.

Three days after our arrival, Paul invited the leading Jews to meet him; and, when they came, he said: "Brothers, although I had done nothing hostile to the interests of our nation or to our ancestral customs, yet I was sent from Jerusalem as a prisoner, and handed over to the Romans. The Romans, when they had examined me, were ready to release me, because there was nothing in my conduct deserving death. But, as the Jewish leaders opposed my release, I was compelled to appeal to the Emperor — not, indeed, that I had any charge to make against my own nation. This, then, is my reason for urging you to come to see me and talk with me; because it is for the sake of the hope of Israel that I am here in chains."

"We," was their reply, "have not had any letter about you from Judea, nor have any of our fellow Jews come and reported or said anything bad about you. But we will be glad to hear from you what your views are, for, with regard to this sect, we are well aware that it is spoken against on all sides."

They then fixed a day with him, and came to the place where he was staying, in even larger numbers, when Paul proceeded to lay the subject before them. He bore his testimony to the kingdom

of God, and tried to convince them about Jesus, by arguments drawn from the law of Moses and from the prophets — speaking
24 from morning until evening. Some were inclined to accept what
25 he said; others, however, rejected it. So, as they disagreed among themselves, they began to disperse, Paul adding only —

“True, indeed, was the declaration made by the Holy Spirit, through the prophet Isaiah to your ancestors —

26 ‘Go to this nation and say —

“You will hear with your ears without ever understanding,

And, though you have eyes, you will see without ever perceiving.”

27 For the mind of this nation has grown dense,

And their ears are dull of hearing,

Their eyes also have they closed;

Otherwise some day they might see with their eyes,

And with their ears they might hear,

And in their mind they might understand, and might turn —

And I might heal them.’

28 Understand, then, that this salvation of God was sent for the Gentiles; and they will listen.”

30 For two whole years Paul stayed in a house which he rented
31 for himself, welcoming all who came to see him, proclaiming the kingdom of God, and teaching about the Lord Jesus Christ, with perfect fearlessness, unmolested.

PAUL'S LETTER TO THE ROMANS

Introduction

TO ALL IN ROME WHO ARE DEAR TO GOD and have been called to be- 1
 come Christ's people, from Paul, a servant of Jesus Christ, who
 has been called to become an apostle, and has been set apart to
 tell God's good news. This good news God promised long ago 2
 through his prophets in the sacred scriptures, concerning his 3
 Son, Jesus Christ, our Lord; who, as to his human nature, was
 descended from David, but, as to the spirit of holiness within 4
 him, was miraculously designated Son of God by his resurrection
 from the dead. Through him we received the gift of the apostolic 5
 office, to win submission to the faith among all nations for the
 glory of his name. And among these nations are you — you who 6
 have been called to belong to Jesus Christ.
 May God, our Father, and the Lord Jesus Christ bless you and 7
 give you peace.

First, I thank my God through Jesus Christ about you all, be- 8
 cause the report of your faith is spreading throughout the world.
 God, to whom I offer the worship of my soul as I tell the good- 9
 ness of his Son, is my witness how constantly I mention you when
 I pray, asking that, if he be willing, I may some day at last find the 10
 way open to visit you. For I long to see you, in order to impart to 11
 you some spiritual gift and so give you fresh strength — or rather 12
 that both you and I may find encouragement in each other's faith.
 I want you to know, my friends, that I have many times intended 13
 coming to see you — but until now I have been prevented — that
 I might find among you some fruit of my labors, as I have already
 among the other nations.

Faith the Ground of Acceptance

14 I HAVE A DUTY TO BOTH THE GREEK and the barbarian, to both the
15 cultured and the ignorant. And so, for my part, I am ready to tell
the good news to you also who are in Rome.

16 For I am not ashamed of the good news; it is the power of God
which brings salvation to everyone who believes in Christ, to the
17 Jew first, but also to the Greek. For in it there is a revelation of the
divine righteousness resulting from faith and leading on to faith;
as scripture says — ‘Through faith the righteous will find life.’

18 So, too, there is a revelation from heaven of the divine wrath
against every form of ungodliness and wickedness on the part of
those people who, by their wicked lives, are stifling the truth. This
19 is so, because what can be known about God is plain to them; for
20 God himself has made it plain. For ever since the creation of the
universe God’s invisible attributes — his everlasting power and
divinity — are to be seen and studied in his works, so that people
21 have no excuse; because, although they learned to know God,
yet they did not offer him as God either praise or thanksgiving.
Their speculations about him proved futile, and their undiscern-
22 ing minds were darkened. Professing to be wise, they showed
23 themselves fools; and they transformed the glory of the immortal
God into the likeness of mortal humans, and of birds, and beasts,
and reptiles.

24 Therefore God abandoned them to impurity, letting them fol-
low the cravings of their hearts, until they dishonored their own
25 bodies; for they had substituted a lie for the truth about God,
and had revered and worshiped created things more than the
26 Creator, who is to be praised for ever. Amen. That, I say, is why
God abandoned them to degrading passions. Even the women
among them perverted the natural use of their bodies to the un-
27 natural; while the men, disregarding that for which women were
intended by nature, were consumed with passion for one another.
Men indulged in vile practices with men, and incurred in their
own persons the inevitable penalty for their perverseness.

28 Then, as they would not keep God before their minds, God
abandoned them to depraved thoughts, so that they did all kinds
29 of shameful things. They reveled in every form of wickedness,
evil, greed, vice. Their lives were full of envy, murder, quarreling,
30 treachery, malice. They became back-biters, slanderers, impious,

insolent, boastful. They devised new sins. They disobeyed their parents. They were undiscerning, untrustworthy, without natural affection or pity. Well aware of God's decree, that those who do such things deserve to die, not only are they guilty of them themselves, but they even applaud those who do them. 31 32

Therefore you have nothing to say in your own defense, whoever you are who set yourself up as a judge. In judging others you condemn yourself, for you who set yourself up as a judge do the very same things. And we know that God's judgment falls unerringly on those who do them. You who judge those that do such things and yet are yourself guilty of them — do you suppose that you of all people will escape God's judgment? Or do you think lightly of his abundant kindness, patience, and forbearance, not realizing that his kindness is meant to lead you to repentance? Hard-hearted and impenitent as you are, you are storing up for yourself wrath on the 'day of wrath,' when God's justice as a judge will be revealed; for 'he will give to everyone what their actions deserve.' To those who, by perseverance in doing good, aim at glory, honor, and all that is imperishable, he will give immortal life; while as to those who are factious, and disobedient to truth but obedient to evil, wrath and anger, distress and despair, will fall on every human being who persists in wrong-doing — on the Jew first, but also on the Greek. But there will be glory, honor, and peace for everyone who does right — for the Jew first, but also for the Greek, since God shows no partiality. All who, when they sin, are without law will also perish without law; while all who, when they sin, are under law, will be judged as being under law. It is not those who hear the words of a law that are righteous before God, but it is those who obey it that will be pronounced righteous. When Gentiles, who have no law, do instinctively what the law requires, they, though they have no law, are a law to themselves; for they show the demands of the law written on their hearts; their consciences corroborating it, while in their thoughts they argue either in self-accusation or, it may be, in self-defense — on the day when God passes judgment on people's inmost lives, as the good news that I tell declares that he will do through Christ Jesus. 2 3 4 5 6 7 8 9 10 11 12 13 14 15 16

But, perhaps, you bear the name of 'Jew,' and are relying on law, and boast of belonging to God, and understand his will, and, having been carefully instructed from the law, have learned to 17 18

19 appreciate the finer moral distinctions. Perhaps you are confident that you are a guide to the blind, a light to those who are in
 20 the dark, an instructor of the unintelligent, and a teacher of the childish, because in the law you possess the outline of all knowledge and truth. Why, then, you teacher of others, don't you teach
 21 yourself? Do you preach against stealing, and yet steal? Do you forbid adultery, and yet commit adultery? Do you loathe idols, and yet plunder temples? Boasting, as you do, of your law, do
 22 you dishonor God by breaking the law? For, as scripture says —
 23 'The Gentiles insult God's name because of you!' Circumcision has its value, if you are obeying the law. But, if you are a breaker of the law, your circumcision is no better than uncircumcision.
 24 If, then, an uncircumcised man pays regard to the requirements of the law, will not he, although not circumcised, be regarded by
 25 God as if he were? Indeed, the person who, owing to his birth, remains uncircumcised, and yet scrupulously obeys the law, will condemn you, who, for all your written law and your circumcision, are yet a breaker of the law. For a man who is only a Jew outwardly is not a real Jew; nor is outward bodily circumcision real circumcision. The real Jew is the person who is a Jew in soul;
 26 and the real circumcision is the circumcision of the heart, a spiritual and not a literal thing. Such a person wins praise from God, though not from people.

3 What is the advantage, then, of being a Jew? Or what is the good of circumcision? Great in every way. First of all, because the
 2 Jews were entrusted with God's utterances. What follows then? Some, no doubt, showed a want of faith; but will their want of
 3 faith make God break faith? Heaven forbid! God must prove true, though everyone prove a liar! As scripture says of God — 'That you may be pronounced righteous in what you say, and gain your cause when people would judge you.'

5 But what if our wrong-doing makes God's righteousness all the clearer? Will God be wrong in inflicting punishment? (I can
 6 but speak as a person.) Heaven forbid! Otherwise how can God judge the world?

7 But, if my falsehood redounds to the glory of God, by making his truthfulness more apparent, why am I like others, still condemned as a sinner? Why should we not say — as some people slanderously assert that we do say — 'Let us do evil that good may come'? The condemnation of such people is indeed just!

What follows, then? Are we Jews in any way superior to others? 9
 Not at all. Our indictment against both Jews and Greeks was that
 all alike were in subjection to sin. As scripture says — 10
 'There is not even one who is righteous,
 not one who understands, 11
 not one who is searching for God!
 They have all gone astray; 12
 they have one and all become depraved;
 there is no one who is doing good — no, not one!
 'Their throats are like opened graves; 13
 they deceive with their tongues.'
 'The venom of snakes lies behind their lips,'
 'And their mouths are full of bitter curses.' 14
 'Swift are their feet to shed blood. 15
 Distress and trouble dog their steps, 16
 and the path of peace they do not know.' 17
 'The fear of God is not before their eyes.' 18

Now we know that everything said in the law is addressed to 19
 those who are under its authority, in order that every mouth may
 be closed, and to bring the whole world under God's judgment.
 For 'no human being will be pronounced righteous before God' 20
 as the result of obedience to law; for it is law that shows what sin
 is.
 But now, quite apart from law, the divine righteousness stands 21
 revealed, and to it the law and the prophets bear witness — the
 divine righteousness which is bestowed, through faith in Jesus 22
 Christ, on all, without distinction, who believe in him. For all 23
 have sinned, and all fall short of God's glorious ideal, but, in his 24
 loving kindness, are being freely pronounced righteous through
 the deliverance found in Christ Jesus. For God set him before 25
 the world, to be, by the shedding of his blood, a means of recon-
 ciliation through faith. And this God did to prove his righteous-
 ness, and because, in his forbearance, he had passed over the sins
 that people had previously committed; as a proof, I repeat, at the 26
 present time, of his own righteousness, that he might be right-
 eous in our eyes, and might pronounce righteous the person who
 takes their stand on faith in Jesus.

- 27 What, then, becomes of our boasting? It is excluded. By what
 sort of law? A law requiring obedience? No, a law requiring faith.
- 28 For we conclude that a person is pronounced righteous on the
 29 ground of faith, quite apart from obedience to law. Or can it be
 that God is the God only of the Jews? Is not he also the God of the
 30 Gentiles? Yes, of the Gentiles also, since there is only one God,
 and he will pronounce those who are circumcised righteous as
 the result of faith, and also those who are uncircumcised on their
 showing the same faith.
- 31 Do we, then, use this faith to abolish law? Heaven forbid! No,
 we establish law.
- 4 What then, it may be asked, are we to say about Abraham, the
 2 ancestor of our nation? If he was pronounced righteous as the
 result of obedience, then he has something to boast of. Yes, but not
 3 before God. For what are the words of scripture? 'Abraham had
 faith in God, and his faith was regarded by God as righteousness.'
- 4 Now wages are regarded as due to the person who works, not as
 5 a favor, but as a debt; while, as for the person who does not rely
 on their obedience, but has faith in him who can pronounce the
 godless righteous, their faith is regarded by God as righteousness.
- 6 In precisely the same way David speaks of the blessing pronounced
 on the person who is regarded by God as righteous apart
 7 from actions — 'Blessed are those whose wrong-doings have
 8 been forgiven and over whose sins a veil has been drawn! Blessed
 9 the man whom the Lord will never regard as sinful!' Is this blessing,
 then, pronounced on the circumcised only or on the uncircumcised
 as well? We say that — 'Abraham's faith was regarded
 10 by God as righteousness.' Under what circumstances, then, did
 11 this take place? After his circumcision or before it? Not after, but
 before. And it was as a sign of this that he received the rite of
 circumcision — to show the righteousness due to the faith of an
 uncircumcised man — in order that he might be the father of all
 who have faith in God even when uncircumcised, so that they also
 12 may be regarded by God as righteous; as well as father of the circumcised
 — to those who are not only circumcised, but who also
 follow our father Abraham in that faith which he had while still
 13 uncircumcised. For the promise that he should inherit the world
 did not come to Abraham or his descendants through law, but
 14 through the righteousness due to faith. If those who take their
 stand on law are to inherit the world, then faith is robbed of its

meaning and the promise comes to nothing! Law entails punish- 15
 ment; but, where no law exists, no breach of it is possible. That 16
 is why everything is made to depend on faith: so that everything
 may be God's gift, and in order that the fulfillment of the promise
 may be made certain for all Abraham's descendants — not only
 for those who take their stand on the law, but also for those who
 take their stand on the faith of Abraham. (He is the Father of us
 all; as scripture says — 'I have made you the Father of many nations.' 17
 And this they do in the sight of that God in whom Abra-
 ham had faith, and who gives life to the dead, and speaks of what
 does not yet exist as if it did. With no ground for hope, Abraham, 18
 sustained by hope, put faith in God; in order that, in fulfillment
 of the words — 'So many will your descendants be,' he might
 become 'the Father of many nations.' Though he was nearly a 19
 hundred years old, yet his faith did not fail him, even when he
 thought of his own body, then utterly worn out, and remembered
 that Sarah was past bearing children. He was not led by want of 20
 faith to doubt God's promise. On the contrary, his faith gave him
 strength; and he praised God, in the firm conviction that what 21
 God has promised he is also able to carry out. And therefore his
 faith 'was regarded as righteousness.' Now these words — 'it was 22
 regarded as righteousness' — were not written with reference to
 Abraham only; but also with reference to us. Our faith, too, will 24
 be regarded by God in the same light, if we have faith in him who
 raised Jesus, our Lord, from the dead; for Jesus 'was given up 25
 to death to atone for our offenses,' and was raised to life that we
 might be pronounced righteous.

Therefore, having been pronounced righteous as the result of 5
 faith, let us enjoy peace with God through Jesus Christ, our Lord.
 It is through him that, by reason of our faith, we have obtained 2
 admission to that place in God's favor in which we not stand. So
 let us exult in our hope of attaining God's glorious ideal. And not 3
 only that, but let us also exult in our troubles; for we know that 4
 trouble develops endurance, and endurance strength of charac-
 ter, and strength of character hope, and that 'hope never disap- 5
 points.' For the love of God has filled our hearts through the Holy
 Spirit which was given us; seeing that, while we were still pow- 6
 erless, Christ, in God's good time, died on behalf of the godless.
 Even for an upright person scarcely anyone will die. For a really 7
 good person perhaps some one might even dare to die. But God 8

9 puts his love for us beyond all doubt by the fact that Christ died on
our behalf while we were still sinners. Much more, then, now that
we have been pronounced righteous by virtue of the shedding of
his blood, will we be saved through him from the wrath of God.
10 For if, when we were God's enemies, we were reconciled to him
through the death of his Son, much more, now that we have be-
11 come reconciled, will we be saved by virtue of Christ's life. And
not only that, but we exult in God, through Jesus Christ, our Lord,
through whom we have now obtained this reconciliation.
12 Therefore, just as sin came into the world through one man,
and through sin came death; so, also, death spread to all human-
13 ity, because every person has sinned. Even before the time of the
law there was sin in the world; but sin cannot be charged against
14 someone where no law exists. Yet, from Adam to Moses, death
reigned even over those whose sin was not a breach of a law, as
15 Adam's was. And Adam foreshadows the One to come. But there
is a contrast between Adam's offense and God's gracious gift. For,
if by reason of the offense of the one man the whole race died,
far more were the loving kindness of God, and the gift given in
16 the loving kindness of the one man, Jesus Christ, lavished on the
whole race. There is a contrast, too, between the gift and the re-
sults of the one man's sin. The judgment, which followed on the
one man's sin, resulted in condemnation, but God's gracious gift,
17 which followed on many offenses, resulted in a decree of right-
eousness. For if, by reason of the offense of the one man, death
reigned through that one man, far more will those, on whom
God's loving kindness and his gift of righteousness are lavished,
18 find life, and reign through the one man, Jesus Christ. Briefly
then, just as a single offense resulted for all humanity in condem-
nation, so, too, a single decree of righteousness resulted for all
19 humanity in that declaration of righteousness which brings life.
For, as through the disobedience of the one man the whole race
was rendered sinful, so, too, through the obedience of the one,
20 the whole race will be rendered righteous. Law was introduced
in order that offenses might be multiplied. But, where sins were
multiplied, the loving kindness of God was lavished the more, in
21 order than, just as sin had reigned in the realm of death, so, too,
might Loving-kindness reign through righteousness, and result
in eternal life, through Jesus Christ, our Lord.

Difficulties arising from this Teaching

WHAT ARE WE TO SAY, then? Are we to continue to sin, in order that 6
 God's loving kindness may be multiplied? Heaven forbid! We be- 2
 came dead to sin, and how can we go on living in it? Or can it be 3
 that you do not know that all of us, who were baptized into union
 with Christ Jesus, in our baptism shared his death? Consequently, 4
 through sharing his death in our baptism, we were buried with 4
 him; that, just as Christ was raised from the dead by a manifesta-
 tion of the Father's power, so we also may live a new life. If we 5
 have become united with him by the act symbolic of his death,
 surely we will also become united with him by the act symbolic 6
 of his resurrection. We recognize the truth that our old self was 6
 crucified with Christ, in order that the body, the stronghold of
 sin, might be rendered powerless, so that we should no longer be 7
 slaves to sin. For the man who has so died has been pronounced 7
 righteous and released from sin. And our belief is, that, as we 8
 have shared Christ's death, we will also share his life. We know, 9
 indeed, that Christ, having once risen from the dead, will not die 9
 again. Death has power over him no longer. For the death that 10
 he died was a death to sin, once and for all. But the life that he
 now lives, he lives for God. So let it be with you — regard your- 11
 selves as dead to sin, but as living for God, through union with
 Christ Jesus. Therefore do not let sin reign in your mortal bod- 12
 ies and compel you to obey its cravings. Do not offer any part 13
 of your bodies to sin, in the cause of unrighteousness, but once
 for all offer yourselves to God (as those who, though once dead,
 now have life), and devote every part of your bodies to the cause 14
 of righteousness. For sin will not lord it over you. You are living
 under the reign, not of law, but of love.
 What follows, then? Are we to sin because we are living under 15
 the reign of love and not of law? Heaven forbid! Surely you know 16
 that, when you offer yourselves as servants, to obey anyone, you
 are the servants of the person whom you obey, whether the ser-
 vice be a service sin which leads to death, or a service Duty which 17
 leads to righteousness. God be thanked that, though you were
 once servants of sin, yet you learned to give hearty obedience to 18
 that form of doctrine under which you were placed. Set free from
 the control of sin, you became servants to righteousness. I can but 19

speak as people do because of the weakness of your earthly nature. Once you offered every part of your bodies to the service of impurity, and of wickedness, which leads to further wickedness. Now, in the same way, offer them to the service of righteousness, which leads to holiness. While you were still servants of sin, you were free as regards righteousness. But what were the fruits that you reaped from those things of which you are now ashamed? For the end of such things is death. But now that you have been set free from the control of sin, and have become servants to God, the fruit that you reap is an ever increasing holiness, and the end eternal life. The wages of sin are death, but the gift of God is eternal life, through union with Christ Jesus, our Lord.

7 Surely, friends, you know (for I am speaking to people who know what law means) that law has power over a person only as long as they lives. For example, by law a married woman is bound to her husband while he is living; but, if her husband dies, she is set free from the law that bound her to him. If, then, during her husband's lifetime, she unites herself to another man, she will be called an adulteress; but, if her husband dies, the law has no further hold on her, nor, if she unites herself to another man, is she an adulteress. And so with you, my friends; as far as the law was concerned, you underwent death in the crucified body of the Christ, so that you might be united to another, to him who was raised from the dead, in order that our lives might bear fruit for God. When we were living merely earthly lives, our sinful passions, aroused by the law, were active in every part of our bodies, with the result that our lives bore fruit for death. But now we are set free from the law, because we are dead to that which once kept us under restraint; and so we serve under new, spiritual conditions, and not under old, written regulations.

7 What are we to say, then? That law and sin are the same thing? Heaven forbid! On the contrary, I should not have learned what sin is, had not it been for law. If the law did not say 'You must not covet,' I should not know what it is to covet. But sin took advantage of the Commandment to arouse in me every form of covetousness, for where there is no consciousness of law sin shows no sign of life. There was a time when I myself, unconscious of law, was alive; but when the Commandment was brought home to me, sin sprang into life, while I died! The Commandment that

should have meant life I found to result in death! sin took advantage of the Commandment to deceive me, and used it to bring about my death. And so the law is holy, and each Commandment is also holy, and just, and good. Did, then, a thing, which in itself was good, involve death in my case? Heaven forbid! It was sin that involved death; so that, by its use of what I regarded as good to bring about my death, its true nature might appear; and in this way the Commandment showed how intensely sinful sin is. We know that the law is spiritual, but I am earthly — sold into slavery to sin. I do not understand my own actions. For I am so far from habitually doing what I want to do, that I find myself doing the thing that I hate. But when I do what I want not to do, I am admitting that the law is right. This being so, the action is no longer my own, but is done by the sin which is within me. I know that there is nothing good in me — I mean in my earthly nature. For, although it is easy for me to want to do right, to act rightly is not easy. I fail to do the good thing that I want to do, but the bad thing that I want not to do — that I habitually do. But, when I do the thing that I want not to do, the action is no longer my own, but is done by the sin which is within me. This, then, is the law that I find — when I want to do right, wrong presents itself! At heart I delight in the law of God; but throughout my body I see a different law, one which is in conflict with the law accepted by my reason, and which endeavors to make me a prisoner to that law of sin which exists throughout my body. Miserable man that I am! Who will deliver me from the body that is bringing me to this death? Thank God, there is deliverance through Jesus Christ, our Lord! Well then, for myself, with my reason I serve the law of God, but with my earthly nature the law of sin.

There is, therefore, now no condemnation for those who are in union with Christ Jesus; for through your union with Christ Jesus, the law of the life-giving Spirit has set you free from the law of sin and death. What law could not do, in so far as our earthly nature weakened its action, God did, by sending his own Son, with a nature resembling our sinful nature, to atone for sin. He condemned sin in that earthly nature, so that the requirements of the law might be satisfied in us who live now in obedience, not to our earthly nature, but to the Spirit. They who follow their earthly nature are earthly-minded, while they who follow the Spirit are spiritually minded. To be earthly-minded means

7 death, to be spiritually minded means life and peace; because to
8 be earthly-minded is to be an enemy to God, for such a mind does
9 not submit to the law of God, nor indeed can it do so. They who
10 are earthly cannot please God. You, however, are not earthly but
11 spiritual, since the Spirit of God lives within you. Unless a person
12 has the Spirit of Christ, they do not belong to Christ; but, if Christ
13 is within you, then, though the body is dead as a consequence of
14 sin, the spirit is life as a consequence of righteousness. And, if the
15 Spirit of him who raised Jesus from the dead lives within you, he
16 who raised Christ Jesus from the dead will give life even to your
17 mortal bodies, through his Spirit living within you.

18 So then, friends, we owe nothing to our earthly nature, that
19 we should live in obedience to it. If you live in obedience to your
20 earthly nature, you will inevitably die; but if, by the power of the
21 Spirit, you put an end to the evil habits of the body, you will live.
22 All who are guided by the Spirit of God are sons of God. For you
23 did not receive the spirit of a slave, to fill you once more with fear,
24 but the spirit of a son which leads us to cry 'Abba, Our Father.'
25 The Spirit himself unites with our spirits in bearing witness to
26 our being God's children, and if children, then heirs — heirs of
27 God, and joint heirs with Christ, since we share Christ's sufferings
28 in order that we may also share his glory.

29 I do not count the sufferings of our present life worthy of men-
30 tion when compared with the glory that is to be revealed and be-
31 stowed on us. All Nature awaits with eager expectation the ap-
32 pearing of the sons of God. For Nature was made subject to im-
33 perfection — not by its own choice, but owing to him who made
34 it so — yet not without the hope that some day Nature, also, will
35 be set free from enslavement to decay, and will attain to the free-
36 dom which will mark the glory of the children of God. We know,
37 indeed, that all Nature alike has been groaning in the pains of la-
38 bor to this very hour. And not Nature only; but we ourselves also,
39 though we have already a first gift of the Spirit — we ourselves
40 are inwardly groaning, while we eagerly await our full adoption
41 as sons — the redemption of our bodies. By our hope we were
42 saved. But the thing hoped for is no longer an object of hope when
43 it is before our eyes; for who hopes for what is before his eyes? But
44 when we hope for what is not before our eyes, then we wait for
45 it with patience.

So, also, the Spirit supports us in our weakness. We do not even know how to pray as we should; but the Spirit himself pleads for us in sighs that can find no utterance. Yet he who searches all our hearts knows what the Spirit's meaning is, because the pleadings of the Spirit for Christ's people are in accordance with his will. But we do know that God causes all things to work together for the good of those who love him — those who have received the call in accordance with his purpose. For those whom God chose from the first he also destined from the first to be transformed into likeness to his Son, so that his Son might be the eldest among many brothers and sisters. And those whom God destined for this he also called; and those whom he called he also pronounced righteous; and those whom he pronounced righteous he also brought to glory.

What are we to say, then, in the light of all this? 31

If God is on our side, who can there be against us?

God did not withhold his own Son, but gave him up on behalf of us all; will he not, then, with him, freely give us all things? 32

Who will bring a charge against any of God's people? He who pronounces them righteous is God! 33

Who is there to condemn them? He who died for us is Christ Jesus! — or, rather, it was he who was raised from the dead, and who is now at God's right hand and is even pleading on our behalf! 34

Who is there to separate us from the love of the Christ? Will trouble, or difficulty, or persecution, or hunger, or nakedness, or danger, or the sword? 35

scripture says — 'For your sake we are being killed all the day long, We are regarded as sheep to be slaughtered.' Yet amidst all these things we more than conquer through him who loved us! For I am persuaded that neither death, nor life, nor angels, nor archangels, nor the Present, nor the Future, nor any powers, nor Height, nor Depth, nor any other created thing, will be able to separate us from the love of God revealed in Christ Jesus, our Lord! 36
37
38
39

Gentiles and Jews

9 I AM SPEAKING THE TRUTH AS ONE IN UNION WITH CHRIST; it is no lie;
 2 and my conscience, enlightened by the Holy Spirit, bears me out
 when I say that there is a great weight of sorrow on me and that
 3 my heart is never free from pain. I could wish that I were myself
 accursed and severed from the Christ, for the sake of my people
 4 — my own flesh and blood. For they are Israelites, and theirs
 are the adoption as sons, the visible presence, the Covenants, the
 5 revealed law, the Temple worship, and the Promises. They are
 descended from the Patriarchs; and, as far as his human nature
 was concerned, from them came the Christ — he who is supreme
 over all things, God for ever blessed. Amen.
 6 Not that God's Word has failed. For it is not all who are descended
 7 from Israel who are true Israelites; nor, because they are Abra-
 ham's descendants, are they all his children; but — 'It is Isaac's
 8 children who will be called your descendants.' This means that it
 is not the children born in the course of nature who are God's chil-
 dren, but it is the children born in fulfillment of the Promise who
 9 are to be regarded as Abraham's descendants. For these words
 are the words of a promise — 'About this time I will come, and
 10 Sarah will have a son.' Nor is that all. There is also the case of Re-
 becca, when she was about to bear children to our ancestor Isaac.
 11 For in order that the purpose of God, working through selection,
 might not fail — a selection depending, not on obedience, but on
 his call — Rebecca was told, before her children were born and
 12 before they had done anything either right or wrong, that 'the
 elder would be a servant to the younger.' The words of scripture
 13 are — 'I loved Jacob, but I hated Esau.'
 14 What are we to say, then? Is God guilty of injustice? Heaven
 15 forbid! For his words to Moses are — 'I will take pity on whom
 16 I take pity, and be merciful to whom I am merciful.' So, then, all
 depends, not on human wishes or human efforts, but on God's
 17 mercy. In scripture, again, it is said to Pharaoh — 'It was for this
 purpose that I raised you to the throne, to show my power by
 my dealings with you, and to make my name known throughout
 18 the world.' So, then, where God wills, he takes pity, and where
 19 he wills, he hardens the heart. Perhaps you will say to me —
 'How can anyone still be blamed? For who withstands his pur-
 20 pose?' I might rather ask 'Who are you who are arguing with

God?’ Does a thing which a person has moulded say to the person who has moulded it ‘Why did you make me like this?’ Has not the potter absolute power over their clay, so that out of the same lump they make one thing for better, and another for common, use? And what if God, intending to reveal his displeasure and make his power known, bore most patiently with the objects of his displeasure, though they were fit only to be destroyed, so as to make known his surpassing glory in dealing with the objects of his mercy, whom he prepared beforehand for glory, and whom he called — even us — Not only from among the Jews but from among the Gentiles also! This, indeed, is what he says in the book of Hosea — ‘Those who were not my people, I will call my people, and those who were unloved I will love. And in the place where it was said to them — “You are not my people”, they will be called sons of the living God.’ And Isaiah cries aloud over Israel — ‘Though the sons of Israel are like the sand of the sea in number, only a remnant of them will escape! For the Lord will execute his sentence on the world, fully and without delay.’ It is as Isaiah foretold — ‘Had not the Lord of Hosts spared some few of our race to us, we should have become like Sodom and been made to resemble Gomorrah.’

What are we to say, then? Why, that Gentiles, who were not in search of righteousness, secured it — a righteousness which was the result of faith; while Israel, which was in search of a law which would ensure righteousness, failed to discover one. And why? Because they looked to obedience, and not to faith, to secure it. They stumbled over ‘the Stumbling-block.’ As scripture says — ‘See, I place a Stumbling-block in Zion — a Rock which will prove a hindrance; and he who believes in him will have no cause for shame.’

My friends, my heart’s desire and prayer to God for my people is for their salvation. I can testify that they are zealous for the honor of God; but they are not guided by true insight, for, in their ignorance of the divine righteousness, and in their eagerness to set up a righteousness of their own, they refused to accept with submission the divine righteousness. For Christ has brought law to an end, so that righteousness may be obtained by everyone who believes in him. For Moses writes that, as for the righteousness which results from law, ‘those who practice it will find life through it.’ But the righteousness which results from faith finds

expression in these words — ‘Do not say to yourself “Who will go up into heaven?”’ — which means to bring Christ down — ‘or
7 “Who will go down into the depths below?”’ — which means to
8 bring Christ up from the dead. No, but what does it say? ‘The
9 message of faith’ which we proclaim. For, if with your lips you
acknowledge the truth of the message that JESUS IS LORD, and
believe in your heart that God raised him from the dead, you will
10 be saved. For with their hearts people believe and so attain to
righteousness, while with their lips they make their Profession of
11 faith and so find salvation. As the passage of scripture says — ‘No
12 one who believes in him will have any cause for shame.’ For no
distinction is made between the Jew and the Greek, for all have
13 the same Lord, and he is bountiful to all who invoke him. For
14 ‘everyone who invokes the name of the Lord will be saved.’ But
how, it may be asked, are they to invoke one in whom they have
not learned to believe? And how are they to believe in one whose
words they have not heard? And how are they to hear his words
15 unless some one proclaims him? And how is anyone to proclaim
him unless they are sent as his messengers? As scripture says —
‘How beautiful are the feet of those who bring good news!’
16 Still, it may be said, everyone did not give heed to the good
news. No, for Isaiah asks — ‘Lord, who has believed our teach-
17 ing?’ And so we gather, faith is a result of teaching, and the teach-
18 ing comes in the message of Christ. But I ask ‘Is it possible that
people have never heard?’ No, indeed, for — ‘Their voices spread
through all the earth, and their message to the ends of the world.’
19 But again I ask ‘Did not the people of Israel understand? First
there is Moses, who says — ‘I, the Lord, will stir you to rivalry
with a nation which is no nation; Against an undiscerning nation
20 I will arouse your anger.’ And Isaiah says boldly — ‘I was found
by those who were not seeking me; I made myself known to those
21 who were not inquiring of me. But of the people of Israel he says
— ‘All day long I have stretched out my hands to a people who
disobey and contradict.’
11 I ask, then, ‘Has God rejected his people?’ Heaven forbid! For
I myself am an Israelite, a descendant of Abraham, of the tribe of
2 Benjamin. God has not rejected his people, whom he chose from
the first. Have you forgotten the words of scripture in the story of
3 Elijah — how he appeals to God against Israel? ‘Lord, they have
killed your prophets, they have pulled down your altars, and I

only am left; and now they are eager to take my life.' But what 4
was the divine response? 'I have kept for myself seven thousand 5
who have never bowed the knee to Baal.' And so in our own time,
too, there is to be found a remnant of our nation selected by God 6
in love. But if in love, then no longer as a result of obedience. Oth- 6
erwise love would cease to be love. What follows from this? Why, 7
that Israel as a nation failed to secure what it was seeking, while
those whom God selected did secure it. The rest grew callous; 8
as scripture says — 'God has given them a deadness of mind —
eyes that are not to see and ears that are not to hear — and it is 9
so to this very day.' David, too, says — 'May their feasts prove a
snare and a trap to them — a hindrance and a retribution; may 10
their eyes be darkened, so that they cannot see; and do you always
make their backs to bend.' I ask then — 'Was their stumbling to 11
result in their fall?' Heaven forbid! On the contrary, through their
falling away salvation has reached the Gentiles, to stir the rivalry
of Israel. And, if their falling away has enriched the world, and 12
their failure has enriched the Gentiles, how much more will result
from their full restoration!

But I am speaking to you who were Gentiles. Being myself an 13
apostle to the Gentiles, I exalt my office, in the hope that I may 14
stir my countrymen to rivalry, and so save some of them. For, if 15
their being cast aside has meant the reconciliation of the world,
what will their reception mean, but life from the dead? If the first 16
handful of dough in holy, so is the whole mass; and if the root is
holy, so are the branches. Some, however, of the branches were 17
broken off, and you, who were only a wild olive, were grafted in
among them, and came to share with them the root which is the
source of the richness of the cultivated olive. Yet do not exult over 18
the other branches. But, if you do exult over them, remember that
you do not support the root, but that the root supports you. But 19
branches, you will say, were broken off, so that I might be grafted
in. True; it was because of their want of faith that they were bro- 20
ken off, and it is because of your faith that you are standing. Do
not think too highly of yourself, but beware. For, if God did not 21
spare the natural branches, neither will he spare you. See, then, 22
both the goodness and the severity of God — his severity towards
those who fell, and his goodness towards you, provided that you
continue to confide in that goodness; otherwise you, also, will be 23
cut off. And they, too, if they do not continue in their unbelief,

24 will be grafted in; for God has it in his power to graft them in again. If you were cut off from your natural stock — a wild olive — and were grafted, contrary to the course of nature, on a good olive, much more will they — the natural branches — be grafted back into their parent tree.

25 My friends, so that you don't think too highly of yourselves, I want you to recognize the truth, hitherto hidden, that the callousness which has come over Israel is only partial, and will continue
26 only until the whole Gentile world has been gathered in. And then all Israel will be saved. As scripture says — 'From Zion will come the Deliverer; he will banish ungodliness from Jacob. And
27 they will see the fulfillment of my covenant, when I have taken away their sins.' From the standpoint of the good news, the Jews
28 are God's enemies for your sake; but from the standpoint of God's selection, they are dear to him for the sake of the Patriarchs. For
29 God never regrets his gifts or his call. Just as you at one time were disobedient to him, but have now found mercy in the day of
30 their disobedience; so, too, they have now become disobedient in your day of mercy, in order that they also in their turn may now
31 find mercy. For God has given all alike over to disobedience, that to all alike he may show mercy. Oh! The unfathomable wisdom
32 and knowledge of God! How inscrutable are his judgments, how untraceable his ways! Yes — 'Who has ever comprehended the
33 mind of the Lord? Who has ever become his counsellor? Or who has first given to him, so that he may claim a reward?' For all
34 things are from him, through him, and for him. And to him be all glory for ever and ever! Amen.

Advice on Daily Life

- 12 I ENTREAT YOU, then, friends, by the mercies of God, to offer your bodies as a living and holy sacrifice, acceptable to God, for this
2 is your rational worship. Do not conform to the fashion of this world; but be transformed by the complete change that has come over your minds, so that you may discern what God's will is — all that is good, acceptable, and perfect.
- 3 In fulfillment of the charge with which I have been entrusted, I tell every one of you not to think more highly of himself than he ought to think, but to think until he learns to think soberly —

in accordance with the measure of faith that God has allotted to each. For, just as in the human body there is a union of many parts, and each part has its own function, so we, by our union in Christ, many though we are, form but one body, and individually we are related one to another as its parts. Since our gifts differ in accordance with the particular charge entrusted to us, if our gift is to preach, let our preaching correspond to our faith; if it is to minister to others, let us devote ourselves to our ministry; the teacher to their teaching, the counselor to their counsel. Let the person who gives in charity do so with a generous heart; let the person who is in authority exercise due diligence; let the person who shows kindness do so in a cheerful spirit. Let your love be sincere. Hate the wrong; cling to the right. In the love of the community of the Lord's followers, be affectionate to one another; in showing respect, set an example of deference to one another; never flagging in zeal; fervent in spirit; serving the Master; rejoicing in your hope; steadfast under persecution; persevering in prayer; relieving the wants of Christ's people; devoted to hospitality. Bless your persecutors — bless and never curse. Rejoice with those who are rejoicing, and weep with those who are weeping. Let the same spirit of sympathy animate you all, not a spirit of pride; enjoy the company of ordinary people. Do not think too highly of yourselves. Never return injury for injury. Aim at doing what everyone will recognize as honorable. If it is possible, as far as rests with you, live peaceably with everyone. Never avenge yourselves, dear friends, but make way for the wrath of God; for scripture declares — "It is for me to avenge, I will requite," says the Lord.' Rather — 'If your enemy is hungry, feed him; if he is thirsty, give him to drink. By doing this you will heap coals of fire on his head.' Never be conquered by evil, but conquer evil with good.

Let everyone obey the supreme Authorities. For no Authority exists except by the will of God, and the existing Authorities have been appointed by God. Therefore he who sets himself against the authorities is resisting God's appointment, and those who resist will bring a judgment on themselves. A good action has nothing to fear from Rulers; a bad action has. Do you want to have no reason to fear the Authorities? Then do what is good, and you will win their praise. For they are God's servants appointed for your good. But, if you do what is wrong, you may well be afraid; for

the sword they carry is not without meaning! They are God's servants to inflict his punishments on those who do wrong. You are bound, therefore, to obey, not only through fear of God's punishments, but also as a matter of conscience. This, too, is the reason for your paying taxes; for the officials are God's officers, devoting themselves to this special work. In all cases pay what is due from you — tribute where tribute is due, taxes where taxes are due, respect where respect is due, and honor where honor is due.

Owe nothing to anyone except love; for they who love their neighbor have satisfied the law. The commandments, 'You must not commit adultery, You must not kill, You must not steal, You must not covet,' and whatever other commandment there is, are all summed up in the words — 'You must love your neighbor as you love yourself.' Love never wrongs a neighbor. Therefore love fully satisfies the law. This I say, because you know the crisis that we have reached, for the time has already come for you to rouse yourselves from sleep; our salvation is nearer now than when we accepted the faith.

The night is almost gone; the day is near. Therefore let us have done with the deeds of darkness, and arm ourselves with the weapons of light. Being in the light of day, let us live becomingly, not in revelry and drunkenness, not in lust and licentiousness, not in quarreling and jealousy. No! Arm yourselves with the spirit of the Lord Jesus Christ, and spend no thought on your earthly nature, to satisfy its cravings.

As for those whose faith is weak, always receive them as friends, but not for the purpose of passing judgment on their scruples. One person's faith permits of their eating food of all kinds, while another whose faith is weak eats only vegetable food. The person who eats meat must not despise the person who abstains from it; nor must the person who abstains from eating meat pass judgment on the one who eats it, for God himself has received them. Who are you, that you should pass judgment on the servant of another? Their standing or falling concerns their own master. And stand they will, for their Master can enable them to stand. Again, one person considers some days to be more sacred than others, while another considers all days to be alike. Everyone ought to be fully convinced in their own mind. The person who observes a day, observes it to the Master's honor. They, again, who eat meat eat it to the Master's

honor, for they give thanks to God; while the person who abstains from it abstains from it to the Master's honor, and also gives thanks to God. There is not one of us whose life concerns ourselves alone, and not one of us whose death concerns ourself alone; for, if we live, our life is for the Master, and, if we die, our death is for the Master. Whether, then, we live or die we belong to the Master. The purpose for which Christ died and came back to life was this — that he might be Lord over both the dead and the living. I would ask the one 'Why do you judge other followers of the Lord?' And I would ask the other 'Why do you despise them?' For we will all stand before the court of God. For scripture says — "'As surely as I live," says the Lord, "every knee will bend before me; and every tongue will make acknowledgment to God.'" So, then, each one of us will have to render account of himself to God.

Let us, then, cease to judge one another. Rather let this be your resolve — never to place a stumbling-block or an obstacle in the way of a fellow follower of the Lord. Through my union with the Lord Jesus, I know and am persuaded that nothing is 'defiling in itself.' A thing is 'defiling' only to the person who holds it to be so. If, for the sake of what you eat, you wound your fellow follower's feelings, your life has ceased to be ruled by love. Do not, by what you eat, ruin someone for whom Christ died! Do not let what is right for you become a matter of reproach. For the kingdom of God does not consist of eating and drinking, but of righteousness and peace and gladness through the presence of the Holy Spirit. The person who serves the Christ in this way pleases God, and wins the approval of their fellows. Therefore our efforts should be directed towards all that makes for peace and the mutual building up of character. Do not undo God's work for the sake of what you eat. Though everything is 'clean,' yet, if a person eats so as to put a stumbling-block in the way of others, they do wrong. The right course is to abstain from meat or wine or, indeed, anything that is a stumbling-block to your fellow follower of the Lord. As for yourself — keep this faith of yours to yourself, as in the presence of God. Happy the person who never has to condemn themselves in regard to something they think right! The person, however, who has misgivings stands condemned if they still eat, because their doing so is not the result of faith. And anything not done as the result of faith is a sin.

15 We, the strong, ought to take on our own shoulders the
weaknesses of those who are not strong, and not merely to
2 please ourselves. Let each of us please our neighbor for our
neighbor's good, to help in the building up of their character.
3 Even the Christ did not please himself! On the contrary, as
scripture says of him — 'The reproaches of those who were
4 reproaching you fell upon me.' Whatever was written in the
scriptures in days gone by was written for our instruction, so
that, through patient endurance, and through the
encouragement drawn from the scriptures, we might hold fast to
5 our hope. And may God, the giver of this patience and this
encouragement, grant you to be united in sympathy in Christ, so
6 that with one heart and one voice you may praise the God and
7 Father of Jesus Christ, our Lord. Therefore always receive one
another as friends, just as the Christ himself received us, to the
8 glory of God. For I tell you that Christ, in vindication of God's
truthfulness, has become a minister of the covenant of
circumcision, so that he may fulfill the promises made to our
9 ancestors, and that the Gentiles also may praise God for his
mercy. As scripture says — 'Therefore will I make
10 acknowledgment to you among the Gentiles and sing in honor
of your name.' And again it says — 'Rejoice, you Gentiles, with
11 God's people.' And yet again — 'Praise the Lord, all you
12 Gentiles, and let all Peoples sing his praises.' Again, Isaiah says
— 'There will be a Scion of the house of Jesse, One who is to
arise to rule the Gentiles; on him will the Gentiles rest their
13 hopes.' May God, who inspires our hope, grant you perfect
happiness and peace in your faith, until you are filled with this
hope by the power of the Holy Spirit.

14 I am persuaded, my friends — yes, I Paul, with regard to you —
that you are yourselves full of kindness, furnished with all Chris-
15 tian learning, and well able to give advice to one another. But
in parts of this letter I have expressed myself somewhat boldly
16 — by way of refreshing your memories — because of the charge
with which God has entrusted me, that I should be a minister of
Christ Jesus to go to the Gentiles — that I should act as a priest
of God's good news, so that the offering up of the Gentiles may
17 be an acceptable sacrifice, consecrated by the Holy Spirit. It is,
then, through my union with Christ Jesus that I have a proud
18 confidence in my work for God. For I will not dare to speak of

anything but what Christ has done through me to win the obedience of the Gentiles — by my words and actions, through the power displayed in signs and marvels, and through the power of the Holy Spirit. And so, starting from Jerusalem and its neighborhood, and going as far as Illyria, I have told in full the good news of the Christ; yet always with the ambition to tell the good news where Christ's name had not previously been heard, so as to avoid building on another's foundations. But as scripture says — 'They to whom he had never been proclaimed will see; and they who have never heard will understand!'

Conclusion

THAT IS WHY I HAVE SO OFTEN BEEN PREVENTED FROM COMING TO YOU. But now there are no further openings for me in these parts, and I have for several years been longing to come to you whenever I may be going to Spain. For my hope is to visit you on my journey, and then to be sent on my way by you, after I have first partly satisfied myself by seeing something of you. Just now, however, I am on my way to Jerusalem, to take help to Christ's people there. For Macedonia and Greece have been glad to make a collection for the poor among Christ's people at Jerusalem. Yes, they were glad to do so; and indeed it is a duty which they owe to them. For the Gentile converts who have shared their spiritual blessings are in duty bound to minister to them in the things of this world. When I have settled this matter, and have secured to the poor at Jerusalem the enjoyment of these benefits, I will go, by way of you, to Spain. And I know that, when I come to you, it will be with a full measure of blessing from Christ.

I beg you, then, friends, by Jesus Christ, our Lord, and by the love inspired by the Spirit, to join me in earnest prayer to God on my behalf. Pray that I may be rescued from those in Judea who reject the faith, and that the help which I am taking to Jerusalem may prove acceptable to Christ's people; so that, God willing, I may be able to come to you with a joyful heart, and enjoy some rest among you. May God, the giver of peace, be with you all. Amen.

I commend to your care our sister, Phoebe, who is a minister of the church at Cenchreae; and I ask you to give her a Christian welcome — one worthy of Christ's people — and to aid her in any

matter in which she may need your assistance. She has proved herself a staunch friend and protector and to many others.

3 Give my greeting to Prisca and Aquila, my fellow workers in
 4 the cause of Christ Jesus, who risked their own lives to save mine.
 It is not I alone who thank them, but all the churches among the
 5 Gentiles thank them also. Give my greeting, also, to the church
 that meets at their house, as well as to my dear friend Epaphroditus,
 6 one of the first in Roman Asia to believe in Christ; to Mary, who
 7 worked hard for you; to Andronicus and Junia, fellow Jews and
 once my fellow prisoners, who are people of note among the apos-
 8 tles, and who became Christians before I did; to my dear Chris-
 9 tian friend Ampliatus; to Urban, our fellow worker in the cause
 10 of Christ, and to my dear friend Stachys; to that proved Chris-
 11 tian Apelles; to the household of Aristobulus; to my country-
 man Herodion; to the Christians in the household of Narcissus; to
 12 Tryphaena and Tryphosa, who have worked hard for the Master;
 to my dear friend Persis, for she has done much hard work for the
 13 Master; to that eminent Christian, Rufus, and to his mother, who
 14 has been a mother to me also; to Asyncritus, Phlegon, Hermes,
 15 Patrobas, Hermas, and our friends with them; also to Philologus
 and Julia, Nereus and his sister, and Olympas, and to all Christ's
 16 people who are with them. Greet one another with a sacred kiss.
 All the churches of the Christ send you greetings.

17 I beg you, friends, to be on your guard against people who,
 by disregarding the teaching which you received, cause divisions
 18 and create difficulties; dissociate yourselves from them. For such
 persons are not serving Christ, our Master, but are slaves to their
 own appetites; and, by their smooth words and flattery, they de-
 19 ceive simple-minded people. Everyone has heard of your ready
 obedience. It is true that I am very happy about you, but I want
 you to be well versed in all that is good, and innocent of all that
 20 is bad. And God, the giver of peace, will before long crush Satan
 under your feet.

May the blessing of Jesus, our Lord, be with you.

21 Timothy, my fellow worker, sends you his greetings, and Lu-
 cius, Jason, and Sosipater, my countrymen, send theirs.

22 I Tertius, who am writing this letter, send you my Christian
 greeting.

My host Gaius, who extends his hospitality to the whole 23
church, sends you his greeting; and Erastus, the city treasurer,
and Quartus, our dear friend, add theirs.

Now to him who is able to strengthen you, as promised in 25
the good news entrusted to me and in the proclamation of Jesus
Christ, in accordance with the revelation of that hidden purpose,
which in past ages was kept secret but now has been revealed and, 26
in obedience to the command of the immortal God, made known
through the writings of the prophets to all nations, to secure sub-
mission to the faith — to him, I say, the wise and only God, be 27
ascribed, through Jesus Christ, all glory for ever and ever. Amen.

PAUL'S FIRST LETTER TO THE CORINTHIANS

Introduction

TO THE CHURCH OF GOD IN CORINTH, to those who have been conse- 1
 crated by union with Christ Jesus and called to become his people,
 and also to all, wherever they may be, who invoke the name of our
 Lord Jesus Christ — their Master and ours, from Paul, who has 2
 been called to be an apostle of Jesus Christ by the will of God, and
 from Sosthenes, our fellow follower of the Lord.
 May God, our Father, and the Lord Jesus Christ bless you and 3
 give you peace.

I always thank God about you for the blessing bestowed on you 4
 in Christ Jesus. For through union with him you were enriched 5
 in every way — in your power to preach, and in your knowledge
 of the truth; and so became yourselves a confirmation of my tes- 6
 timony to the Christ. There is no gift in which you are deficient, 7
 while waiting for the appearing of our Lord Jesus Christ. And 8
 God himself will strengthen you to the end, so that at the day of
 our Lord Jesus Christ you may be found blameless. God will not 9
 fail you, and it is he who called you into communion with his Son,
 Jesus Christ, our Lord.

The State of the Church at Corinth

BUT I APPEAL TO YOU, my friends, by the name of our Lord Jesus 10
 Christ, to agree in what you profess, and not to allow divisions
 to exist among you, but to be united — of one mind and of one
 opinion. For I have been informed, my friends, by the members 11
 of Chloe's household, that party feeling exists among you. I mean 12
 this: that every one of you says either 'I follow Paul,' or 'I Apollos,'
 or 'I Cephas,' or 'I Christ.' You have torn the Christ in pieces! Was 13

14 it Paul who was crucified for you? Or were you baptized into the
 15 faith of Paul? I am thankful that I did not baptize any of you ex-
 16 cept Crispus and Gaius, so that no one can say that you were bap-
 17 tized into my faith. I baptized also the household of Stephanas. I
 do not know that I baptized anyone else. My mission from Christ
 was not to baptize, but to tell the good news; not, however, in the
 language of philosophy, in case the cross of the Christ should be
 robbed of its meaning.

18 The message of the cross is indeed mere folly to those who are
 in the path to ruin, but to us who are in the path of salvation it is
 19 the power of God. For scripture says —

‘I will bring the philosophy of the philosophers to nought,
 and the shrewdness of the shrewd I will bring to nothing.’

20 Where is the philosopher? Where the teacher of the law? Where
 the disputant of today? Has not God shown the world’s philo-
 21 sopher to be folly? For since the world, in God’s wisdom, did not
 by its philosophy learn to know God, God saw fit, by the ‘folly’
 22 of our proclamation, to save those who believe in Christ! While
 Jews ask for miraculous signs, and Greeks study philosophy, we
 23 are proclaiming Christ crucified! — to the Jews an obstacle, to
 24 the Gentiles mere folly, but to those who have received the call,
 whether Jews or Greeks, Christ, the power of God and the wis-
 25 dom of God! For God’s ‘folly’ is wiser than people, and God’s
 ‘weakness’ is stronger than people.

26 Look at the facts of your call, friends. There are not many
 among you who are wise, as people reckon wisdom, not many
 27 who are influential, not many who are high-born; but God chose
 what the world counts foolish to put its wise to shame, and God
 chose what the world counts weak to put its strong to shame,
 28 and God chose what the world counts poor and insignificant —
 29 things that to it are unreal — to bring its ‘realities’ to nothing, so
 30 that in his presence no one should boast. But you, by your union
 with Christ Jesus, belong to God; and Christ, by God’s will,
 became not only our wisdom, but also our righteousness,
 31 holiness, and deliverance, so that — in the words of scripture —

‘Let him who boasts make his boast of the Lord!’

For my own part, friends, when I came to you, it was with no 2
display of eloquence or philosophy that I came to tell the hid- 2
den purpose of God; for I had determined that, while with you,
I would forget everything Jesus Christ — and him crucified! In- 3
deed, when I came among you, I was weak, and full of fears, and 3
in great anxiety. My message and my proclamation were not de- 4
livered in the persuasive language of philosophy, but were accom- 4
panied by the manifestation of spiritual power, so that your faith 5
should be based, not on the human wisdom, but on the power of 5
God.

Yet there is a philosophy that we teach to those whose faith is 6
matured, but it is not the philosophy of today, or of the leaders of 6
today — whose downfall is at hand. No, it is a divine philosophy 7
that we teach, one concerned with the hidden purpose of God 7
— that long hidden philosophy which God, before time began,
destined for our glory. This philosophy is not known to any of 8
the leaders of today; for, had they known it, they would not have 8
crucified our glorified Lord. It is what scripture speaks of as — 9

‘What eye never saw, nor ear ever heard,
what never entered people’s minds —
even all that God has prepared for those who love him.’

Yet to us God revealed it through his Spirit; for the Spirit fath- 10
oms all things, even the inmost depths of God’s being. For what 11
person is there who knows what a person is, except the person’s
own spirit within them? So, also, no one comprehends what God 11
is, except the Spirit of God. And as for us, it is not the spirit of the 12
world that we have received, but the Spirit that comes from God,
so that we may realize the blessings given to us by him. And we 13
speak of these gifts, not in language taught by human philosophy,
but in language taught by the Spirit, explaining spiritual things in 13
spiritual words. The merely intellectual person rejects the teach- 14
ing of the Spirit of God; for to them it is mere folly; they cannot
grasp it, because it is to be understood only by spiritual insight. 14
But the person with spiritual insight is able to understand every- 15
thing, although they themselves are understood by no one. For 15
‘who has so comprehended the mind of the Lord as to be able to 16
instruct him?’ We, however, have the mind of Christ.

But I, my friends, could not speak to you as people with spir- 3
itual insight, but only as worldly-minded — mere infants in the

2 faith of Christ. I fed you with milk, not with solid food, for you were not then able to take it.

No, and even now you are not able; you are still worldly. While
 3 there exist among you jealousy and party feeling, is it not true that you are worldly, and are acting merely as other people do?
 4 When one says 'I follow Paul,' and another 'I follow Apollos,'
 5 aren't you like other people? What, I ask, is Apollos? Or what is Paul? Servants through whom you were led to accept the faith;
 6 and that only as the Lord helped each of you. I planted, and Apollos watered, but it was God who caused the growth. Therefore
 7 neither the one who plants, nor the one who waters, counts for anything, but only God who causes the growth. In this the person who plants and the person who waters are one; yet each will
 8 receive their own reward in proportion to their own labor. For we are God's fellow workers; you are God's harvest field, God's building.

10 In fulfillment of the charge which God had entrusted to me, I laid the foundation like a skillful master; but someone else is
 11 now building on it. Let everyone take care how they build; for no one can lay any other foundation than the one already laid —
 12 Jesus Christ. Whatever is used by those who build on this foundation, whether gold, silver, costly stones, wood, hay, or straw, the
 13 quality of each man's work will become known, for the day will make it plain; because that day is to be ushered in with fire, and
 14 the fire itself will test the quality of every man's work. If anyone's work, which they have built on that foundation, still remains, they
 15 will gain a reward. If anyone's work is burnt up, they will suffer loss; though they themselves will escape, but only as one who has passed through fire.

16 Don't you know that you are God's Temple, and that God's Spirit has his home in you? If any one destroys the Temple of God, God will destroy them; for the Temple of God is sacred, and so also are you.

18 Let no one deceive himself. If any one among you imagines that, as regards this world, they are wise, let them become a 'fool,'
 19 that they may become wise. For in God's sight this world's wisdom is folly. Scripture tells of —

'One who catches the wise in their own craftiness,'

And it says again — 20

‘The Lord sees how fruitless are the deliberations of the wise.’

Therefore let no one boast about people; for all things are yours 21
— Whether Paul, or Apollos, or Cephas, or the world, or life, or 22
death, or the present, or the future — all things are yours! But 23
you are Christ’s and Christ is God’s.

Let people look on us as Christ’s servants, and as stewards of 4
the hidden truths of God. Now what we look for in stewards is 2
that they should be trustworthy. But it weighs very little with me 3
that I am judged by you or by any human tribunal. No, I do not
even judge myself; for, though I am conscious of nothing against 4
myself, that does not prove me innocent. It is the Lord who is my
judge. Therefore do not pass judgment before the time, but wait 5
until the Lord comes. He will throw light on what is now dark
and obscure, and will reveal the motives in people’s minds; and
then everyone will receive due praise from God.

All this, friends, I have, for your sakes, applied to Apollos and 6
myself, so that, from our example, you may learn to observe the
precept — ‘Keep to what is written,’ that none of you may speak 7
boastfully of one teacher to the disparagement of another. For 7
who makes any one of you superior to others? And what have
you that was not given you? But if you received it as a gift, why 8
do you boast as if you had not? Are you all so soon satisfied? Are 8
you so soon rich? Have you begun to reign without us? Would
indeed that you had, so that we also might reign with you! For, 9
as it seems to me, God has exhibited us, the apostles, last of all, as
people doomed to death. We are made a spectacle to the universe,
both to angels and to people! We, for Christ’s sake, are ‘fools,’ but 10
you, by your union with Christ, are people of discernment. We are
weak, but you are strong. You are honored, but we are despised.
To this very hour we go hungry, thirsty, and naked; we are beaten; 11
we are homeless; we work hard, toiling with our own hands. We 12
meet abuse with blessings, we meet persecution with endurance,
we meet slander with gentle appeals. We have been treated as the
scum of the earth, the vilest of the vile, to this very hour. 13

It is with no wish to shame you that I am writing like this; but to 14
warn you as my own dear children. Though you may have thou- 15
sands of instructors in the faith of Christ, yet you have not many

16 fathers. It was I who, through union with Christ Jesus, became
 17 your father by means of the good news. Therefore I entreat you
 18 — Follow my example. This is my reason for sending Timothy to
 19 you. He is my own dear faithful child in the Master's service, and
 20 he will remind you of my methods of teaching the faith of Christ
 21 Jesus — methods which I follow everywhere in every church.

18 Some, I hear, are puffed up with pride, thinking that I am not
 19 coming to you. But come to you I will, and that soon, if it please
 20 the Lord; and then I will find out, not what words these people
 21 use who are so puffed up, but what power they possess; for the
 kingdom of God is based, not on words, but on power. What do
 you wish? Am I to come to you with a rod, or in a loving and
 gentle spirit?

5 There is a wide-spread report respecting a case of immoral-
 ity among you, and that, too, of a kind that does not occur even
 among the Gentiles — a man, I hear, is living with his father's
 2 wife! Instead of grieving over it and taking steps for the expul-
 3 sion of the man who has done this thing, is it possible that you
 4 are still puffed up? For I myself, though absent in body, have
 5 been present with you in spirit, and in the name of our Lord Je-
 6 sus I have already passed judgment, just as if I had been present,
 7 on the man who has acted in this way. I have decided — having
 8 been present in spirit at your meetings, when the power of the
 9 Lord Jesus was with us — to deliver such a man as this over to
 10 Satan, that what is sensual in him may be destroyed, so that his
 11 spirit may be saved at the day of the Lord. Your boasting is un-
 seemly. Don't you know that even a little leaven leavens all the
 dough? Get rid entirely of the old leaven, so that you may be
 like new dough — free from leaven, as in truth you are. For our
 passover lamb is already sacrificed — Christ himself; therefore
 let us keep our festival, not with the leaven of former days, nor
 with the leaven of vice and wickedness, but with the unleavened
 bread of sincerity and truth.

9 I told you, in my letter, not to associate with immoral people —
 10 not, of course, meaning people of the world who are in immoral,
 or who are covetous and grasping, or who worship idols; for then
 11 you would have to leave the world altogether. But, as things are,
 I say that you are not to associate with anyone who, although a
 follower of Christ in name, is immoral, or covetous, or an idolater,
 or abusive, or a drunkard, or grasping — no, not even to sit down

to eat with such people. What have I to do with judging those 12
outside the church? Is it not for you to judge those who are within
the church, while God judges those who are outside? 'Put away 13
the wicked from among you.'

Can it be that, when one of you has a dispute with another, 6
they dare to have their case tried before the heathen, instead of
before Christ's people? Don't you know that Christ's people will 2
try the world? And if the world is to be tried by you, are you un-
fit to try the most trivial cases? Don't you know that we are to 3
try angels — to say nothing of the affairs of this life? Why, then, 4
if you have cases relating to the affairs of this life, do you set to
try them those who carry no weight with the church? To your
shame I ask it. Can it be that there is not one among you wise 5
enough to decide between two of their fellow followers? Must a 6
follower sue a fellow follower? In front of unbelievers? To begin 7
with, it is undoubtedly a loss to you to have lawsuits with one an-
other. Why not rather let yourselves be wronged? Why not rather
let yourselves be cheated? Instead of this, you wrong and cheat 8
others yourselves — yes, even other followers! Don't you know 9
that wrong-doers will have no share in God's kingdom? Do not
be deceived. No one who is immoral, or an idolater, or an adul-
terer, or licentious, or a sexual pervert, or a thief, or covetous, or 10
a drunkard, or abusive, or grasping, will have any share in God's
kingdom. Such some of you used to be; but you washed your- 11
selves clean. You became Christ's people! You were pronounced
righteous through the name of our Lord Jesus Christ, and through
the Spirit of our God!

Everything is allowable for me! Yes, but everything is not 12
profitable. Everything is allowable for me! Yes, but for my part, I
will not let myself be enslaved by anything. Food exists for the 13
stomach, and the stomach for food; but God will put an end to
both the one and the other. The body, however, exists, not for
immorality, but for the Lord, and the Lord for the body; and, as 14
God has raised the Lord, so he will raise up us also by the
exercise of his power. Don't you know that your bodies are 15
Christ's members? Am I, then, to take the members that belong

to the Christ and make them the members of a prostitute?
16 Heaven forbid! Or don't you know that a man who unites
himself with a prostitute is one with her in body (for 'the two,' it
17 is said, 'will become one'); while a man who is united with the
18 Lord is one with him in spirit? Shun all immorality. Every other
sin that people commit is something outside the body; but an
19 immoral person sins against their own body. Again, don't you
know that your body is a shrine of the Holy Spirit that is within
20 you – the Spirit which you have from God? Moreover, you are
not your own masters; you were bought, and the price was paid.
Therefore, honor God in your bodies.

Answers to Questions Asked by the Church at Corinth

7 WITH REFERENCE TO THE SUBJECTS ABOUT WHICH YOU WROTE TO ME:
2 It is good for a man to remain single. But, owing to the preva-
lence of immorality, I advise every man to have his own wife, and
3 every woman her husband. A husband should give his wife her
4 due, and a wife her husband. It is not the wife, but the husband,
who exercises power over her body; and so, too, it is not the hus-
5 band, but the wife, who exercises power over his body. Do not
deprive each other of what is due — unless it is only for a time
and by mutual consent, so that your minds may be free for prayer
until you again live as man and wife — otherwise Satan might
6 take advantage of your want of self-control and tempt you. I say
7 this, however, as a concession, not as a command. I should wish
everyone to be just what I am myself. But everyone has his own
gift from God — one in one way, and one in another.

8 My advice, then, to those who are not married, and to widows,
is this: It would be good for them to remain as I am myself. But,
9 if they cannot control themselves, let them marry, for it is better
10 to marry than to be consumed with passion. To those who are
married my direction is — yet it is not mine, but the Master's —
11 that a woman is not to leave her husband (If she has done so, let
her remain as she is, or else be reconciled to her husband) and also
12 that a man is not to divorce his wife. To all others I say — I, not the
Master — If a follower of the Lord is married to a woman, who is
an unbeliever but willing to live with him, he should not divorce

her; and a woman who is married to a man, who is an unbeliever 13
but willing to live with her, should not divorce her husband. For,
through his wife, the husband who is an unbeliever has become 14
associated with Christ's people; and the wife who is an unbeliever
has become associated with Christ's people through the Lord's
follower whom she has married. Otherwise your children would
be 'defiled,' but, as it is, they belong to Christ's people. However,
if the unbeliever wishes to be separated, let them be so. Under 15
such circumstances neither is bound; God has called you to live
in peace. How can you tell, wife, whether you may not save your 16
husband? And how can you tell, husband, whether you may not
save your wife?

In any case, a person should continue to live in the condition 17
which the Lord has allotted to them, and in which they were when
God called them. This is the rule that I lay down in every church.
Was a man already circumcised when he was called? Then he 18
should not efface his circumcision. Has a man been called when
uncircumcised? Then he should not be circumcised. Circumcision
is nothing; the want of it is nothing; but to keep the commands 19
of God is everything. Let everyone remain in that condition of
life in which they were when the call came to them. Were you 20
a slave when you were called? Do not let that trouble you. No,
even if you are able to gain your freedom, still do your best. For 22
the person who was a slave when they were called to the master's
service is the Master's freedman; so, too, the person who was free
when called is Christ's slave. You were bought, and the price was 23
paid. Do not let yourselves become slaves to people. Friends, let
everyone remain in the condition in which they were when they 24
were called, in close communion with God.

With regard to unmarried women, I have no command from 25
the Master to give you, but I tell you my opinion, and the Master
in his mercy has made me worthy to be trusted. I think, then, that, 26
in view of the time of suffering that has now come upon us, what
I have already said is best — that a man should remain as he is. Are
you married to a wife? Then do not seek to be separated. Are you 27
separated from a wife? Then do not seek for a wife. still, if you 28
should marry, that is not wrong; nor, if a young woman marries, is
that wrong. But those who marry will have much trouble to bear,

29 and my wish is to spare you. What I mean, friends, is this — the
30 time is short. Meanwhile, let those who have wives live as if they
31 had none, those who are weeping as if not weeping, those who
32 are rejoicing as if not rejoicing, those who buy as if not possessing,
33 and those who use the good things of the world as using them
34 sparingly; for this world as we see it is passing away. I want you
35 to be free from anxiety. The unmarried man is anxious about the
36 Master's cause, desiring to please him; while the married man is
37 anxious about worldly matters, desiring to please his wife; and so
38 his interests are divided. Again, the unmarried woman, whether
39 she is old or young, is anxious about the Master's cause, striving
40 to be pure both in body and in spirit, while the married woman
is anxious about worldly matters, desiring to please her husband.
I say this for your own benefit, not with any intention of putting
a halter around your necks, but in order to secure for the Master
seemly and constant devotion, free from all distraction.
If, however, a father thinks that he is not acting fairly by his un-
married daughter, when she is past her youth, and if under these
circumstances her marriage ought to take place, let him act as he
thinks right. He is doing nothing wrong — let the marriage take
place. On the other hand, a father, who has definitely made up
his mind, and is under no compulsion, but is free to carry out his
own wishes, and who has come to the decision, in his own mind,
to keep his unmarried daughter at home will be doing right. In
short, the one who consents to his daughter's marriage is doing
right, and yet the other will be doing better.
A wife is bound to her husband as long as he lives; but, if the
husband should pass to his rest, the widow is free to marry any-
one she wishes, provided he is a believer. Yet she will be happier
if she remains as she is — in my opinion, for I think that I also
have the Spirit of God.

8 With reference to food that has been offered in sacrifice to idols
— We are aware that all of us have knowledge! Knowledge breeds
2 conceit, while love builds up character. If someone thinks that
3 they know anything, they have not yet reached that knowledge
4 which they ought to have reached. On the other hand, if a per-
son loves God, they are known by God. With reference, then, to
eating food that has been offered to idols — we are aware that

an idol is nothing in the world, and that there is no God but one. Even supposing that there are so-called 'gods' either in heaven 5
or on earth — and there are many such 'gods' and 'lords' — Yet
for us there is only one God, the Father, from whom all things 6
come (and for him we live), and one Lord, Jesus Christ, through
whom all things come (and through him we live). Still, it is not 7
everyone that has this knowledge. Some people, because of their
association with idols, continued down to the present time, eat
the food as food offered to an idol; and their consciences, while
still weak, are dulled. What we eat, however, will not bring us 8
nearer to God. We lose nothing by not eating this food, and we
gain nothing by eating it. But take care that this right of yours 9
does not become in any way a stumbling-block to the weak. For
if some one should see you who possess this knowledge, feast- 10
ing in an idol's temple, will not their conscience, if they are weak,
become so hardened that they, too, will eat food offered to idols?
And so, through this knowledge of yours, the weak person is ru- 11
ined — someone for whose sake Christ died! In this way, by sin- 12
ning against your fellow followers of the Lord and injuring their
consciences, while still weak, you sin against Christ. Therefore, 13
if what I eat makes a follower of the Lord fall, rather than make
them fall, I will never eat meat again.

Am I not free? Am I not an apostle? Have I not seen our Lord 9
Jesus? Aren't you yourselves my work achieved in union with the
Lord? If I am not an apostle to others, yet at least I am to you; for 2
you are the seal that stamps me as an apostle in union with the
Lord. The defense that I make to my critics is this: Have not we a 3
right to food and drink? Have not we a right to take a wife with 5
us, if she is a Christian, as the other apostles and the Master's
brothers and Cephas all do? Or is it only Barnabas and I who 6
have no right to give up working for our bread? Does anyone
ever serve as a soldier at his own expense? Does anyone plant 7
a vineyard and not eat its produce? Or does anyone look after a
herd and not drink the milk? Am I, in all this, speaking only from 8
the human standpoint? Does not the law also say the same? For 9
in the law of Moses it is said —

'You should not muzzle a bullock while it is treading out
the grain.'

10 Is it the bullocks that God is thinking of? Or is not is said entirely
for our sakes? Surely it was written for our sakes, for the plowman
ought not to plow, nor the thrasher to thrash, without expecting
11 a share of the grain. Since we, then, sowed spiritual seed for you,
is it too much that we should reap from you an earthly harvest?
12 If others share in this right over you, do not we even more? Still
we did not avail ourselves of this right. No, we endure anything
rather than impede the progress of the good news of the Christ.
13 Don't you know that those who do the work of the Temple live
on what comes from the Temple, and that those who serve at the
14 altar share the offerings with the altar? So, too, the Master has ap-
pointed that those who tell the good news should get their living
15 from the good news. I, however, have not availed myself of any of
these rights. I am not saying this to secure such an arrangement
for myself; indeed, I would far rather die — Nobody will make my
16 boast a vain one! If I tell the good news, I have nothing to boast
17 of, for I can but do so. Woe is me if I do not tell it! If I do this work
willingly, I have a reward; but, if unwillingly, I have been charged
18 to perform a duty. What is my reward, then? To present the good
news free of all cost, and so make but a sparing use of the rights
which it gives me.

19 Although I was entirely free, yet, to win as many converts as
20 possible, I made myself everyone's slave. To the Jews I became
like a Jew, to win Jews. To those who are subject to law I became
like a man subject to law — though I was not myself subject to law
21 — to win those who are subject to law. To those who have no law
I became like a man who has no law — not that I am free from
God's law; no, for I am under Christ's law — to win those who
22 have no law. To the weak I became weak, to win the weak. I have
become all things to all people, so as at all costs to save some. And
23 I do everything for the sake of the good news, so that with them
I may share in its blessings.

24 Don't you know that on a racecourse, though all run, yet only
one wins the prize? Run in such a way that you may win. Every
25 athlete exercises self-restraint in everything; they, indeed, for a
26 crown that fades, we for one that is unfading. I, therefore, run
27 with no uncertain aim. I box — not like a man hitting the air. No,
I bruise my body and make it my slave, so that I, who have called
others to the contest, will not myself be rejected.

I want you to bear in mind, friends, that all our ancestors were 10
beneath the cloud, and all passed through the sea; that in the 2
cloud and in the sea they all underwent baptism as followers of
Moses; and that they all ate the same supernatural food, and all 3
drank the same supernatural water, for they used to drink from 4
a supernatural rock which followed them, and that rock was the
Christ. Yet with most of them God was displeased; for they were 5
'struck down in the desert.' Now these things happened as warn- 6
ings to us, to teach us not to long for evil things as our ancestors
longed. Do not become idolaters, as some of them became. Scrip- 7
ture says —

'The people sat down to eat and drink, and stood up to
dance.'

Nor let us act immorally, as some of them acted, with the result 8
that twenty-three thousand of them fell dead in a single day. Nor 9
let us try the patience of the Lord too far, as some of them tried it,
with the result that they 'were, one after another, destroyed by the
snakes.' And do not murmur, as some of them murmured, and so 10
'were destroyed by the angel of death.' These things happened to 11
them by way of warning, and were recorded to serve as a caution
to us, in whose days the close of the ages has come.

Therefore let the person who thinks that they stand take care 12
that they do not fall. No temptation has come upon you that is 13
not common to all humanity. God will not fail you, and he will
not allow you to be tempted beyond your strength; but, when he
sends the temptation, he will also provide the way of escape, so
that you may have strength to endure.

Therefore, my dear friends, shun the worship of idols. I speak 14
to you as man of discernment; form your own judgment about 15
what I am saying. In the cup of blessing which we bless, is not 16
there a sharing in the blood of the Christ? And in the bread which
we break, is not there a sharing in the body of the Christ? The 17
bread is one, and we, though many, are one body; for we all par-
take of that one bread. Look at the people of Israel. Do not those 18
who eat the sacrifices share with the altar? What do I mean? That 19
an offering made to an idol, or the idol itself, is anything? No; 20

what I say is that the sacrifices offered by the Gentiles 'are offered to demons and to a being who is no God,' and I do not want you to share with demons. You cannot drink both the Cup of the Lord and the cup of demons. You cannot partake at the Table of the Lord and at the table of demons. Or 'are we to rouse the jealousy of the Lord'? Are we stronger than he?

21 Everything is allowable! Yes, but everything is not profitable. Everything is allowable! Yes, but everything does not build up character. A person must not study their own interests, but the interests of others.

22 Eat anything that is sold in the market, without making inquiries to satisfy your scruples; for 'the earth, with all that is in it, belongs to the Lord.' If an unbeliever invites you to his house and you consent to go, eat anything that is put before you, without making inquiries to satisfy your scruples. But, if anyone should say to you 'This has been offered in sacrifice to an idol,' then, for the sake of the speaker and his scruples, do not eat it. I do not say 'your' scruples, but 'his.' For why should the freedom that I claim be condemned by the scruples of another? If, for my part, I take the food thankfully, why should I be abused for eating that for which I give thanks?

23 Whether, then, you eat or drink or whatever you do, do everything to the honor of God. Do not cause offense either to Jews or Greeks or to the church of God; for I, also, try to please everybody in everything, not seeking my own advantage, but do what is best for others, so that they may be saved. Imitate me, as I myself imitate Christ.

2 I praise you, indeed, because you never forget me, and are keeping my injunctions in mind, exactly as I laid them on you.

3 But I am anxious that you should understand that the Christ is the head of every man, that man is the head of woman, and that God is the head of the Christ. Any man who keeps his head covered, when praying or preaching in public, dishonors him who is his head; while any woman, who prays or preaches in public bare-headed, dishonors him who is her head; for that is to make herself like one of the shameless women who shave their heads.

6 Indeed, if a woman does not keep her head covered, she may as well cut her hair short. But, since to cut her hair short, or shave

it off, marks her as one of the shameless women, let her keep her head covered. A man ought not to have his head covered, for he has been from the beginning 'the likeness of God' and the reflection of his glory, but woman is the reflection of man's glory. For it was not man who was taken from woman, but woman who was taken from man. Besides, man was not created for the sake of woman, but woman for the sake of man. And, therefore, a woman ought to wear on her head a symbol of her subjection, because of the presence of the angels. Still, when in union with the Lord, woman is not independent of man, or man of woman; for just as woman came from man, so man comes by means of woman; and all things come from God. judge for yourselves. Is it fitting that a woman should pray to God in public with her head uncovered? Does not nature herself teach us that, while for a man to wear his hair long is degrading to him, a woman's long hair is her glory? Her hair has been given her to serve as a covering. If, however, anyone still thinks it right to contest the point — well, we have no such custom, nor have the churches of God.

In giving directions on the next subject, I cannot praise you; because your meetings do more harm than good. To begin with, I hear you and, to some extent, I believe it. Indeed, there must be actual parties among you, for so only will the people of real worth become known. When you meet together, as I understand, it is not possible to eat the Lord's Supper; for, as you eat, each of you tries to secure his own supper first, with the result that one has too little to eat, and another has too much to drink! Have you no houses in which you can eat and drink? Or are you trying to show your contempt for the church of God, and to humiliate the poor? What can I say to you? Should I praise you? In this matter I cannot praise you. For I myself received from the Lord the account which I have in turn given to you — how the Lord Jesus, on the very night of his betrayal, took some bread, and, after saying the thanksgiving, broke it and said "This is my own body given on your behalf. Do this in memory of me." And in the same way with the cup, after supper, saying "This cup is the new covenant made by my blood. Do this, whenever you drink it, in memory of me." For whenever you eat this bread and drink the cup, you proclaim the Lord's death — until he comes. Therefore,

27 whoever eats the bread, or drinks the Lord's cup, in an irreverent spirit, will have to answer for an offense against the Lord's
28 body and blood. Let everyone look into their own heart, and only
29 then eat of the bread and drink from the cup. For the person who
eats and drinks brings a judgment on themselves by their eating
30 and drinking, when they do not discern the body. That is why so
many among you are weak and ill, and why some are sleeping.
31 But, if we judged ourselves rightly, we should not be judged. Yet,
32 in being judged by the Lord, we are undergoing discipline, so
that we may not have judgment passed on us with the rest of the
33 world. Therefore, my friends, when you meet together to eat the
34 Supper, wait for one another. If anyone is hungry, let them eat at
home, so that your meetings may not bring a judgment on you.
The other details I will settle when I come.

12 In the next place, friends, I do not want you to be ignorant about
2 spiritual gifts. You know that there was a time when you were
Gentiles, going astray after idols that could not speak, just as you
3 happened to be led. Therefore I tell you plainly that no one who
speaks under the influence of the Spirit of God says 'JESUS IS
ACCURSED,' and that no one can say 'JESUS IS LORD,' except
4 under the influence of the Holy Spirit. Gifts differ, but the Spirit
5 is the same; ways of serving differ, yet the Master is the same; re-
6 sults differ, yet the God who brings about every result is in every
7 case the same. To each of us there is given spiritual illumination
8 for the general good. To one is given the power to speak with
wisdom through the Spirit; to another the power to speak with
9 knowledge, due to the same Spirit; to another faith by the same
Spirit; to another power to cure diseases by the one Spirit; to an-
10 other supernatural powers; to another the gift of preaching; to
another the gift of distinguishing between true and false inspi-
ration; to another varieties of the gift of 'tongues'; to another the
11 power to interpret 'tongues.' All these result from one and the
same Spirit, who distributes his gifts to each individually as he
wills.
12 For just as the human body is one whole, and yet has many parts,
and all its parts, many though they are, form but one body, so it
13 is with the Christ; for it was by one Spirit that we were all bap-
tized to form one body, whether Jews or Greeks, slaves or free,

and were all imbued with one Spirit. The human body, I repeat, 14
consists not of one part, but of many. If the foot says 'Since I am 15
not a hand, I do not belong to the body,' it does not because of that
cease to belong to the body. Or if the ear says 'Since I am not an 16
eye, I do not belong to the body,' it does not because of that cease
to belong to the body. If all the body were an eye, where would the 17
hearing be? If it were all hearing, where would the sense of smell
be? But in fact God has placed each individual part just where 18
he thought fit in the body. If, however, they all made up only one
part, where would the body be? But in fact, although it has many 19
parts, there is only one body. The eye cannot say to the hand 'I do
not need you,' nor, again, the head to the feet 'I do not need you.' 20
No! Those parts of the body that seem naturally the weaker are 21
indispensable; and those parts which we deem less honorable we
surround with special honor; and our ungraceful parts receive a 22
special grace which our graceful parts do not require. Yes, God
has so constructed the body — by giving a special honor to the 23
part that lacks it — As to secure that there should be no disunion
in the body, but that the parts should show the same care for one 24
another. If one part suffers, all the others suffer with it, and if one
part has honor done it, all the others share its joy. Together you are 25
the body of Christ, and individually its parts. In the church God 26
has appointed, first, apostles, secondly preachers, thirdly teachers; 27
then he has given supernatural powers, then power to cure
diseases, aptness for helping others, capacity to govern, varieties 28
of the gift of 'tongues.' Can everyone be an apostle? Can everyone
be a preacher? Can everyone be a teacher? Can everyone have su- 29
pernatural powers? Can everyone have power to cure diseases? 30
Can everyone speak in 'tongues'? Can everyone interpret them?
Strive for the greater gifts. 31

Yet I can still show you a way beyond all comparison the best.

Though I speak in the 'tongues' of people, or even of angels, 13
yet have not love, I have become mere echoing brass, or a
clanging cymbal! Even though I have the gift of preaching, and 2
fathom all hidden truths and all the depths of knowledge; even
though I have such faith as might move mountains, yet have not
love, I am nothing! Even though I dole my substance to the 3
poor, even though I sacrifice my body in order to boast, yet have
not love, it avails me nothing! love is long-suffering, and kind; 4

5 love is never envious, never boastful, never conceited, never
 6 behaves unbecomingly; love is never self-seeking, never
 7 provoked, never reckons up her wrongs; love never rejoices at
 8 evil, but rejoices in the triumph of truth; love bears with all
 9 things, every trustful, ever hopeful, ever patient. love never
 10 fails. But, whether it be the gift of preaching, it will be done
 11 with; whether it be the gift of 'tongues,' it will cease; whether it
 12 be knowledge, it, too, will be done with. For our knowledge is
 13 incomplete, and our preaching is incomplete, but, when the
 14 perfect has come, that which is incomplete will be done with.
 When I was a child, I talked as a child, I felt as a child, I
 reasoned as a child; now that I am a man, I have done with
 childish ways. As yet we see, in a mirror, dimly, but then — face
 to face! As yet my knowledge is incomplete, but then I will know
 in full, as I have been fully known. Meanwhile faith, hope, and
 love endure — these three, but the greatest of these is love. Seek
 this love earnestly, and strive for spiritual gifts, above all for the
 gift of preaching. The person who, when speaking, uses the gift
 of 'tongues' is speaking, not to people, but to God, for no one
 understands them; yet in spirit they are speaking of hidden
 truths. But those who preach are speaking to their fellow men
 and women words that will build up faith, and give them
 comfort and encouragement. Those who, when speaking, use
 the gift of 'tongues' builds up their own faith, while those who
 preach build up the faith of the church. Now I want you all to
 speak in 'tongues,' but much more I wish that you should
 preach. A preacher is worth more than one who speaks in
 'tongues,' unless they interprets their words, so that the faith of
 the church may be built up. This being so, friends, what good
 will I do you, if I come to you and speak in 'tongues,' unless my
 words convey some revelation, or knowledge, or take the form
 of preaching or teaching? Even with inanimate things, such as a
 flute or a harp, though they produce sounds, yet unless the
 notes are quite distinct, how can the tune played on the flute or
 the harp be recognized? If the bugle sounds a doubtful call,
 who will prepare for battle? And so with you; unless, in using
 the gift of 'tongues,' you utter intelligible words, how can what
 you say be understood? You will be speaking to the winds!
 There is, for instance, a certain number of different languages in
 the world, and not one of them fails to convey meaning. If,

however, I do not happen to know the language, I will be a
foreigner to those who speak it, and they will be foreigners to
me. And so with you; since you are striving for spiritual gifts, 12
be eager to excel in such as will build up the faith of the church.
Therefore let him who, when speaking, uses the gift of 'tongues' 13
pray for ability to interpret them. If, when praying, I use the gift 14
of 'tongues,' my spirit indeed prays, but my mind is a blank.
What, then, is my conclusion? Simply this — I will pray with 15
my spirit, but with my mind as well; I will sing with my spirit,
but with my mind as well. If you bless God with your spirit 16
only, how can people in the congregation who are without your
gift say 'Amen' to your thanksgiving? They do not know what 17
you are saying! Your thanksgiving may be excellent, but the
other is not helped by it. Thank God, I use the gift of 'tongues' 18
more than any of you. But at a meeting of the church I would 19
rather speak five words with my mind, and so teach others, than
ten thousand words when using the gift of 'tongues.'
My friends, do not show yourselves children in understanding. 20
In wickedness be infants, but in understanding show yourselves
adults. It is said in the law — 21

'In strange tongues and by the lips of strangers will I speak
to this people, but even then they will not listen to me, says
the Lord.'

Therefore the gift of the 'tongues' is intended as a sign, not for 22
those who believe in Christ, but for those who do not, while the
gift of preaching is intended as a sign, not for those who do not be- 23
lieve in Christ, but for those who do. So, when the whole church
meets, if all present use the gift of 'tongues,' and some people
who are without the gift, or who are unbelievers, come in, will 24
not they say that you are mad? While, if all those present use the
gift of preaching, and an unbeliever, or someone without the gift,
comes in, they are convinced of their sinfulness by them all, they 25
are called to account by them all; the secrets of their heart are
revealed, and then, throwing themselves on their face, they will
worship God, and declare 'God is indeed among you!'

What do I suggest, then, friends? Whenever you meet for wor- 26
ship, each of you comes, either with a hymn, or a lesson, or a
revelation, or the gift of 'tongues,' or the interpretation of them;
let everything be directed to the building up of faith. If any of 27

you use the gift of 'tongues,' not more than two, or at the most three, should do so — each speaking in his turn — and some one should interpret them. If there is no one able to interpret what is said, they should remain silent at the meeting of the church, and speak to themselves and to God. Of preachers two or three should speak, and the rest should weigh well what is said. But, if some revelation is made to another person as he sits there, the first speaker should stop. For you can all preach in turn, so that all may learn some lesson and all receive encouragement. (The spirit that moves the preachers is within the preachers' control; for God is not a God of disorder, but of peace.) This custom prevails in all the churches of Christ's people.

At the meetings of the church married women should remain silent, for they are not allowed to speak in public; they should take a subordinate place, as the law itself directs. If they want information on any point, they should ask their husbands about it at home; for it is unbecoming for a married woman to speak at a meeting of the church. What! Did God's message to the world originate with you? Or did it find its way to none but you? If anyone thinks that he has the gift of preaching or any other spiritual gift, let him recognize that what I am now saying to you is a command from the Lord. Anyone who ignores it may be ignored. Therefore, my friends, strive for the gift of preaching, and yet do not forbid speaking in 'tongues.' Let everything be done in a proper and orderly manner.

The Apostle's Teaching as to the Resurrection of the Dead

15 NEXT, friends, I would like to remind you of the good news which I told you, and which you received — the good news on which you have taken your stand, and by means of which you are being saved. I would like to remind you of the words that I used in telling it to you, since you are still holding fast to it, and since it was not in vain that you became believers in Christ. For at the very beginning of my teaching I gave you the account which I had myself received — that Christ died for our sins (as the scriptures had foretold), that he was buried, that on the third day he was raised (as the scriptures had foretold), and that he appeared to

Cephas, and then to the Twelve. After that, he appeared to more than five hundred of his followers at one time, most of whom are still alive, though some have gone to their rest. After that, he appeared to James, and then to all the apostles. Last of all, he appeared even to me, who am, as it were, the abortion. For I am the meanest of the apostles, I who am unworthy of the name of 'apostle,' because I persecuted the church of God. But it is through the love of God that I am what I am, and the love that he showed me has not been wasted. No, I have toiled harder than any of them, and yet it was not I, but the love of God working with me. Whether, then, it was I or whether it was they, this we proclaim, and this you believed.

Now, if it is proclaimed of Christ that he has been raised from the dead, how is it that some of you say that there is no such thing as a resurrection of the dead? But, if there is no such thing as a resurrection of the dead, then even Christ has not been raised; and, if Christ has not been raised, then our proclamation is without meaning, and our faith without meaning also! Yes, and we are being proved to have borne false testimony about God; for we testified of God that he raised the Christ, whom he did not raise, if, indeed, the dead do not rise! For, if the dead do not rise, then even Christ himself has not been raised, and, if Christ has not been raised, your faith is folly — your sins are on you still! Yes, and they, who have passed to their rest in union with Christ, perished! If all that we have done has been to place our hope in Christ for this life, then we of all people are the most to be pitied. But, in truth, Christ has been raised from the dead, the first-fruits of those who are at rest. For, since through a man there is death, so, too, through a man there is a resurrection of the dead. For, as through union with Adam all die, so through union with the Christ will all be made to live. But each in their proper order — Christ the first-fruits; afterwards, at his coming, those who belong to the Christ. Then will come the end — when he surrenders the kingdom to his God and Father, having overthrown all other rule and all other authority and power. For he must reign until God 'has put all his enemies under his feet.' The last enemy to be overthrown is death; for God has placed all things under Christ's feet. (But, when it is said that all things have been placed under

28 Christ, it is plain that God is excepted who placed everything un-
29 der him.) And, when everything has been placed under him, the
30 Son will place himself under God who placed everything under
31 him, so that God may be all in all! Again, what good will they be
32 doing who are baptized on behalf of the dead? If it is true that the
33 dead do not rise, why are people baptized on their behalf? Why,
too, do we risk our lives every hour? Daily I face death — I swear
it, friends, by the pride in you that I feel through my union with
Christ Jesus, our Lord. If with only human hopes I had fought in
the arena at Ephesus, what should I have gained by it? If the dead
do not rise, then — 'Let us eat and drink, for tomorrow we will
die'! Do not be deceived.

'Good character is marred by evil company.'

34 Wake up to a righteous life, and cease to sin. There are some who
have no true knowledge of God. I speak in this way to shame you.

35 Some one, however, may ask 'How do the dead rise? And in
36 what body will they come?' You foolish person! The seed you
37 yourself sow does not come to life, unless it dies! And when
you sow, you sow not the body that will be, but a mere grain —
38 perhaps of wheat, or something else. God gives it the body that
39 he pleases — to each seed its special body. All forms of life are
40 not the same; there is one for people, another for beasts, another
41 for birds, and another for fishes. There are heavenly bodies, and
earthly bodies; but the beauty of the heavenly bodies is not the
42 beauty of the earthly. There is a beauty of the sun, and a beauty of
the moon, and a beauty of the stars; for even star differs from star
43 in beauty. It is the same with the resurrection of the dead. Sown
44 a mortal body, it rises immortal; sown disfigured, it rises beautiful;
45 sown weak, it rises strong; sown a human body, it rises a spiritual
46 body. As surely as there is a human body, there is also a spiritual
47 body. That is what is meant by the words — 'Adam, the first man,
48 became a human being'; the last Adam became a life-giving spirit.
That which comes first is not the spiritual, but the human; after-
49 wards comes the spiritual; the first man was from the dust of the
earth; the second man from heaven. Those who are of the dust are
like him who came from the dust; and those who are of heaven
are like him who came from heaven. And as we have borne the

likeness of him who came from the dust, so let us bear the likeness of him who came from heaven. This I say, friends — Flesh and blood can have no share in the kingdom of God, nor can the perishable share the imperishable. Listen, I will tell you God's hidden purpose! We will not all have passed to our rest, but we will all be transformed — in a moment, in the twinkling of an eye, at the last trumpet-call; for the trumpet will sound, and the dead will rise immortal, and we, also, will be transformed. For this perishable body of ours must put on an imperishable form, and this dying body a deathless form. And, when this dying body has put on its deathless form, then indeed will the words of scripture come true —

'death has been swallowed up in victory! Where, Death, is your victory? Where, death, is your sting?'

It is sin that gives death its sting, and it is the law that gives sin its power. But thanks be to God, who gives us the victory, through Jesus Christ, our Lord. Therefore, my dear friends, stand firm, unshaken, always diligent in the Lord's work, for you know that, in union with him, your toil is not in vain.

Conclusion

WITH REFERENCE TO THE COLLECTION FOR CHRIST'S PEOPLE, I want you to follow the instructions that I gave to the churches in Galatia. On the first day of every week each of you should put by what he can afford, so that no collections need be made after I have come. On my arrival, I will send any persons, whom you may authorize by letter, to carry your gift to Jerusalem; and, if it appears to be worth while for me to go also, they will go with me. I will come to you as soon as I have been through Macedonia — for I am going through Macedonia — And I will probably make some stay with you or, perhaps, remain for the winter, so that you may yourselves send me on my way, wherever I may be going. I do not propose to pay you a visit in passing now, for I hope to stay with you for some time, if the Lord permits. I intend, however, staying at Ephesus until the Festival at the close of the Harvest; for a great opening for active work has presented itself, and there are many opponents.

10 If Timothy comes, take care that he has no cause for feeling anx-
11 ious while he is with you. He is doing the Master's work no less
12 than I am. No one, therefore, should slight him. See him safely on
13 his way to me, for I am expecting him with some of our friends.

12 As for our friend Apollos, I have often urged him to go to you
13 with the others. He has, however, been very unwilling to do so as
14 yet; but he will go as soon as he finds a good opportunity.

13 Be watchful; stand firm in your faith; be brave; be strong. Let
14 everything you do be done in a loving spirit.

15 I have another request to make of you, friends. You remember
16 Stephanas and his household, and that they were the first-fruits
17 gathered in from Greece, and set themselves to serve Christ's peo-
18 ple. I want you, on your part, to show deference to such people as
19 these, as well as to every fellow laborer and earnest worker. I am
20 glad Stephanas and Fortunatus and Achaicus have come, for they
21 have made up for your absence; they have cheered my heart, and
22 your hearts also. Recognize the worth of such people as these.

19 The churches in Roman Asia send you their greetings. Aquila
20 and Prisca and the church that meets at their house send you
21 many Christian greetings. All of the Lord's followers send you
22 greetings. Greet one another with a sacred kiss.

21 I, Paul, add this greeting in my own handwriting. Accursed be
22 anyone who has no love for the Lord. THE LORD IS COMING.
23 May the blessing of the Lord Jesus be with you. My love to all of
24 you who are in union with Christ Jesus.

PAUL'S SECOND LETTER TO THE CORINTHIANS

Introduction

TO THE CHURCH OF GOD IN CORINTH, and to all Christ's people 1
throughout Greece, from Paul, an apostle of Christ Jesus, by the
will of God, and from Timothy, who is also a follower. May 2
God, our Father, and the Lord Jesus Christ bless you and give
you peace.

Blessed is the God and Father of Jesus Christ our Lord, the 3
all-merciful Father, the God ever ready to console, who consoles 4
us in all our troubles, so that we may be able to console those
who are in any trouble with the consolation that we ourselves
receive from him. It is true that we have our full share of the 5
sufferings of the Christ, but through the Christ we have also our
full share of consolation. If we meet with trouble, it is for the 6
sake of your consolation and salvation; and, if we find
consolation, it is for the sake of the consolation that you will
experience when you are called to endure the sufferings that we
ourselves are enduring; and our hope for you remains 7
unshaken. We know that, as you are sharing our sufferings, you
will also share our consolation. We want you, friends, to know 8
that, in the troubles which befell us in Roman Asia, we were
burdened altogether beyond our strength, so much so that we
even despaired of life. Indeed, we had the presentiment that we 9
must die, so that we might rely, not on ourselves, but on God
who raises the dead. And from so imminent a death God 10
delivered us, and will deliver us again; for in him we have
placed our hopes of future deliverance, while you, also, help us
by your prayers. And then many lips will give thanks on our 11
behalf for the blessing granted us in answer to many prayers.

The Apostle's Relations with his Converts

12 INDEED, our main ground for satisfaction is this — Our conscience
 tells us that our conduct in the world, and still more in our rela-
 tions with you, was marked by a purity of motive and a sincerity
 that were inspired by God, and was based, not on worldly policy,
 13 but on the help of God. We never write anything to you other than
 14 what you will acknowledge to the very end — And, indeed, you
 have already partly acknowledged it about us — that you have a
 right to be proud of us, as we will be proud of you, on the day of
 our Lord Jesus.

15 With this conviction in my mind, I planned to come to see you
 16 first, so that your pleasure might be doubled — To visit you both
 on my way to Macedonia, and to come to you again on my return
 from Macedonia, and then to get you to send me on my way into
 17 Judea. As this was my plan, where, pray, did I show any fickleness
 of purpose? Or do you think that my plans are formed on mere
 18 impulse, so that in the same breath I say 'Yes' and 'No'? As God
 is true, the message that we brought you does not waver between
 19 'Yes' and 'No!' The Son of God, Christ Jesus, whom we — Silas,
 Timothy, and I — proclaimed among you, never wavered between
 20 'Yes' and 'No.' With him it has always been 'Yes.' For, many as
 were the promises of God, in Christ is the 'Yes' that fulfills them.
 Therefore, through Christ again, let the 'Amen' rise, through us, to
 21 the glory of God. God who brings us, with you, into close union
 22 with Christ, and who consecrated us, also set his seal on us, and
 gave us his Spirit in our hearts as a pledge of future blessings.
 23 But, as my life will answer for it, I call God to witness that it was
 24 to spare you that I deferred my visit to Corinth. I do not mean that
 we are to dictate to you with regard to your faith; on the contrary,
 we work with you for your true happiness; indeed, it is through
 2 your faith that you are standing firm. For my own sake, as well,
 2 I decided not to pay you another painful visit. If it is I who cause
 you pain, why, who is there to cheer me, except the person whom
 3 I am paining? So I wrote as I did because I was afraid that if I
 had come, I should have been pained by those who ought to have
 made me glad; for I felt sure that it was true of you all that my joy
 4 was in every case yours also. I wrote to you in sore trouble and

distress of heart and with many tears, not to give you pain, but to let you see how intense a love I have for you.

Now whoever has caused the pain has not so much pained 5
me, as he has, to some extent — not to be too severe — pained 6
every one of you. The man to whom I refer has been sufficiently 6
punished by the penalty inflicted by the majority of you; so that 7
now you must take the opposite course, and forgive and encour- 7
age him, or else he may be overwhelmed by the intensity of his 8
pain. So I entreat you to assure him of your love. I had this fur- 8
ther object, also, in what I wrote — to find out whether you might 9
be relied on to be obedient in everything. Anyone you forgive, I 10
forgive them, too. Indeed, for my part, whatever I have forgiven 10
(if I have had to forgive anything), I have forgiven for your sakes,
in the presence of Christ, so as to prevent Satan from taking ad- 11
vantage of us; for we are not ignorant of his devices.

When I went to the district around Troas to tell the good news 12
of the Christ, even though there was an opening for serving the 12
Master, I could get no peace of mind because I failed to find Ti- 13
tus, my friend; so I took leave of the people there, and went on to 13
Macedonia. All thanks to God, who, through our union with the 14
Christ, leads us in one continual triumph, and uses us to spread 14
the sweet perfume of the knowledge of him in every place. For 15
we are the fragrance of Christ ascending to God — both among 15
those who are in the path of salvation and among those who are in 16
the path to ruin. To the latter we are a stench which arises from 16
death and tells of death; to the former a fragrance which arises 17
from life and tells of life. But who is equal to such a task? Unlike 17
many people, we are not in the habit of making profit out of God's
message; but in all sincerity, and bearing God's commission, we
speak before him in union with Christ.

Are we beginning to commend ourselves again? Or are we like 3
some who need letters of commendation to you, or from you? You 3
yourselves are our letter — a letter written on our hearts, and one 2
which everybody can read and understand. All can see that you 3
are a letter from Christ delivered by us, a letter written, not with
ink, but with the Spirit of the living God, not on 'tablets of stone,'
but on 'tablets of human hearts.'

The Ministry of the Apostles

- 4 THIS, then, is the confidence in regard to God that we have gained
 5 through the Christ. I do not mean that we are fit to form any
 6 judgment by ourselves, as if on our own authority; our fitness
 comes from God, who himself made us fit to be ministers of a
 new covenant, of which the substance is, not a written law, but a
 Spirit. For the written law means death, but the Spirit gives life.
- 7 If the system of religion which involved death, embodied in a
 written law and engraved on stones, began amid such glory, that
 the Israelites were unable to gaze at the face of Moses because of
 8 its glory, though it was but a passing glory, will not the religion
 9 that confers the Spirit have still greater glory? For, if there was
 a glory in the religion that involved condemnation, far greater is
 10 the glory of the religion that confers righteousness! Indeed, that
 which then had glory has lost its glory, because of the glory which
 11 surpasses it. And, if that which was to pass away was attended
 with glory, far more will that which is to endure be surrounded
 with glory!
- 12 With such a hope as this, we speak with all plainness; unlike
 13 Moses, who covered his face with a veil, to prevent the Israelites
 from gazing at the disappearance of what was passing away. But
 14 their minds were slow to learn. Indeed, to this very day, at the
 public reading of the old covenant, the same veil remains ; only
 15 for those who are in union with Christ does it pass away. But,
 even to this day, whenever Moses is read, a veil lies on their hearts.
 16 'Yet, whenever someone turns to the Lord, the veil is removed.'
 17 And the 'Lord' is the Spirit, and, where the Spirit of the Lord is,
 18 there is freedom. And all of us, with faces from which the veil
 is lifted, seeing, as if reflected in a mirror, the glory of the Lord,
 are being transformed into his likeness, from glory to glory, as it
 is given by the Lord, the Spirit.
- 4 Therefore, since it is by God's mercy that we are engaged
 2 in this ministry, we do not lose heart. No, we have renounced
 the secrecy prompted by shame, refusing to adopt crafty ways,
 or to tamper with God's message, and commending ourselves to
 everyone's conscience, in the sight of God, by our exhibition of
 3 the truth. And, even if the good news that we bring is veiled,
 it is veiled only in the case of those who are on the path to ruin
 4 — people whose minds have been blinded by the God of this

age, unbelievers as they are, so that the light from the good news of the glory of the Christ, who is the incarnation of God, should not shine for them. (For it is not ourselves that we proclaim, but Christ Jesus, as Lord, and ourselves as your servants for Jesus' sake.) Indeed, the same God who said 'Out of darkness light will shine,' has shone in on our hearts, so that we should bring out into the light the knowledge of the glory of God, seen in the face of Christ.

This treasure we have in these earthen vessels, so that its all-prevailing power may be seen to come from God, and not to be our own. Though hard pressed on every side, we are never hemmed in; through perplexed, never driven to despair; though pursued, never abandoned; though struck down, never killed! We always bear on our bodies the marks of the death that Jesus died, so that the life also of Jesus may be exhibited in our bodies. Indeed, we who still live are continually being given over to death for Jesus' sake, so that the life also of Jesus may be exhibited in our mortal nature. And so, while death is at work within us, life is at work within you. But, in the same spirit of faith as that expressed in the words — 'I believed, and therefore I spoke,' we, also believe, and therefore speak. For we know that he who raised the Lord Jesus will raise us also with him, and will bring us, with you, into his presence. For all this is for your sakes, so that the loving kindness of God, spreading from heart to heart, may cause yet more hearts to overflow with thanksgiving, to his glory.

Therefore, as I said, we do not lose heart. No, even though outwardly we are wasting away, yet inwardly we are being renewed day by day. The light burden of our momentary trouble is preparing for us, in measure transcending thought, a weight of imperishable glory; we, all the while, gazing not on what is seen, but on what is unseen; for what is seen is transient, but what is unseen is imperishable. For we know that if our tent — that earthly body which is now our home — is taken down, we have a house of God's building, a home not made by hands, imperishable, in heaven. Even while in our present body we sigh, longing to put over it our heavenly house, sure that, when we have put it on, we will never be found discarnate. For we who are in this 'tent' sigh

under our burden, unwilling to take it off, yet wishing to put our heavenly body over it, so that all that is mortal may be absorbed
5 in life. And he who has prepared us for this change is God, who has also given us his Spirit as a pledge.

6 Therefore we are always confident, knowing that, while our home is in the body, we are absent from our home with the Lord.
7 For we guide our lives by faith, and not by what we see. And in
8 this confidence we would gladly leave our home in the body, and
9 make our home with the Lord. Therefore, whether in our home or
10 absent from our home, our one ambition is to please him. For at the court of the Christ we must all appear in our true characters, so that each may reap the results of the life which he has lived in the body, in accordance with his actions — whether good or worthless.

11 Therefore, because we know the fear inspired by the Lord, it is true that we are trying to win people over, but our motives are plain to God; and I hope that in your inmost hearts they are plain
12 to you also. We are not “commending ourselves” again to you, but rather are giving you cause for pride in us, so that you may have an answer ready for those who pride themselves on appear-
13 ances and not on character. For, if we were “beside ourselves,” it was in God’s service! If we are not in our senses, it is in yours! It is the love of the Christ which compels us, when we reflect that,
14 as one died for all, therefore all died; and that he died for all, so that the living should no longer live for themselves, but for him who died and rose for them.

15
16 For ourselves, then, from this time forward, we refuse to regard anyone from the world’s standpoint. Even if we once thought of Christ from the standpoint of the world, yet now we do so no
17 longer. Therefore, if anyone is in union with Christ, he is a new being! His old life has passed away; a new life has begun! But
18 all this is the work of God, who reconciled us to himself through Christ, and gave us the Ministry of Reconciliation — To proclaim
19 that God, in Christ, was reconciling the world to himself, not reckoning people’s offenses against them, and that he had entrusted us with the message of this reconciliation.

20 It is, then, on Christ’s behalf that we are acting as ambassadors, God, as it were, appealing to you through us. We implore you on

Christ's behalf — Be reconciled to God. For our sake God made 21
 Christ, who was innocent of sin, one with our sinfulness, so that in
 him we might be made one with the righteousness of God. There-
 fore, as God's fellow workers, we also appeal to you not to receive 6
 his loving kindness in vain. For he says — 2

'At the time for acceptance I listened to you,
 And on the day of deliverance I helped you.'

Now is the time for acceptance! Now is the day of deliverance!
 Never do we put an obstacle in anyone's way, so that no fault 3
 may be found with our ministry. No, we are trying to commend 4
 ourselves under all circumstances, as God's ministers should — in
 many an hour of endurance, in troubles, in hardships, in difficul- 5
 ties, in floggings, in imprisonments, in riots, in toils, in sleepless 6
 nights, in fastings; by purity, by knowledge, by patience, by kind- 7
 liness, by holiness of spirit, by unfeigned love; by the message of 8
 truth, and by the power of God; by the weapons of righteousness
 in the right hand and in the left; amid honor and disrepute, amid 9
 slander and praise; regarded as deceivers, yet proved to be true;
 as unknown, yet well-known; as at death's door, yet, see, we are 10
 living; as chastised, yet not killed; as saddened, yet always re-
 joicing; as poor, yet enriching many; as having nothing, and yet
 possessing all things!

The Apostle and his Converts

WE HAVE BEEN SPEAKING FREELY TO YOU, dear friends in Corinth; we 11
 have opened our heart; there is room there for you, yet there is 12
 not room, in your love, for us. Can you not in return — I appeal 13
 to you as I should to children — open your hearts to us?
 Do not enter into inconsistent relations with those who reject the 14
 faith. For what partnership can there be between righteousness
 and lawlessness? Or what has light to do with darkness? What 15
 harmony can there be between Christ and Belial? Or what can
 those who accept the faith have in common with those who reject 16
 it? What agreement can you be between a temple of God and
 idols? And we are a temple of the living God. That is what God
 meant when he said —

'I will live among them, and walk among them;

17 And I will be their God, and they will be my people.
 Therefore "Come out from among the nations, and separate yourselves from them," says the Lord,
 "And touch nothing impure;
 And I will welcome you;
 18 and I will be a father to you, and you will be my sons and daughters,"
 says the Lord, the Ruler of all.'

7 With these promises, dear friends, let us purify ourselves from everything that pollutes either body or spirit, and, in deepest respect for God, aim at perfect holiness.

2 Make room for us in your hearts. In no instance have we ever
 3 wronged, or harmed, or taken advantage of, anyone. I am not saying this to condemn you. Indeed, I have already said that you
 4 are in our heart, to live and die together. I have the utmost confidence in you; I am always boasting about you. I am full of encouragement and, in spite of all our troubles, my heart is overflowing with happiness.

5 Ever since we reached Macedonia, we have had no rest in body or mind; on every side there have been troubles — conflicts without, anxieties within. But God, who encourages the downcast,
 6 has encouraged us by the arrival of Titus. And it is not only by his arrival that we are encouraged, but also by the encouragement which he received from you; for he tells us of your strong affection, your penitence, and your zeal on my behalf — so that I am
 8 happier still. For, though I caused you sorrow by my letter, I do not regret it. Even if I were inclined to regret it — for I see that my
 9 letter did cause you sorrow though only for a time — I am glad now; not because of the sorrow it caused you, but because your sorrow brought you to repentance. For it was God's will that you should feel sorrow, in order that you should not suffer loss in any
 10 way at our hands. For, when sorrow is in accordance with God's will, it results in a repentance leading to salvation, and which will never be regretted. The sure result of the sorrow that the world
 11 knows is death. For see what results that other sorrow — sorrow in accordance with God's will — has had in your case. What earnestness it produced! What explanations! What strong feeling! What alarm! What longing! What eagerness! What readiness to punish! You have proved yourselves altogether free from guilt in

that matter. So, then, even though I did write to you, it was not for 12
the sake of the wrong-doer, or of the man who was wronged, but
to make you conscious, in the sight of God, of your own earnest
care for us. And it is this that has encouraged us.

In addition to the encouragement that this gave us, we were 13
made far happier still by the happiness of Titus for his heart has
been cheered by you all. Although I have been boasting a little 14
to him about you, you did not put me to shame; but, just as every
thing we had said to you was true, so our boasting to Titus about
you has also proved to be the truth. And his affection for you is 15
all the greater, as he remembers the deference that you all showed
him, and recalls how you received him with anxious care. I am 16
glad that I can feel perfect confidence in you.

The Palestine Famine Fund

WE WANT TO REMIND YOU, friends, of the love that God has shown 8
to the churches in Macedonia — How, tired though they were by 2
many a trouble, their overflowing happiness, and even their deep
poverty, resulted in a flood of generosity. I can bear witness that 3
to the full extent of their power, and even beyond their power,
spontaneously, and with many an appeal to us for permission, 4
they showed their love, and contributed their share towards the
fund for their fellow Christians. And that, not only in the way we 5
had expected; but first they gave themselves to the Lord, and to
us also, in accordance with God’s will. And this led us beg Titus, 6
since he had started the work for you, he should also see to the
completion of this expression of your love. And, remembering 7
how you excel in everything — in faith, in teaching, in knowl-
edge, in unflinching earnestness, and in the affection that we have
awakened in you — I ask you to excel also in this expression of
your love.

I am not laying a command on you, but I am making use of 8
the earnestness shown by others to test the genuineness of your
affection. For you do not forget the loving kindness of our Lord 9
Jesus Christ — how that for your sakes, although he was rich,
he became poor, so that you also might become rich through his
poverty. I am only making suggestions on this matter; for this is 10
the best course for you, since you were a year before others, not

only in taking action, but also in showing your readiness to do so.
 11 And now I want you to complete the work, so that its completion
 12 may correspond with your willing readiness — in proportion, of
 13 course, to your means. For, where there is willingness, a person's
 14 gift is valued by its comparison with what they have, and not with
 15 what they do not have. For our object is not to give relief to oth-
 16 ers and bring distress on you. It is a matter of a fair balance. On
 17 this occasion what you can spare will supply what they need, at
 18 another time what they can spare may supply your need, and so
 19 things will be equal. As scripture says —

'Those who had much had nothing over, and those who
 had little did not lack!'

16 I thank God for inspiring Titus with the same keen interest in
 17 your welfare that I have; for Titus has responded to my appeals
 18 and, in his great earnestness, is starting to go to you of his own
 19 accord. We are sending with him one of the Lord's followers
 20 whose fame in the service of the good news has spread through
 21 all the churches; and not only that, but he has been elected by the
 22 churches to accompany us on our journey, in connexion with this
 23 expression of your love, which we are personally administering
 24 to the honor of the Lord, and to show our deep interest. What we
 25 are specially guarding against is that any fault should be found
 26 with us in regard to our administration of this charitable fund;
 27 for we are trying to make arrangements which will be right, not
 28 only in the eyes of the Lord, but also in the eyes of people. We are
 29 also sending with them another of our friends, whose earnestness
 30 we have many a time proved in many ways, and whom we now
 31 find made even more earnest by his great confidence in you. If I
 32 must say anything about Titus, he is my intimate companion, and
 33 he shares my work for you; if it is our friends, they are delegates
 34 of the churches, an honor to Christ. Show them, therefore — so
 35 that the churches may see it — the proof of your affection, and
 36 the ground for our boasting to them about you.

9 With reference, indeed, to the Fund for your fellow Christians,
 2 it is quite superfluous for me to say anything to you. I know, of
 3 course, your willingness to help, and I am always boasting of it to
 4 the Macedonians. I tell them that you in Greece have been ready
 5 for a year past; and it was really your zeal that stimulated most of
 6 them. So my reason for sending our friends is to prevent what we

said about you from proving, in this particular matter, an empty boast, and to enable you to be as well prepared as I have been saying that you are. Otherwise, if any Macedonians were to come with me, and find you unprepared, we — to say nothing of you — should feel ashamed of our present confidence. Therefore I think it necessary to beg the friends to go to you in advance, and to complete the arrangements for the gift, which you have already promised, so that it may be ready, as a gift, before I come, and not look as if it were being given under pressure.

Remember the saying — ‘Scanty sowing, scanty harvest; plentiful sowing, plentiful harvest.’ Let everyone give as he has determined before hand, not grudgingly or under compulsion; for God loves ‘a cheerful giver.’ God has power to shower all kinds of blessings on you, so that, having, under all circumstances and on all occasions, all that you can need, you may be able to shower all kinds of benefits on others. (As scripture says —

‘He scattered broadcast, he gave to the poor; His righteousness continues for ever.’

And he who supplies ‘seed to the sower, and bread for eating,’ will supply you with seed, and cause it to increase, and will multiply ‘the fruits of your righteousness’). Rich in all things yourselves, you will be able to show liberality to all, which, with our help, will cause thanksgiving to be offered to God. For the rendering of a public service such as this, not only relieves the needs of your fellow Christians, but also results in the offering to God of many a thanksgiving. Through the evidence afforded by the service rendered, you cause people to praise God for your fidelity to your profession of faith in the good news of the Christ, as well as for the liberality of your contributions for them and for all others. And they also, in their prayers for you, express their longing to see you, because of the surpassing love of God displayed toward you. All thanks to God for his inestimable gift!

The Apostle's Claims and Authority

Now, I, Paul, make a personal appeal to you by the meekness and gentleness of the Christ — I who, “in your presence, am humble

in my bearing towards you, but, when absent, am bold in my language to you" — I implore you not to drive me to "show my boldness," when I do come, by the confident tone which I expect to have to adopt towards some of you, who are expecting to find us influenced in our conduct by earthly motives. For, though we live an earthly life, we do not wage an earthly war. The weapons for our warfare are not earthly, but, under God, are powerful enough to pull down strongholds. We are engaged in confuting arguments and pulling down every barrier raised against the knowledge of God. We are taking captive every hostile thought, to bring it into submission to the Christ, and are fully prepared to punish every act of rebellion, when once your submission is complete. You look at the outward appearance of things! Let anyone, who is confident that he belongs to Christ, reflect, for himself, again on the fact — that we belong to Christ no less than he does. Even if I boast extravagantly about our authority — which the Lord gave us for building up your faith and not for overthrowing it — still I have no reason to be ashamed. I say this so that it doesn't seem as if I am trying to overawe you by my letters. For people say "His letters are impressive and vigorous, but his personal appearance is insignificant and his speaking contemptible." Let such a person be assured of this — that our words in our letters show us to be, when absent, just what our deeds will show us to be, when present. We have not indeed the audacity to class or compare ourselves with some of those who indulge in self-commendation! But, when such persons measure themselves by themselves, and compare themselves with themselves, they show a want of wisdom. We, however, will not give way to unlimited boasting, but will confine ourselves to the limits of the sphere to which God limited us, when he permitted us to come as far as Corinth. For it is not the case, as it would be if we were not in the habit of coming to you, that we are exceeding our bounds! Why, we were the very first to reach you with the good news of the Christ! Our boasting, therefore, is not unlimited, nor does it extend to the labors of others; but our hope is that, as your faith grows, our influence among you may be very greatly increased — though still confined to our sphere — So that we will be able to tell the good news in the districts beyond you, without trespassing on the sphere assigned to others, or boasting of what has been already done. 'Let anyone who boasts make their boast of the Lord.' For it is not those

who commend themselves that stand the test, but those who are commended by the Lord.

I could wish that you would tolerate a little folly in me! But indeed you do tolerate me. I am jealous over you with the jealousy of God. For I engaged you to one husband so that I might present you to the Christ a pure bride. Yet I fear that it may turn out that, just as the snake by his craftiness deceived Eve, so your minds may have lost the loyalty and purity due from you to the Christ. For, if some newcomer is proclaiming a Jesus other than him whom we proclaimed, or if you are receiving a Spirit different from the Spirit which you received, or a good news different from that which you welcomed, then you are marvelously tolerant! I do not regard myself as in any way inferior to the most eminent apostles! Though I am no trained orator, yet I am not without knowledge; indeed we made this perfectly clear to you in every way.

Perhaps you say that I did wrong in humbling myself that you might be exalted — I mean because I told you God's good news without payment. I robbed other churches by taking pay from them, so that I might serve you! And, when I was with you in need, I did not become a burden to any of you; for our friends, on coming from Macedonia, supplied my needs. I kept myself, and will keep myself from being an expense to you in any way. As surely as I know anything of the truth of Christ, this boast, as far as I am concerned, will not be stopped in any part of Greece. Why? Because I do not love you? God knows that I do!

What I am doing now I will continue to do in order to cut away the ground from under those who are wishing for some ground for attacking me, so that as regards the thing of which they boast they may appear in their true characters, just as we do. Such people are false apostles, treacherous workers, disguising themselves as apostles of Christ! And no wonder; for even Satan disguises himself as an angel of light. It is not surprising, therefore, if his servants also disguise themselves as servants of righteousness. But their end will be in accordance with their actions.

16 I say again — Let no one think me a fool! Yet, if you do, at least
 17 welcome me as you would a fool, so that I, too may indulge in a
 18 little boasting. When I speak like this, I am not speaking as the
 19 Master would, but as a fool might, in boasting so confidently. As
 20 so many are boasting of earthly things, I, too, will boast. For all
 21 your cleverness, you tolerate fools willingly enough! You tolerate
 22 a person even when they enslave you, when they plunder you,
 23 when they get you into their power, when they put on airs of su-
 24 periority, when they strike you in the face! I admit, to my shame,
 25 that we have been weak. But whatever the subject on which oth-
 26 ers are not afraid to boast — though it is foolish to say so — I
 27 am not afraid either! Are they Hebrews? So am I! Are they Is-
 28 raelites? So am I! Are they descendants of Abraham? So am I! Are
 29 they ‘Servants of Christ’? Though it is madness to talk like this,
 30 I am more so than they! I have had more of toil, more of impris-
 31 onment! I have been flogged times without number. I have been
 32 often at death’s door. Five times I received at the hands of my
 33 own people forty lashes, all but one. Three times I was beaten
 with rods. Once I was stoned. Three times I was shipwrecked.
 I have spent a whole day and night in the deep. My journeys
 have been many. I have been through dangers from rivers, dan-
 gers from robbers, dangers from my own people, dangers from
 the Gentiles, dangers in towns, dangers in the country, dangers on
 the sea, dangers among people pretending to be followers of the
 Lord. I have been through toil and hardship. I have passed many
 a sleepless night; I have endured hunger and thirst; I have often
 been without food; I have known cold and nakedness. And, not
 to speak of other things, there is my daily burden of anxiety about
 all the churches. Who is weak without my being weak? Who is
 led astray without my burning with indignation? If I must boast,
 I will boast of things which show my weakness! The God and
 Father of the Lord Jesus — he who is for ever blessed — knows
 that I am speaking the truth. When I was in Damascus, the Gov-
 ernor under King Aretas had the gates of that city guarded, so as
 to arrest me, but I was let down in a basket through a window in
 the wall, and so escaped his hands.
 12 I must boast! It is unprofitable; but I will pass to visions and rev-
 2 elations given by the Lord. I know a man in union with Christ,
 who, fourteen years ago — whether in the body or out of the body
 I do not know; God knows — was caught up (this man of whom

I am speaking) to the third heaven. And I know that this man — 3
 whether in the body or separated from the body I do not know;
 God knows — Was caught up into Paradise, and heard unspeak- 4
 able things of which no human being may tell. About such a man 5
 I will boast, but about myself I will not boast except as regards my
 weaknesses. Yet if I choose to boast, I will not be a fool; for I will 6
 be speaking no more than the truth. But I refrain, in case anyone
 should credit me with more than he can see in me or hear from 7
 me, and because of the marvelous character of the revelations. It
 was for this reason, and to prevent my thinking too highly of my- 8
 self, that a thorn was sent to pierce my flesh — an instrument of
 Satan to discipline me — so that I should not think too highly of 9
 myself. About this I three times entreated the Lord, praying that
 it might leave me. But his reply has been — ‘My help is enough
 for you; for my strength attains its perfection in the midst of weak-
 ness.’

Most gladly, then, will I boast all the more of my weaknesses, so
 that the strength of the Christ may overshadow me. That is why 10
 I delight in weakness, ill treatment, hardship, persecution, and
 difficulties, when borne for Christ. For, when I am weak, then it
 is that I am strong!

Conclusion

I HAVE BEEN “PLAYING THE FOOL!” IT IS YOU WHO DROVE me to it. For 11
 it is you who ought to have been commending me! Although I
 am nobody, in no respect did I prove inferior to the most eminent
 apostles. The marks of the true apostle were exhibited among 12
 you in constant endurance, as well as by signs, by marvels, and
 by miracles. In what respect, I ask, were you treated worse than 13
 the other churches, unless it was that, for my part, I refused to
 become a burden to you? Forgive me the wrong I did to you!
 Remember, this is the third time that I have made every prepara- 14
 tion to come to see you, and I will refuse to be a burden to you;
 I want, not your money, but you. It is not the duty of children to
 put by for their parents, but of parents to put by for their children.
 For my part, I will most gladly spend, and be spent, for your wel- 15
 fare. Can it be that the more intensely I love you the less I am to
 be loved? You will admit that I was not a burden to you but you 16

- 17 say that I was “crafty” and caught you “by a trick”! Do you assert
 that I took advantage of you through any of those whom I have
 18 sent to you? I urged Titus to go, and I sent another follower with
 him. Did Titus take any advantage of you? Did not we live in the
 same Spirit, and tread in the same footsteps?
- 19 Have you all this time been fancying that it is to you that we
 are making our defense? No, it is in the sight of God, and in union
 with Christ, that we are speaking. And all this, dear friends, is to
 20 build up your characters; for I am afraid that perhaps, when I
 come, I may find that you are not what I want you to be, and,
 on the other hand, that you may find that I am what you do not
 want me to be. I am afraid that I may find quarreling, jealousy, ill
 feeling, rivalry, slandering, backbiting, self-assertion, and disorder.
 21 I am afraid that, on my next visit, my God may humble me
 in regard to you, and that I may have to mourn over many who
 have long been sinning, and have not repented of the impurity,
 immorality, and sensuality, in which they have indulged.
- 13 For the third time I am coming to see you. ‘By the word of
 2 two or three witnesses each statement will be established.’ I have
 said it, and I say it again before I come, just as if I were with you
 on my second visit, though for the moment absent, I say to those
 who have been long sinning, as well as to all others — that if I
 3 come again, I will spare no one. And that will be the proof, which
 you are looking for, that the Christ speaks through me. There is
 no weakness in his dealings with you. No, he shows his power
 4 among you. For though his crucifixion was due to weakness, his
 life is due to the power of God. And we, also, are weak in his
 weakness, but with him we will live for you through the power of
 5 God. Put yourselves to the proof, to see whether you are holding
 to the faith. Test yourselves. Surely you recognize this fact about
 yourselves — that Jesus Christ is in you! Unless indeed you cannot
 6 stand the test! But I hope that you will recognize that we can
 stand the test. We pray God that you may do nothing wrong, not
 7 that we may be seen to stand the test, but that you may do what is
 8 right, even though we may seem not to stand the test. We have no
 power at all against the truth, but we have power in the service
 9 of the truth. We are glad when we are weak, if you are strong.
 10 And what we pray for is that you may become perfect. This is
 my reason for writing as I am now doing, while I am away from
 you, so that, when I am with you, I may not act harshly in the

exercise of the authority which the Lord gave me — and gave me
for building up and not for pulling down.

And now, friends, goodbye. Aim at perfection; take courage; 11
agree together; live in peace. And then God, the source of all love
and peace, will be with you. Greet one another with a sacred kiss. 12
All Christ's people here send you their greetings. 13

May the blessing of the Lord Jesus Christ, and the love of God, 14
and the communion with the Holy Spirit, be with you all.

PAUL'S LETTER TO THE GALATIANS

Introduction

TO THE CHURCHES IN GALATIA, from Paul, an apostle whose com- 1
mission is not from any human authority and is given, not by hu-
man beings, but by Jesus Christ and God the Father who raised 2
him from the dead; and from all the followers of the Lord here. 2
May God, our Father, and the Lord Jesus Christ, bless you and 3
give you peace. For Christ, to rescue us from this present wicked 3
age, gave himself for our sins, in accordance with the will of 4
God and Father, to whom be ascribed all glory for ever and ever. 4
Amen. 5

I am astonished at your so soon deserting him, who called you 6
through the love of Christ, for a different 'good news,' Which is 7
really no good news at all. But then, I know that there are people
who are harassing you, and who want to pervert the good news 8
of the Christ. Yet even if we — or if an angel from heaven were 8
to tell you any other 'good news' than that which we told you,
may he be accursed! We have said it before, and I repeat it now 9
— If anyone tells you a 'good news' other than that which you
received, may he be accursed!

Is this, I ask, trying to conciliate people, or God? Am I seeking to 10
please people? If I were still trying to please people, I should not
be a servant of Christ.

The Independence of the Apostle's Gospel

I REMIND YOU, friends, that the good news which I told is no mere 11
human invention. I, at least, did not receive it from any human 12

being, nor was I taught it, but it came to me through a revelation made by Jesus Christ.

13 You heard, no doubt, of my conduct when I was devoted to Judaism — how I persecuted the church of God to an extent beyond
14 belief, and made havoc of it, and how, in my devotion to Judaism, I surpassed many of my contemporaries among my own people in my intense earnestness in upholding the traditions of my ancestors. But when God, who had set me apart even before my
15 birth, and who called me by his love, saw fit to reveal his Son in me, so that I might tell the good news of him among the Gentiles, then at once, instead of consulting any human being, or even going up to Jerusalem to see those who were apostles before me, I
16 went to Arabia, and came back again to Damascus. Three years afterwards I went up to Jerusalem to make the acquaintance of Peter, and I stayed a fortnight with him. I did not, however, see
17 any other apostle, except James, the Master's brother. (As to what I am now writing to you, I call God to witness that I am speaking the truth). Afterwards I went to the districts of Syria and Cilicia.
18 But I was still unknown even by sight to the Christian churches in Judea; all that they had heard was — 'The man who once persecuted us is now telling the good news of the faith of which he once made havoc.' And they praised God for my sake.

2 Fourteen years afterwards I went up to Jerusalem again with
2 Barnabas, and I took Titus also with me. It was in obedience to a revelation that I went; and I laid before the apostles the good news that I am proclaiming among the Gentiles. I did this privately before those who are thought highly of because I was afraid that I might possibly be taking, or might have already taken, a
3 course which would prove useless. Yet even my companion, Titus, though a Greek, was not compelled to be circumcised. But, because of those who pretended to be followers who had stolen in, the intruders who had crept in to spy on the liberty which we have through union with Christ Jesus, in order to bring us back
4 to slavery — Why, we did not for a moment yield submission to them, so that the truth of the good news might be yours always! Of those who are thought somewhat highly of — what they once were makes no difference to me; God does not recognize human distinctions — those, I say, who are thought highly
5 of added nothing to my message. On the contrary, they saw that I had been entrusted with the good news for the Gentiles, just as

Peter had been for the Jews. For he who gave Peter power for his mission to the Jews gave me, also, power to go to the Gentiles. Recognizing the charge entrusted to me, James, Peter, and John, who were regarded as pillars of the church, openly acknowledged Barnabas and me as fellow workers, agreeing that we should go to the Gentiles, and they to the Jews. Only we were to remember the poor — the thing I was myself anxious to do. But, when Peter came to Antioch, I opposed him to his face; for he stood self-condemned. Before certain persons came from James, he had been in the habit of eating with the Gentile converts; but, when they came, he began to withdraw and hold aloof, because he was afraid of offending those who still held to circumcision. The rest of the Jewish converts were guilty of the same hypocrisy, so that even Barnabas was led away by it. But, when I saw that they were not dealing straightforwardly with the truth of the good news, I said to Peter, before them all, "If you, who were born a Jew, adopt Gentile customs, instead of Jewish, why are you trying to compel the Gentile converts to adopt Jewish customs?"

The Law and the Gospel

WE, though we are Jews by birth and not outcasts of Gentile origin, know that no one is pronounced righteous as the result of obedience to law, but only through faith in Christ Jesus. So we placed our faith in Christ Jesus, in order that we might be pronounced righteous, as the result of faith in Christ, and not of obedience to law; for such obedience 'will not result in even one soul's being pronounced righteous.' If, while seeking to be pronounced righteous through union with Christ, we were ourselves seen to be outcasts, would that make Christ an agent of sin? Heaven forbid! For, if I rebuild the things that I pulled down, I prove myself to have done wrong. I, indeed, through law became dead to law, in order to live for God. I have been crucified with Christ. So it is no longer I that live, but it is Christ who lives in me; and, as for my present earthly life, I am living it by faith in the Son of God, who loved me and gave himself for me. I do not reject the love of God. If righteousness comes through law, then there was no need for Christ to die!

3 Foolish Galatians! Who has been fascinating you — you before
2 whose eyes Jesus Christ was depicted on the cross? Here is the
one thing that I want to find out from you — Did you receive the
Spirit as the result of obedience to law, or of your having listened
3 with faith? Can you be so foolish? After beginning with what
4 is spiritual, do you now end with what is external? Did you go
through so much to no purpose? — if indeed it really was to no
5 purpose! He who supplies you abundantly with his Spirit and
endows you with such powers — does he do this as the result of
obedience to law? Or as the result of your having listened with
6 faith? It is just as it was with Abraham —

‘He had faith in God, and his faith was regarded by God
as righteousness.’

7 You see, then, that those whose lives are based on faith are the
8 sons of Abraham. And scripture, foreseeing that God would pro-
nounce the Gentiles righteous as the result of faith, foretold the
good news to Abraham in the words —

‘Through you all the Gentiles will be blessed.’

9 And, therefore, those whose lives are based on faith share the
10 blessings bestowed on the faith of Abraham. All who rely on obe-
dience to law are under a curse, for scripture says —

‘Cursed is everyone who does not abide by all that is writ-
ten in the book of the law, and do it.’

11 Again, it is evident that no one is pronounced righteous before
God through law, for we read —

‘Through faith the righteous will find life.’

12 But the law is not based on faith; no, its words are —

‘Those who practice these precepts will find life through
them.’

13 Christ ransomed us from the curse pronounced in the law, by
taking the curse on himself for us, for scripture says —

‘Cursed is anyone who is hanged on a tree.’

14 And this he did that the blessing given to Abraham might be
extended to the Gentiles through their union with Jesus Christ;
that so, through our faith, we also might receive the promised
gift of the Spirit.

To take an illustration, friends, from daily life — No one sets 15
aside even an agreement between two people, when once it has
been confirmed, nor do they add conditions to it. Now it was to 16
Abraham that the promises were made, ‘and to his offspring.’ It
was not said ‘to his offsprings,’ as if many persons were meant,
but the words were ‘to your offspring,’ showing that one person
was meant — and that was Christ. My point is this — An agree- 17
ment already confirmed by God cannot be canceled by the law,
which came four hundred and thirty years later, so as to cause
the promise to be set aside. If our heritage is the result of law, 18
then it has ceased to be the result of a promise. Yet God conferred
it on Abraham by a promise.

What, then, you ask, was the use of the law? It was a later ad- 19
dition, to make people conscious of their wrong-doings, and in-
tended to last only until the coming of that ‘offspring’ to whom
the promise had been made; and it was delivered through angels
by a mediator. Now mediation implies more than one person, 20
but God is one only. Does that set the law in opposition to God’s
promises? Heaven forbid! For, if a law had been given capable of
bestowing life, then righteousness would have actually owed its 21
existence to law. But the words of scripture represent the whole
world as being in bondage to sin, so that the promised blessing, 22
dependent, as it is, on faith in Jesus Christ, may be given to those
who have faith in him.

Before the coming of faith, we were kept under the guard of 23
the law, in bondage, awaiting the faith that was destined to be
revealed. Thus the law has proved a guide to lead us to Christ, in 24
order that we may be pronounced righteous as the result of faith.
But now that faith has come we no longer need a guide. 25
For you are all sons of God, through your faith in Christ Jesus. 26
For all of you who were baptized into union with Christ clothed 27
yourselves with Christ. All distinctions between Jew and Greek, 28
slave and free, male and female, have vanished; for in union with
Christ Jesus you are all one. And, since you belong to Christ, it 29
follows that you are Abraham’s offspring and, under the promise,
sharers in the inheritance.

My point is this — As long as the heir is under age, there is 4
no difference between him and a slave, though he is master of the

2 whole estate. He is subject to the control of guardians and stewards, during the period for which his father has power to appoint
3 them. And so is it with us; when we were under age, as it were,
4 we were slaves to the puerile teaching of this world; but, when
5 the full time came, God sent his Son — born a woman's child,
6 born subject to law — To ransom those who were subject to law,
7 so that we might take our position as sons.

8 And it is because you are sons that God sent into our hearts the
9 Spirit of his Son, with the cry — 'Abba, our Father.' You, therefore,
10 are no longer a slave, but a son; and, if a son, then an heir also, by
11 God's appointment.

12 Yet formerly, in your ignorance of God, you became slaves to
13 'gods' which were no gods. But now that you have found God
14 — or, rather, have been found by him — how is it that you are
15 turning back to that poor and feeble puerile teaching, to which yet
16 once again you are wanting to become slaves? You are scrupulous
17 in keeping days and months and seasons and years! You make
18 me fear that the labor which I have spent on you may have been
19 wasted.

20 I entreat you, friends, to become like me, as I became like you. You
21 have never done me any wrong. You remember that it was owing
22 to bodily infirmity that on the first occasion I told you the good
23 news. And as for what must have tried you in my condition, it did
24 not inspire you with scorn or disgust, but you welcomed me as if
25 I had been an angel of God — or Christ Jesus himself! What has
26 become then, of your blessings? For I can bear witness that, had it
27 been possible, you would have torn out your eyes and given them
28 to me! Am I to think, then, that I have become your enemy by
29 telling you the truth? Certain people are seeking your favor, but
30 with no honorable object. No, indeed, they want to isolate you,
31 so that you will have to seek their favor. It is always honorable
32 to have your favor sought in an honorable cause, and not only
33 when I am with you, my dear children — You for whom I am
34 again enduring a mother's pains, until a likeness to Christ will
35 have been formed in you. But I could wish to be with you now
36 and speak in a different tone, for I am perplexed about you.

Tell me, you who want to be still subject to law — Why don't 21
 you listen to the law? scripture says that Abraham had two sons, 22
 one the child of the slave-woman and the other the child of the
 free woman. But the child of the slave-woman was born in the 23
 course of nature, while the child of the free woman was born
 in fulfillment of a promise. This story may be taken as an alle- 24
 gory. The women stand for two Covenants. One covenant, given
 from Mount Sinai, produces a race of slaves and is represented by
 Hagar (The word Hagar meaning in Arabia Mount Sinai) and it 25
 ranks with the Jerusalem of today, for she and her children are in
 slavery. But the Jerusalem above is free, and she it is who is our 26
 mother. For scripture says — 27

'Rejoice, you barren one, who does never bear,
 Break into shouts, you who are never in labor,
 For many are the children of her who is desolate —
 aye, more than of her who has a husband.'

As for ourselves, friends, we, like Isaac, are children born in ful- 28
 fillment of a promise. Yet at that time the child born in the course 29
 of nature persecuted the child born by the power of the Spirit; and
 it is the same now. But what does the passage of scripture say? 30

'Send away the slave-woman and her son; for the slave's
 son will not be coheir with the son of the free woman.'

And so, friends, we are not children of a slave, but of her who is 31
 free.

The Gospel in the Daily Life

IT IS FOR FREEDOM THAT CHRIST SET US FREE; stand firm therefore, and 5
 do not again be held under the yoke of slavery.

Understand that I, Paul, myself tell you that if you allow your- 2
 selves to be circumcised, Christ will avail you nothing. I again 3
 declare to everyone who receives circumcision, that he binds himself
 to obey the whole law. You have severed yourselves from Christ 4
 — you who are seeking to be pronounced righteous through law;
 you have fallen away from love. For we, by the help of the Spirit, 5

are eagerly waiting for the fulfillment of our hope — that we may
 6 be pronounced righteous as the result of faith. If we are in union
 with Christ Jesus, neither is circumcision nor the omission of it
 7 anything, but faith, working through love, is everything. You
 were once making good progress! Who has hindered you from
 8 obeying the truth? The persuasion brought to bear on you does
 9 not come from him who calls you. A little leaven leavens all the
 10 dough. I, through my union with the Lord, am persuaded that
 you will learn to think with me. But the man who is disturbing
 your minds will have to bear his punishment, whoever he may
 11 be. If I, friends, am still proclaiming circumcision, why am I still
 persecuted? It seems that the cross has ceased to be an obstacle!
 12 I could even wish that the people who are unsettling you would
 go further still and mutilate themselves.

13 Remember, friends, to you the call came to give you freedom.
 Only do not make your freedom an opportunity for self-indul-
 14 gence, but serve one another in a loving spirit. Indeed, the whole
 law has been summed up in this one precept —

‘You must love your neighbor as you love yourself.’

15 But, if you are continually wounding and preying on one another,
 take care that you are not destroyed by one another.

16 This is what I have to say — Let your steps be guided by the
 Spirit, and then you will never gratify the cravings of your earthly
 17 nature. For these cravings of our earthly nature conflict with the
 Spirit, and the Spirit with our earthly nature — they are two con-
 18 trary principles — so that you cannot do what you wish. But, if
 you follow the guidance of the Spirit, you are not subject to law.
 19 The sins of our earthly nature are unmistakable. They are sins
 20 like these — sexual immorality, impurity, indecency, idolatry, sor-
 cery, quarrels, strife, jealousy, outbursts of passion, rivalries, dis-
 21 sensions, divisions, feelings of envy, drunkenness, revelry, and
 the like. And I warn you, as I warned you before, that those who
 indulge in such things will have no place in the kingdom of God.
 22 But the fruit produced by the Spirit is love, joy, peace, forbear-
 ance, kindness, generosity, trustfulness, gentleness, self-control.
 23 Against such things there is no law! And those who belong to
 24

Jesus, the Christ, have already crucified their earthly nature, with its passions and its cravings.

Since our life is due to the Spirit, let us rule our conduct also 25
by the Spirit. Do not let us grow vain, and provoke or envy one 26
another. My friends, even if someone should be caught com- 6
mitting a sin, you who are spiritually minded should, in a gentle
spirit, help them to recover themselves, taking care that you your-
selves are not tempted. Bear one another's burdens, and so carry 2
out the law of the Christ. If a person imagines themselves to be 3
somebody, when they are really nobody, they deceive themselves.
Let everyone test their own work, and then their cause for satis- 4
faction will be in themselves and not in a comparison with their
neighbor; for everyone must bear their own load. The person, 5
however, who is being instructed in the message ought always to 6
share their blessings with their teacher.

Do not be deceived. God cannot be mocked. What a person 7
sows that they will reap. For the person who sows the field of 8
their earthly nature will from that earthly nature reap corruption;
while the one who sows the field of the spirit will from that spirit 9
reap eternal life. Let us never tire of doing right, for at the proper 9
season we will reap our harvest, if we do not grow weary. There-
fore, I say, as the opportunity occurs, let us treat everyone with 10
kindness, and especially members of the Household of the faith.

Conclusion in the Apostle's own handwriting

SEE IN WHAT LARGE LETTERS I AM WRITING WITH MY OWN hand. Those 11
who wish to appear to advantage in regard to outward obser- 12
vances are the people who are trying to compel you to be circum-
cised; and they do it only to avoid being persecuted for the cross
of Jesus, the Christ. Even these men who are circumcised do not 13
themselves keep the law; yet they want you to be circumcised,
so that they may boast of your observance of the rite. But, for 14
my part, may I never boast of anything except the cross of Jesus
Christ, our Master, through whom the world has been crucified to
me, and I to the world. For neither is circumcision nor the omis- 15
sion of it anything; but a new nature is everything. May all who 16
rule their conduct by this principle find peace and mercy — they
who are the Israel of God.

- 17 For the future let no one trouble me; for I bear the marks of Jesus branded on my body.

- 18 May the blessing of Jesus Christ, our Lord, rest on your souls, friends. Amen.

PAUL'S LETTER TO THE EPHESIANS

Introduction

TO CHRIST'S PEOPLE AT EPHESUS WHO ARE FAITHFUL TO HIM, from Paul, 1
 an apostle of Christ Jesus, by the will of God. May God, our Fa- 2
 ther, and the Lord Jesus Christ bless you and give you peace.

Blessed is the God and Father of Jesus Christ, our Lord, who has 3
 blessed us on high with every spiritual blessing, in Christ. For he 4
 chose us in our union with Christ before the creation of the uni-
 verse, so that we might be holy and blameless in his sight, living 5
 in the spirit of love. From the first he destined us, in his good-
 will towards us, to be adopted as sons through Jesus Christ, and 6
 so to enhance that glorious manifestation of his loving kindness 7
 which he gave us in the one he loves; for in him, and through 8
 the shedding of his blood, we have found redemption in the par-
 don of our offenses. All this accords with the loving kindness 9
 which God lavished on us, accompanied by countless gifts of wis-
 dom and discernment, when he made known to us his hidden 10
 purpose. And it also accords with the goodwill which God pur-
 posed to exhibit in Christ, in view of that divine order which 11
 was to mark the completion of the ages, when he should make
 everything, both in heaven and on earth, centre in him. In him, I 12
 say, for by our union with him we became God's heritage, having
 from the first been destined for this in the intention of him who,
 in all that happens, is carrying out his own fixed purpose; that we 13
 should enhance his glory — we who have been the first to rest our
 hopes on the Christ. And you, too, by your union with him, after 14
 you had heard the message of the truth, the good news of your
 salvation — you believed in him and were sealed as his by receiv-
 ing the holy Spirit, which he had promised. And the Spirit is a
 pledge of our future heritage, foreshadowing the full redemption
 of God's own people — to enhance his glory.

*The power of God displayed in
Christ, the Head of the Church*

15 AND THEREFORE I, ever since I heard of the faith in the Lord Jesus
16 which prevails among you, and of your confidence in all Christ's
17 people, have never omitted to thank God on your behalf, when-
18 ever I make mention of you in my prayers. My prayer is that the
19 God of Jesus Christ our Lord, the all-glorious Father, may inspire
20 you with wisdom and true insight through a fuller knowledge of
21 himself; that your minds may be so enlightened that you may
22 realize the hope given by God's call, the wealth of the glory of
23 his heritage among Christ's people, and the transcendent great-
24 ness of the power which he is able to exercise in dealing with
25 us who believe in him. The same mighty power was exerted on
26 the Christ, when he raised the Christ from the dead and 'caused
27 him to sit at his right hand' on high, exalting him above all an-
28 gels and archangels of every rank, and above every name that
29 can be named, whether in the present age, or in the age to come.
30 And God placed 'all things under Christ's feet,' and gave him to
31 the church as its supreme head; for the church is Christ's body,
32 and is filled by him who fills all things everywhere with his pres-
33 ence. You yourselves were once dead because of your offenses
34 and sins. For at one time you lived in sin, following the ways of
35 the world, in subjection to the Ruler of the powers of the air —
36 the Spirit who is still at work among the disobedient. And it was
37 among them that we all once lived our lives, indulging the crav-
38 ings of our earthly nature, and carrying out the desires prompted
39 by that earthly nature and by our own thoughts. Our nature ex-
40 posed us to the divine wrath, like the rest of humanity. Yet God,
41 in his abundant compassion, and because of the great love with
42 which he loved us, even though we were 'dead' because of our
43 offenses, gave life to us in giving life to the Christ. (By God's lov-
44 ing kindness you have been saved.) And, through our union with
45 Christ Jesus, God raised us with him, and caused us to sit with
46 him on high, in order that, by his goodness to us in Christ Jesus,
47 he might display in the ages to come the boundless wealth of his
48 loving kindness. For it is by God's loving kindness that you have
49 been saved, through your faith. It is not due to yourselves; the gift

is God's. It is not due to obedience to law, so that no one can boast. 9
For we are God's handiwork, created, by our union with Christ 10
Jesus, for the good actions in doing which God had pre-arranged
that we should spend our lives.
Remember, therefore, that you were once Gentiles yourselves, 11
as your bodies showed; you were called 'The Uncircumcised' by
those who were called 'The Circumcised' — circumcised only by
human hands! Remember that you were at that time far from 12
Christ; you were shut out from the citizenship of Israel; you were
strangers to the Covenants founded on God's Promise; you were
in the world without hope and without God. But now, through 13
your union with Christ Jesus, you who once were 'far off' have,
by the shedding of the blood of the Christ, been brought 'near.'
He it is who is our peace. He made the two divisions of human- 14
ity one, broke down the barrier that separated them, and in his 15
human nature put an end to the cause of enmity between them
— the law with its injunctions and ordinances — in order to cre-
ate, through union with himself, from Jew and Gentile, one new
humanity and so make peace. And when, on the cross, he had 16
destroyed their mutual enmity, he sought by means of his cross
to reconcile them both to God, united in one body. He came with 17
the good news of peace for you who were 'far off,' and of peace for
those who were 'near'; for it is through him that we, the Jews and 18
the Gentiles, united in the one Spirit, are now able to approach
the Father. It follows, then, that you are no longer strangers and 19
aliens, but are fellow citizens with Christ's people and members
of God's Household. You have been built up on the foundation 20
laid by the apostles and prophets, Christ Jesus himself being 'the
corner-stone.' United in him, every part of the building, closely 21
joined together, will grow into a Temple, consecrated by its union
with the Lord. And, through union in him, you also are being 22
built up together, to be a place where God lives through the Spirit.

The Apostle's Divine Commission to the Gentiles

FOR THIS REASON I, Paul, the prisoner of Jesus, the Christ, for the 3
sake of you Gentiles — For you have heard, I suppose, of the re- 2
sponsible charge with which God entrusted me for your benefit,
and also that it was by direct revelation that the hidden purpose 3

of God was made known to me, as I have already briefly told
4 you. And, by reading what I have written, you will be able to
judge how far I understand this hidden purpose of God in Christ.
5 In former generations it was not made known to humanity, as
fully as it has now been revealed by the Spirit to the apostles and
6 prophets among Christ's people — That, by union with Christ Je-
sus and through the good news, the Gentiles are coheirs with us
and members of one body, and that they share with us in God's
7 Promise. Of this good news I became a minister, in virtue of the
charge with which God entrusted me in the exercise of his power
8 — Yes, to me, who am less than the least of all Christ's people,
was this charge entrusted! — to tell the Gentiles the good news of
9 the boundless wealth to be found in the Christ, and to make clear
what is God's way of working out that hidden purpose which
10 from the first has been concealed in the mind of the Creator of all
things; so that now to the archangels and to all the powers on
high should be made known, through the church, the all-embrac-
11 ing wisdom of God, in accordance with that purpose which runs
through all the ages and which he has now accomplished in Jesus,
12 the Christ, our Master. And in union with him, and through our
trust in him, we find courage to approach God with confidence.
13 Therefore I beg you not to be disheartened at the sufferings that
I am undergoing for your sakes; for they redound to your honor.
14 For this reason, then, I kneel before the Father — From whom all
15 'fatherhood' in heaven and on earth derives its name — And pray
that, in proportion to the wealth of his glory, he will strengthen
you with his power by breathing his Spirit into your inmost soul,
17 so that the Christ, through your faith, may make his home within
your hearts in love; And I pray that you, now firmly rooted and
18 established, may, with all Christ's people, have the power to com-
prehend in all its width and length and height and depth, and to
19 understand — though it surpasses all understanding — the love
of the Christ; and so be filled to the full with God himself.

20 To him who, through his power which is at work within us, is
able to do far more than anything that we can ask or conceive —
21 To him be all glory through the church and through Christ Jesus,
for all generations, age after age. Amen.

The Gospel and Daily Life

I BEG YOU, then — I who am a prisoner in the Master's cause — to 4
 live lives worthy of the call that you have received; always hum- 2
 ble and gentle, patient, bearing lovingly with one another, and 3
 striving to maintain in the bond of peace the unity given by the
 Spirit. There is but one body and one Spirit, just as there was but 4
 one hope set before you when you received your call. There is 5
 but one Lord, one faith, one baptism. There is but one God and 6
 Father of all — the God who is over all, pervades all, and is in all.
 Everyone of us, however, has been entrusted with some charge, 7
 each in accordance with the extent of the gift of the Christ. That 8
 is why it is said —

'When he went up on high, he led his captives into captiv-
 ity. And gave gifts to humanity.'

Now surely this 'going up' must imply that he had already gone 9
 down into the world beneath. He who went down is the same 10
 as he who went up — up beyond the highest heaven, so that he
 might fill all things with his presence. And he it is who gave to the 11
 church apostles, prophets, Missionaries, Pastors, and teachers, to
 fit his people for the work of the ministry, for the building up of 12
 the body of the Christ. And this will continue, until we all attain 13
 to that unity which is given by faith and by a fuller knowledge
 of the Son of God; until we reach maturity — the full standard
 of the perfection of the Christ. Then we will no longer be like in- 14
 fants, tossed backward and forward, blown about by every breath
 of human teaching and by people's trickery and craftiness; but 15
 holding the truth in a spirit of love, we will grow into complete
 union with him who is our head — Christ himself. For from him 16
 the whole body, closely joined and knit together by the contact of
 every part with the source of its life, derives its power to grow, in
 proportion to the vigour of each individual part; and so is being
 built up in a spirit of love.

This, then, as one in union with the Lord, I implore: Do not con- 17
 tinue to live such purposeless lives as the Gentiles live, with their 18
 powers of discernment darkened, cut off from the life of God, ow-
 ing to the ignorance that prevails among them and to the hardness
 of their hearts. Lost to all sense of shame, they have abandoned 19

20 themselves to licentiousness, in order to practice every kind of
impurity without restraint. But far different is the lesson you
21 learned from the Christ — if, that is, you really listened to him,
and through union with him were taught the truth, as it is to be
22 found in Jesus. For you learned with regard to your former way
of living that you must cast off your old nature, which, yielding to
23 deluding passions, grows corrupt; that the spirit of your minds
must be constantly renewed; and that you must clothe yourselves
24 in that new nature which was created to resemble God, with the
righteousness and holiness springing from the truth.
25 Since, therefore, you have cast off what is false, 'you must every
one of you speak the truth to your neighbors.' For we are united
26 to one another like the parts of a body. 'Be angry, yet do not sin.'
27 Do not let the sun go down on your anger; and give no oppor-
28 tunity to the devil. Let the person who steals steal no longer, but
rather let them toil with their hands at honest work, so that they
29 may have something to share with anyone in need. Never let any
foul word pass your lips, but only such good words as the occa-
sion demands, so that they may be a help to those who hear them.
30 And do not grieve God's Holy Spirit; for it was through that Spirit
31 that God sealed you as his, against the day of Redemption. Let
all bitterness, passion, anger, brawling, and abusive language be
32 banished from among you, as well as all malice. Be kind to one
another, tenderhearted, ready to forgive one another, just as God,
5 in Christ, forgave you. Therefore imitate God, as his dear chil-
2 dren, and live a life of love, following the example of the Christ,
who loved you and gave himself for you as 'an offering and a sac-
rifice to God, that should be fragrant and acceptable.'
3 As for sexual immorality and every kind of impurity, or greed,
do not let them even be mentioned among you, as befits Christ's
4 people, nor shameful conduct, nor foolish talk or jesting, for they
5 are wholly out of place among you; but rather thanksgiving. For
of this you may be sure — that no one who is unchaste or impure
or greedy of gain (for to be greedy of gain is idolatry) has any
place awaiting him in the kingdom of the Christ and God.
6 Do not let anyone deceive you with specious arguments. Those
are the sins that bring down the wrath of God on the disobedient.
7 Therefore have nothing to do with such people. For, although
8 you were once in darkness, now, by your union with the Lord, you
9 are in the light. Live as 'children of light' — For the outcome of life

in the light may be seen in every form of goodness, righteousness, and sincerity — Always trying to find out what is pleasing to the Lord. Take no part in deeds of darkness, from which no good can come; on the contrary, expose them. It is degrading even to speak of the things continually done by them in secret. All such actions, when exposed, have their true character made manifest by the light. For everything that has its true character made manifest is clear as light. And that is why it is said —

‘Sleeper, awake!
Arise from the dead,
And the Christ will give you light!’

Take great care, then, how you live — not unwisely but wisely, making the most of every opportunity; for these are evil days. Therefore do not grow thoughtless, but try to understand what the Lord’s will is. Do not drink wine to excess, for that leads to profligacy; but seek to be filled with the Spirit of God, and speak to one another in psalms and hymns and sacred songs. Sing and make music in your hearts to the Lord. Always give thanks for everything to our God and Father, in the name of our Lord Jesus Christ.

Submit to one another because you honor and respect Christ.

Wives should submit to their husbands as submitting to the Lord. For a man is the head of his wife, as the Christ is the head of the church — being indeed himself the Savior of his body. But as the church submits to the Christ, so also should wives submit to their husbands in everything. Husbands, love your wives, just as the Christ loved the church, and gave himself for her, to make her holy, after purifying her by the washing with the water, according to his promise; so that he might himself bring the church, in all her beauty, into his own presence, with no spot or wrinkle or blemish of any kind, but that she might be holy and faultless. That is how husbands ought to love their wives — as if they were their own bodies. A man who loves his wife is really loving himself; for no one ever yet hated his own body. But everyone feeds his body and cares for it, just as the Christ for the church; for we are members of his body.

‘For this cause a man will leave his father and mother, and be united to his wife; and the man and his wife will become one.’

32 In this there is a profound truth — I am speaking of Christ and his
33 church. However, for you individually, let each love his wife as if
she were himself; and the wife be careful to respect her husband.

6 Children, obey your parents, as children of the Lord; for that is
2 but right. ‘Honor your father and mother’ — this is the first Com-
3 mandment with a promise — ‘So that you may prosper and have
4 a long life on earth.’ And fathers, do not irritate your children,
but bring them up with Christian discipline and instruction.

5 Slaves, obey your earthly masters, with anxious care, giving
6 them ungrudging service, as if obeying the Christ; not only when
their eyes are on you, as if you had merely to please people, but as
slaves of Christ, who are trying to carry out the will of God. Give
7 your service heartily and cheerfully, as working for the Master
8 and not for people; for you know that everyone will be rewarded
by the Master for any honest work that he has done, whether he is
9 a slave or free. And masters, treat your slaves in the same spirit.
Give up threatening them; for you know that he who is both their
Master and yours is in heaven, and that before him there is no
distinction of rank.

10 For the future, find strength in your union with the Lord, and
11 in the power which comes from his might. Put on the full armor
of God, so that you may be able to stand your ground against
12 the stratagems of the devil. For ours is no struggle against ene-
mies of flesh and blood, but against all the various powers of evil
that hold sway in the darkness around us, against the spirits of
13 Wickedness on high. Therefore take up the full armor of God, so
that when the evil day comes, you may be able to withstand the
attack, and, having fought to the end, still to stand your ground.
14 Stand your ground, then, ‘with truth for your belt,’ and ‘with
15 righteousness for your breast-plate,’ And with the readiness to
16 serve the good news of peace as shoes for your feet. At every on-
slaught take up faith for your shield; for with it you will be able
17 to extinguish all the flaming darts of the evil one. And receive
‘the helmet of salvation,’ and ‘the sword of the Spirit’ — which is
the message of God — always with prayer and supplication. Pray
18 in spirit at all times. Be intent on this, with unwearying perse-
19 verance and supplication for all Christ’s people — And on my
behalf also, so that when I begin to speak, words may be given
me, so that I may fearlessly make known the inmost truth of the

Conclusion

good news, on behalf of which I am an ambassador — in chains! 20
Pray that, in telling it, I may speak fearlessly as I ought.

Conclusion

TO ENABLE YOU, as well as others, to know all that concerns me and 21
what I am doing, Tychicus, our dear friend and faithful helper in
the Master's cause, will tell you everything. I am sending him to 22
you on purpose that you may learn all about us, and that he may
cheer your hearts.

May God, the Father, and the Lord Jesus Christ give every fol- 23
lower peace, and love linked with faith. May God's blessing be 24
with all who love our Lord Jesus Christ with an undying love.

PAUL'S LETTER TO THE PHILIPPIANS

To all Christ's people at Philippi, with the presiding officers 1
and assistants, from Paul and Timothy, servants of Christ Jesus.
May God, our Father, and the Lord Jesus Christ bless you, and 2
give you peace. Every recollection that I have of you is a cause of 3
thankfulness to God, always, in every prayer that I offer for you 4
all — my prayers are full of joy — Because of the share that you 5
have had in spreading the good news, from the first day that you
received it until now. For of this I am confident, that he who be- 6
gan a good work in you will complete it in readiness for the day of
Jesus Christ. And, indeed, I am justified in feeling like this about 7
you all; because you have a warm place in my heart — you who
all, both in my imprisonment and in the work of defending and
establishing the good news, shared my privilege with me. God 8
will bear me witness how I yearn over you all with the tenderness
of Christ Jesus. And what I pray for is this — that your love may 9
grow yet stronger and stronger, with increasing knowledge and
all discernment, until you are able to appreciate all moral distinc- 10
tions. And I pray, too, that you may be kept pure and blameless
against the day of Christ, bearing a rich harvest of that righteous- 11
ness which comes through Jesus Christ, to the glory and praise of
God.

Friends, I want you to realize that what has happened to me has 12
actually served to forward the good news. It has even become 13
evident, not only to all the imperial guard, but to everyone else,
that it is for Christ's sake that I am in chains. And besides this, 14
most of our fellow followers have gained confidence in the Lord
through my chains, and now venture with far greater freedom
to speak of God's message fearlessly. It is true that some do pro- 15
claim the Christ out of Jealousy and opposition; but there are oth-
ers who proclaim him from goodwill. The latter do it from love 16
for me, knowing that I have been appointed to plead the cause
of the good news. The former spread the news of the Christ in 17
a factious spirit, and not sincerely, thinking to add to the pain of
my chains. But what of that? Only that in some way or other, 18
either with assumed or with real earnestness, Christ is being made

Philippians 2

19 known; and at that I rejoice. Yes, and I will rejoice, for I know that,
20 through your prayers and through a rich supply of the Spirit of Je-
sus Christ, 'all this will make for my salvation.' And this will ful-
fill my earnest expectation and hope that I will have no cause for
shame, but that, with unflinching courage, now as hitherto, Christ
will be honored in my body, whether by my life or by my death,
21 for to me life is Christ, and death is gain. But what if the life
22 here in the body — if this brings me fruit from my labors? Then
which to choose I cannot tell! I am sorely perplexed either way!
23 My own desire is to depart and be with Christ, for this would
24 be far better. But, for your sakes, it may be more needful that
25 I should still remain here in the body. Yes, I am confident that
this is so, and therefore I am sure that I will stay, and stay near
26 you all, to promote your progress and joy in the faith; so that,
when you once more have me among you, you, in your union
with Christ Jesus, may find in me fresh cause for exultation. Un-
27 der all circumstances let your lives be worthy of the good news
of the Christ: so that, whether I come and see you, or whether I
hear of your affairs at a distance, I may know that you are stand-
ing firm, animated by one spirit, and joining with one heart in a
common struggle for the faith taught by the good news, without
28 ever shrinking from your opponents. To them this will be a sign
of their destruction and of your salvation — a sign from God. For,
29 on behalf of Christ, you have had the privilege granted you, not
30 only of trusting in him, but also of suffering on his behalf. You
will be engaged in the same hard struggle as that which you once
saw me waging, and which you hear that I am waging still.

2 If, then, any encouragement comes through union with Christ,
if there is any persuasive power in love, if there is any communion
2 with the Spirit, if there is any tenderness or pity, I entreat you to
make my happiness complete — Live together animated by the
same spirit and in mutual love, one in heart, animated by one
3 Spirit. Nothing should be done in a factious spirit or from vanity,
but each of you should with all humility regard others as better
4 than himself, and one and all should consider, not only their own
5 interests, but also the interests of others. Let the spirit of Christ
6 Jesus be yours also. Though the divine nature was his from the
beginning, yet he did not look on equality with God as above all
7 things to be clung to, but impoverished himself by taking the na-
8 ture of a servant and becoming like one of us; he appeared among

Philippians 2

us as a man, and still further humbled himself by submitting even
to death — to death on a cross! And that is why God raised him 9
to the very highest place, and gave him the name which stands
above all other names, so that in adoration of the name of Je- 10
sus every knee should bend, in heaven, on earth, and under the
earth, and that every tongue should acknowledge JESUS CHRIST 11
as LORD — to the glory of God the Father. Therefore, my dear 12
friends, as you have always been obedient in the past, so now
work out your own salvation with anxious care, not only when
I am with you, but all the more now that I am absent. Remember 13
it is God who, in his kindness, is at work within you, enabling you
both to will and to work. In all that you do, avoid murmuring and 14
dissension, so as to prove yourselves blameless and innocent — 15
'faultless children of God, in the midst of an evil-disposed and
perverse generation,' in which you are seen shining like stars in a 16
dark world, offering to them the message of life; and then I will
be able at the day of Christ to boast that I did not run my course 17
for nothing, or toil for nothing. And yet, even if, when your faith
is offered as a sacrifice to God, my lifeblood must be poured out 18
in addition, still I will rejoice and share the joy of you all; and
you must also rejoice and share my joy. I hope, however, as one 19
who trusts in the Lord Jesus, to send Timothy to you before long,
so that I may myself be cheered by receiving news of you. For 20
I have no one but him to send — no one of kindred spirit who
would take the same genuine interest in your welfare. They are 21
all pursuing their own aims and not those of Christ Jesus. But 22
you know what Timothy has proved himself to be, and how, like a
child working for his father, he worked hard with me in spreading
the good news. It is Timothy, then, whom I hope to send, as soon 23
as ever I can foresee how it will go with me. And I am confident, 24
as one who trusts in the Lord Jesus, that before long I myself will
follow. Still I think it necessary to send Epaphroditus to you now, 25
for he is my dear friend, fellow worker, and fellow soldier, and he
was also your messenger to help me in my need. For he has been 26
longing to see you all, and has been distressed because you heard
of his illness. And I can assure you that his illness very nearly 27
proved fatal. But God had pity on him, and not on him only but
also on me, so that I might not have sorrow on sorrow. I am all the 28
more ready, therefore, to send him, so that the sight of him may
revive your spirits and my own sorrow be lightened. Give him, 29

Philippians 3

then, the heartiest of Christian welcomes, and hold such people
30 in great honor. For it was owing to his devotion to the Master's
work that he was at the point of death, having risked his own life
in the effort to supply what was wanting in the help that you sent
me.

3 In conclusion, my friends, all joy be yours in your union with
the Lord. To repeat what I have already written does not weary
2 me, and is the safe course for you. Beware of those 'dogs'! Be-
wary of those mischievous workers! Beware of the men who mu-
3 tilate themselves! For it is we who are the circumcised — we
whose worship is prompted by the Spirit of God, who exult in
Christ Jesus, and who do not rely on external privileges; though
4 I, if anyone, have cause to rely even on them. If anyone thinks
5 he can rely on external privileges, far more can I! I was circum-
cised when eight days old; I am an Israelite by race, and of the
tribe of Benjamin; I am a Hebrew, and the child of Hebrews. As
6 to the law, I was a Pharisee; as to zeal, I was a persecutor of the
church; as to such righteousness as is due to law, I proved myself
7 blameless. But all the things which I once held to be gains I have
8 now, for the Christ's sake, come to count as loss. More than that,
I count everything as loss, for the sake of the exceeding value of
the knowledge of Christ Jesus my Lord. And for his sake I have
9 lost everything, and count it as refuse, if I may but gain Christ
and be found in union with him; any righteousness that I have
10 being, not the righteousness that results from law, but the right-
eousness which comes through faith in Christ — the righteous-
ness which is derived from God and is founded on faith. Then
indeed I will know Christ, and the power of his resurrection, and
11 all that it means to share his sufferings, in the hope that, if I be-
come like him in death, I may possibly attain to the resurrection
12 from the dead. Not that I have already laid hold of it, or that I
am already made perfect. But I press on, in the hope of actually
laying hold of that for which indeed I was laid hold of by Christ
13 Jesus. For I, friends, do not regard myself as having yet laid hold
of it. But this one thing I do — forgetting what lies behind, and
14 straining every nerve for that which lies in front, I press on to the
goal, to gain the prize of that heavenward call which God gave me
15 through Christ Jesus. Let all of us, then, whose faith is mature,
think this way. Then, if on any matter you think otherwise, God

will make that also plain to you. Only we are bound to order our lives by what we have already attained. 16

My friends, unite in following my example, and fix your eyes on those who are living by the pattern which we have set you. For there are many — of whom I have often told you, and now tell you even with tears — who are living in enmity to the cross of the Christ. The end of such people is ruin; for their appetites are their God, and they glory in their shame; their minds are given up to earthly things. But the State of which we are citizens is in heaven; and it is from heaven that we are eagerly looking for a Savior, the Lord Jesus Christ, who, by the exercise of his power to bring everything into subjection to himself, will make this body that we have in our humiliation like to that body which he has in his glory. 17 18 19 20 21

So then, my dear friends, whom I am longing to see — you who are my joy and my crown, stand fast in union with the Lord, dear friends. I entreat Euodia, and I entreat Syntyche, to live in harmony, in union with the Lord; yes, and I ask you, my true comrade, to help them, remembering that they toiled by my side in spreading the good news; and so, too, did Clement and my other fellow workers, whose names are ‘in the book of life.’ All joy be yours at all times in your union with the Lord. Again I repeat — All joy be yours. Let your forbearing spirit be plain to everyone. The Lord is near. Do not be anxious about anything; but under all circumstances, by prayer and entreaty joined with thanksgiving, make your needs known to God. Then the peace of God, which is beyond all human understanding, will stand guard over your hearts and thoughts, through your union with Christ Jesus. 4 2 3 4 5 6 7

In conclusion, friends, whenever you find things that are true or honorable, righteous or pure, lovable or praiseworthy, or if ‘virtue’ and ‘honor’ have any meaning, let them fill your thoughts. All that you learned and received and heard and saw in me put into practice continually; and then God, the giver of peace, will be with you. It was a matter of great joy to me, as one in union with the Lord, that at length your interest in me had revived. The interest indeed you had, but not the opportunity. Do not think that I am saying this under the pressure of want. For I, however I am placed, have learned to be independent of circumstances. I know how to face humble circumstances, and I know how to face 8 9 10 11 12

prosperity. Into all and every human experience I have been initiated — into plenty and hunger, into prosperity and want. I do everything in the strength of him who makes me strong! Yet you have acted nobly in sharing my troubles. And you at Philippi know, as well as I, that in the early days of the good news — at the time when I had just left Macedonia — no church, with the one exception of yourselves, had anything to do with me as far as giving and receiving are concerned. Indeed, even while I was still in Thessalonica, you sent more than once to relieve my wants. It is not that I am anxious for your gifts, but I am anxious to see the abundant return that will be placed to your account. I have enough of everything, and to spare. My wants are fully satisfied, now that I have received from Epaphroditus the gifts which you sent me — the sweet fragrance of a sacrifice acceptable and pleasing to God. And my God, out of the greatness of his wealth, will, in glory, fully satisfy your every need, through your union with Christ Jesus. To him, our God and Father, be ascribed all glory for every and ever. Amen. Give my greeting to everyone of the people of Christ Jesus. The Lord's followers who are with me send you their greetings. All Christ's people here, and especially those who belong to the Emperor's household, send theirs.

23 May the blessing of the Lord Jesus Christ rest on your souls.

PAUL'S LETTER TO THE COLOSSIANS

Introduction

FROM PAUL, an apostle of Christ Jesus, by the will of God, and 1
from Timothy, also a follower of the Lord. To Christ's people at 2
Colossae — the followers who are faithful to him: May God, our
Father, bless you and give you peace.

Whenever we pray, we never fail to thank God, the Father of our 3
Lord, Jesus Christ, about you, now that we have heard of your 4
faith in Christ Jesus and of the love that you have for all his peo- 5
ple, because of the hope which awaits its fulfillment in heaven. 6
Of this hope you heard long ago in the true message of the good 7
news which reached you — Bearing fruit and growing, as it does, 8
through all the world, just as it did among you, from the very 9
day that you heard of God's loving kindness, and understood
what that loving kindness really is. It is just what you learned 10
from Epaphras, our dear fellow servant, who, as a minister of the 11
Christ, faithfully represents us, and who told us of the love with
which the Spirit has inspired you. And therefore we, from the 12
very day that we heard this, have never ceased praying for you, or
asking that you may possess that deeper knowledge of the will of
God, which comes through all true spiritual wisdom and insight.
Then you will live lives worthy of the Master, and so please God
in every way. Your lives will be fruitful in every kind of good ac-
tion, and your characters will grow through a fuller knowledge of
God; you will be made strong at all points with a strength wor-
thy of the power manifested in his glory — strong to endure with
patience, and even with gladness, whatever may happen to you;
and you will give thanks to the Father who made you fit to share
the lot which awaits Christ's people in the realms of light.

The Person and Work of the Christ

13 FOR GOD HAS RESCUED US FROM THE TYRANNY OF DARKNESS, and has
 14 removed us into the kingdom of his Son, who is the embodiment
 15 of his love, and through whom we have found deliverance in the
 16 forgiveness of our sins.

15 For Christ is the incarnation of the invisible God — first-born
 16 and head of all creation; for in him was created all that is in
 17 heaven and on earth, the visible and the invisible — angels and
 18 archangels and all the powers of heaven. All has been created
 19 through him and for him. He was before all things, and all things
 20 unite in him; and he is the head of the church, which is his body.
 21 The first-born from the dead, he is to the church the Source of its
 22 life, that he, in all things, may stand first. For it pleased the Fa-
 23 ther that in him the divine nature in all its fulness should live, and
 24 through him to reconcile all things to himself (making peace by
 25 the shedding of Christ's blood offered on the cross) — whether on
 26 earth or in heaven. And it pleased God that you, once estranged
 27 from him and hostile towards him in your thoughts, intent only
 28 on wickedness — But now he has reconciled you to himself by
 the sacrifice of Christ's earthly body in death — it has pleased
 God that you should stand in his presence holy, pure, and blame-
 less, if only you remain true to your faith, firm and immovable,
 never abandoning the hope held out in the good news to which
 you listened, which has been proclaimed among all created things
 under heaven, and of which I, Paul, was made a minister.

24 Now at last I can rejoice in my sufferings on your behalf, and
 25 in my own person I supplement the afflictions endured by the
 26 Christ, for the sake of his body, the church; of which I myself be-
 27 came a minister in virtue of the office with which God entrusted
 me for your benefit, to declare the message of God in all its ful-
 28 ness — That truth which has been hidden from former ages and
 generations. But now it has been revealed to God's people, to
 whom it was his pleasure to make known the surpassing glory of
 that hidden truth when proclaimed among the Gentiles — 'Christ
 among you! Your hope of glory!' This is the Christ whom we pro-
 claim, warning everyone, and instructing everyone, with all the
 wisdom that we possess, in the hope of bringing everyone into

God's presence perfected by union with Christ. It is for that I 29
toil, struggling with all the energy which he inspires and which
works powerfully within me. I want you to know in how great a 2
struggle I am engaged for you and for Christ's people at Laodicea,
and for all who have not yet seen me; in the hope that they, be- 2
ing bound to one another by love, and keeping in view the full
blessedness of a firm conviction, may be encouraged to strive for
a perfect knowledge of God's hidden truth, even Christ himself, 3
in whom all treasures of wisdom and knowledge lie hidden. I 4
say this to prevent anyone from deceiving you by plausible argu-
ments. It is true that I am not with you in person, but I am with 5
you in spirit, and am glad to see the good order and the unbroken
front resulting from your faith in Christ.

Since, therefore, you have received Jesus, the Christ, as your 6
Lord, live your lives in union with him — rooted in him, 7
building up your characters through union with him, growing
stronger through your faith, as you were taught, overflowing
with faith and thanksgiving. Take care there is not some one 8
who will carry you away by his 'philosophy' — a hollow sham!
— following, as it does, mere human traditions, and dealing
with puerile questions of this world, and not with Christ. For in 9
Christ the Godhead in all its fulness dwells incarnate; and, by 10
your union with him, you also are filled with it. He is the head
of all archangels and powers of heaven. By your union with him 11
you received a circumcision that was not performed by human
hands, when you threw off the tyranny of the earthly body, and
received the circumcision of the Christ. For in baptism you were 12
buried with Christ; and in baptism you were also raised to life
with him, through your faith in the omnipotence of God, who
raised him from the dead. And to you, who once were 'dead,' 13
by reason of your sins and your uncircumcised nature — to you
God gave life in giving life to Christ! He pardoned all our sins!
He canceled the bond which stood against us — the bond that 14
consisted of ordinances — and which was directly hostile to us!
He has taken it out of our way by nailing it to the cross! He 15
rid himself of all the powers of evil, and held them up to open
contempt, when he celebrated his triumph over them on the
cross!

16 Do not, then, allow anyone to take you to task on questions of eating or drinking, or in the matter of annual or monthly or weekly
 17 festivals. These things are only the shadow of what is to come;
 18 the substance is in the Christ. Do not let anyone defraud you of the reality by affecting delight in so-called 'humility' and angel-worship. Such a person busies themselves with their visions, and without reason are rendered conceited by their merely human intellect. They fail to maintain union with the head, to whom
 19 it is due that the whole body, nourished and knit together by the contact and connexion of every part, grows with a divine growth.

20 Since, with Christ, you became dead to the puerile teaching of this world, why do you submit, as as if you still belonged to the
 21 world, to such ordinances as 'Do not handle, or taste, or touch'?
 22 For all the things referred to in them cease to exist when used.
 23 You are following mere human directions and instructions. Such prohibitions appear reasonable where there is a desire for self-imposed service, and so-called 'humility,' and harsh treatment of the body, but are of no real value against the indulgence of our
 3 earthly nature. Since, therefore, you were raised to life with the Christ, seek for the things that are above; for it is there that the
 2 Christ is 'seated at the right hand of God.' Fix your thoughts on
 3 the things that are above, not on those that are on earth. For you died, and your life now lies hidden, with the Christ, in God. When
 4 the Christ, who is our life, appears, then you also will appear with him in glory.

The Gospel in the Daily Life

5 THEREFORE DESTROY ALL THAT IS EARTHLY IN YOU — IMMORALITY, uncleanness, passions, evil desires, and that greed which is idolatry.
 6 These are the things because of which the wrath of God comes,
 7 and to which you, like others, once devoted your lives, when you
 8 lived for them. You, however, must now lay aside all such things
 9 — anger, passion, malice, slander, abuse. Never lie to one another.
 10 Get rid of your old self and its habits, and clothe yourselves with that new self, which, as it gains in knowledge, is being constantly
 11 renewed 'in resemblance to him who made it.' In that new life there is no distinction between Greek and Jew, circumcised and

uncircumcised, barbarian, Scythian, slave, free; but Christ is all! — and in all!

Therefore, as God's people, consecrated and dear to him, clothe yourselves with tenderness of heart, kindness, humility, gentleness, forbearance; bearing with one another, and, when there is any ground for complaint, forgiving one another freely. As the Master freely forgave you, so you must forgive one another. Over all these virtues put on love; for that is the belt which makes all complete. Let the peace that the Christ gives decide all doubts within your hearts; for you also were called to the enjoyment of peace as members of one body. And show yourselves thankful. Let the message of the Christ be alive in your minds in all its wealth, bringing all wisdom with it. Teach and admonish one another with psalms, and hymns, and sacred songs, full of the loving kindness of God, lifting your hearts in song to him. And, whatever you say or do, do everything in the name of the Lord Jesus; and through him offer thanksgiving to God the father.

Wives, submit to your husbands, as befits those who belong to the Lord. Husbands, love your wives, and never treat them harshly. Children, always obey your parents; for that is pleasant to see in those who belong to the Lord. Fathers, never irritate your children, otherwise they might become disheartened. Slaves, always obey your earthly masters, not only when their eyes are on you, as if you had but to please people alone, but giving them ungrudging service, in your respect for the Master. Whatever you do, do it with all your heart, as if working for the Master and not for people, since you know that it is from the Master that you will receive the inheritance which will be your reward. You are serving Christ, the Master. Those who do wrong will reap the wrong they have done; and there will be no partiality. Masters, do what is right and fair by your slaves, for you know that you also have a Master — in heaven.

Devote yourselves to prayer. Give your whole mind to it, and also offer thanksgiving; and at the same time pray for us, so that God may give us an opening for our message, so that we may speak of the truths hidden in the Christ — the truths for which I am in

4 chains! Then I will make them known, as I ought to do. Show
 5 tact in your behavior to the outside world, making the most of
 6 every opportunity. Let your conversation always be kindly, but
 not bland, season it, as it were, with salt; be aware in each case of
 the answer you should be giving.

Conclusion

7 OUR DEAR FRIEND, Tychicus, will tell you all about me. He is a faith-
 8 ful minister, and a fellow servant in the Master's cause. I send him
 to you expressly that you may learn our circumstances, and that
 9 he may give you encouragement. With him will be Onesimus,
 our dear faithful friend, who is one of yourselves. They will tell
 you all that is going on here.

10 My fellow prisoner, Aristarchus, sends you his greeting, and
 Barnabas's cousin, Mark, sends his. (You have received
 directions about him. If he comes to you, make him welcome.)
 11 Joshua, who is called Justus, also sends his greeting. These are
 the only converts from Judaism who have worked with me for
 the kingdom of God; I have found them a great comfort.
 12 Epaphras, who is one of yourselves, sends you his greeting. He
 is a servant of Christ Jesus, and is always most earnest in your
 behalf in his prayers, praying that you may stand firm, with a
 matured faith and with a sure conviction of all that is in
 13 accordance with God's will. I can bear testimony to the deep
 interest he takes in you, as well as in the followers at Laodicea
 14 and at Hierapolis. Luke, our dear doctor, sends you his greeting,
 15 and Demas sends his. Give my greeting to the followers at
 Laodicea, and to Nymphé, and to the church that meets at her
 16 house. And when this letter has been read to you, see that it is
 also read before the church at Laodicea, and that you yourselves
 17 read the letter which will be forwarded from there. Give this
 message to Archippus — 'Take care to discharge to the best of
 your ability the office to which you were appointed in the
 Master's cause.'

I, Paul, add this greeting in my own handwriting. Remember 18
these chains of mine. God's blessing be with you.

PAUL'S FIRST LETTER TO THE THESSALONIANS

Introduction

TO THE THESSALONIAN CHURCH IN UNION WITH GOD THE FATHER and 1
the Lord Jesus Christ, from Paul, Silas, and Timothy. May God
bless you and give you peace.

The Apostle and his Converts

WE ALWAYS MENTION YOU IN OUR PRAYERS and thank God for you all; 2
recalling continually before our God and Father the efforts that 3
have resulted from your faith, the toil prompted by your love, and
the patient endurance sustained by your hope in our Lord Jesus 4
Christ. Friends, whom God loves, we know that he has chosen 4
you, because the good news that we brought came home to you, 5
not merely as so many words, but with a power and a fulness of
conviction due to the Holy Spirit. For you know the life that we 6
lived among you for your good. And you yourselves began to 6
follow, not only our example, but the Master's also; and, in spite
of much suffering, you welcomed the message with a joy inspired 7
by the Holy Spirit, and so became a pattern to all who believed 8
in Christ throughout Macedonia and Greece. For it was from you 8
that the Lord's message resounded throughout Macedonia and
Greece; and, more than that, your faith in God has become known 9
far and wide; so that there is no need for us to say another word.
Indeed, in speaking about us, the people themselves tell of the 9
reception you gave us, and how, turning to God from your idols,
you became servants of the true and living God, and are now 10
awaiting the return from heaven of his Son whom he raised from
the dead — Jesus, our deliverer from the coming wrath.
Yes, friends, you yourselves know that your reception of us was 2
not without result. For, although we had experienced suffering 2
and ill treatment, as you know, at Philippi, we had the courage,

by the help of our God, to tell you God's good news in spite of
3 great opposition. Our appeal to you was not based on a delusion,
nor was it made from unworthy motives, or with any intention of
4 misleading you. But, having been found worthy by God to be entrusted
with the good news, therefore we tell it; with a view to
5 please, not people, but God who proves our hearts. Never at any
time, as you know, did we use the language of flattery, or make
6 false professions in order to hide selfish aims. God will bear witness
to that. Nor did we seek to win honor from people, whether
7 from you or from others, although, as apostles of Christ, we might
have burdened you with our support. But we lived among you
with the simplicity of a child; we were like a woman nursing her
8 own children. In our strong affection for you, that seemed to us
the best way of sharing with you, not only God's Good news, but
9 our lives as well — so dear had you become to us. You will not
have forgotten, friends, our labor and toil. Night and day we used
to work at our trades, so as not be a burden to any of you, while we
10 proclaimed to you God's good news. You will bear witness, and
God also, that our relations with you who believed in Christ were
11 pure, and upright, and beyond reproach. Indeed, you know that,
like a father with his own children, we used to encourage and
12 comfort every one of you, and solemnly plead with you; so that
you should make your daily lives worthy of God who is calling
you into the glory of his kingdom.

13 This, too, is a reason why we, on our part, are continually
thanking God — because, in receiving the teaching that you had
from us, you accepted it, not as the teaching of humans, but as
what it really is — the teaching of God, which is even now doing
14 its work within you who believe in Christ. For you, friends, began
to follow the example of the churches of God in Judea which
are in union with Jesus Christ; you, in your turn, suffering at the
hands of your fellow citizens, in the same way as those churches
15 did at the hands of their people — who killed both the Lord
Jesus and the prophets, and persecuted us also. They do not try to
16 please God, and they are enemies to all humanity, for they try to
prevent us from speaking to the Gentiles with a view to their salvation,
and so are always 'filling up the measure of their iniquity.'
But the wrath of God has come upon them to the full!

As for ourselves, friends, our having been bereaved of you even 17
for a short time — though in body only, and not in spirit — made
us all the more eager to see your faces again; and the longing to 18
do so was strong on us. That was why we made up our minds to
go and see you — at least I, Paul, did, more than once — but Satan 19
put difficulties in our way. For what hope or joy will be ours, or
what crown will we have to boast of, in the presence of our Lord 20
Jesus, at his coming, if it be not you? You are our pride and our
delight!

And so, as we could bear it no longer, we made up our minds to 3
remain behind alone at Athens, and sent Timothy, our dear friend 2
and God's minister of the good news of the Christ, to strengthen
you, and to encourage you in your faith, so that none of you 3
should be shaken by the troubles through which you are pass-
ing. You yourselves know that we are destined to meet with such 4
things. For, even while we were with you, we warned you before-
hand that we were certain to encounter trouble. And so it proved,
as you know. Therefore, since I could no longer endure the un- 5
certainty, I sent to make inquiries about your faith, fearing that
the Tempter had tempted you, and that our toil might prove to 6
have been in vain. But, when Timothy recently returned to us
from you with good news of your faith and love, and told us how 7
kindly you think of us — always longing, he said, to see us, just as
we are longing to see you — on hearing this, we felt encouraged 7
about you, friends, in the midst of all our difficulties and troubles,
by your faith. For it is new life to us to know that you are holding 8
fast to the Lord. How can we thank God enough for all the hap- 9
piness that you are giving us in the sight of our God? Night and 10
day we pray most earnestly that we may see you face to face, and
make good any deficiency in your faith.

May our God and Father himself, and Jesus, our Lord, make 11
the way plain for us to come to you. And for you, may the Lord 12
fill you to overflowing with love for one another and for everyone,
just as we are filled with love for you; and so make your hearts 13
strong, and your lives pure beyond reproach, in the sight of our
God and Father, at the coming of our Lord Jesus, with all his Holy
Ones.

Advice on Daily Life

- 4 FURTHER, friends, we beg and urge you in the name of our Lord Jesus to carry out more fully than ever — as indeed you are already doing — all that you have heard from us as to what your daily
- 2 life must be, if it is to please God. For you have not forgotten the directions that we gave you on the authority of our Lord Jesus.
- 3 For this is God's purpose — that you should be pure; abstaining from all immorality; each of you learning to gain control over
- 4 your own body, in a way that is holy and honorable, and not for the mere gratification of your passions, like the Gentiles who
- 5 know nothing of God; none of you overreaching or taking advantage of their fellow follower of the Lord in such matters. 'The Lord takes vengeance' on all who do such things, as we have already warned you and solemnly declared. For God's call to us
- 7 does not permit of an impure life, but demands purity. Therefore
- 8 the person who disregards this warning disregards, not people, but God who gives you his Holy Spirit.
- 9 As to love for each other there is no need to write to you; for
- 10 you have yourselves been taught by God to love one another; and indeed you do act in this spirit towards all his people throughout Macedonia.
- 11 Yet, friends, we beg you to do even more. Make it your ambition to live quietly, and to attend to your own business, and to
- 12 work with your hands, as we directed you; so that your conduct may win respect from those outside the church, and that you may not want for anything.

The Dead in Christ at the coming of the Lord

- 13 WE DON'T WANT YOU TO BE IGNORANT, friends, about those who have passed to their rest. We don't want you to grieve like other people who have no hope. For, as we believe that Jesus died and rose again, so also we believe that God will bring, with Jesus, those
- 15 who through him have passed to their rest. This we tell you on the authority of the Lord — that those of us who are still living at the coming of the Lord will not anticipate those who have
- 16 passed to their rest. For, with a loud summons, with the shout of an archangel, and with the trumpet-call of God, the Lord himself
- 17 will come down from heaven. Then those who died in union with

Christ will rise first; and afterwards we who are still living will be caught up in the clouds, with them, to meet the Lord in the air; and so we will be for ever with the Lord. Therefore, comfort one another with what I have told you. 18

But as to the times and the moments, there is no need, friends, for anyone to write to you. You yourselves know well that the day of the Lord will come just as a thief comes in the night. When people are saying 'All is quiet and safe,' it is then that, like birth pains on a pregnant woman, ruin comes suddenly upon them, and there will be no escape! You, however, friends, are not in darkness, that the daylight should take you by surprise as if you were thieves. For you all are 'sons of light' and 'sons of the day.' 5

We have nothing to do with night, or darkness. Therefore let us not sleep as others do. No, let us be watchful and self-controlled. It is at night that people sleep, and at night that drunkards get drunk. But let us, who belong to the day, control ourselves, and put on faith and love as a breast plate, and the hope of salvation as a helmet. For God destined us, not for wrath, but to win salvation through our Lord Jesus Christ, who died for us, that, whether we are still watching or have fallen asleep, we may live with him. Therefore encourage one another, and try to build up one another's characters, as indeed you are doing. 6
7
8
9
10
11

Conclusion

WE BEG YOU, friends, to value those who toil among you, and are your leaders in the Lord's service, and give you counsel. Hold them in the very greatest esteem and affection for the sake of their work. Live at peace with one another. We entreat you also, friends — warn the disorderly, comfort the faint-hearted, give a helping hand to the weak, and be patient with everyone. Take care that none of you ever pays back wrong for wrong, but always follow the kindest course with one another and with everyone. Always be joyful; never cease to pray; under all circumstances give thanks to God. For this is his will for you as made known in Christ Jesus. Do not quench the Spirit; do not make light of preaching. Bring everything to the test; cling to what is good; shun every form of evil. May God himself, the giver of peace, make you altogether holy; and may your spirits, souls, and bodies 12
13
14
15
16
17
18
19
20
22
23

be kept altogether faultless until the coming of our Lord Jesus
24 Christ. He who calls you will not fail you; he will complete his
work.

25 Friends, pray for us.

26 Greet all the Lord's followers with a sacred kiss. I order you
27 in the Lord's name to have this letter read to all the brethren.

28 May the blessing of our Lord Jesus Christ be with you.

PAUL'S SECOND LETTER TO THE THESSALONIANS

Introduction

TO THE THESSALONIAN CHURCH IN UNION WITH GOD OUR FATHER and 1
the Lord Jesus Christ, From Paul, Silas, and Timothy. May God, 2
the Father, and the Lord Jesus Christ bless you and give you peace.

The Apostle and his Converts

FRIENDS, it is our duty always to thank God about you, as is but 3
right, considering the wonderful growth of your faith, and be-
cause, without exception, your love for one another is continually
increasing. So much is this the case that we ourselves speak with 4
pride, before the churches of God, of the patience and faith which
you have shown, in spite of all the persecutions and troubles that
you are enduring. These persecutions will vindicate the justice 5
of God's judgment, and will result in your being reckoned wor-
thy of God's kingdom, for the sake of which you are now suffer-
ing; since God deems it just to inflict suffering on those who are 6
now inflicting suffering on you, and to give relief to you who are 7
suffering, as well as to us, at the appearing of the Lord Jesus from
heaven with his mighty angels, 'in flaming fire.' Then he will 'in- 8
flict punishment on those who refuse to know God, and on those
who turn a deaf ear' to the good news of Jesus, our Lord. They
will pay the penalty of unutterable ruin — banished 'from the 9
presence of the Lord and from the glorious manifestation of his
might, when he comes to be honor ed in his people,' and to be 10
revered in all who have learned to believe in him (for you also be-
lieved our testimony) — as he will be on 'that day.' With this in 11
view, our constant prayer for you is that our God may count you
worthy of the call that you have received, and by his power make
perfect your delight in all goodness and the efforts that have re- 12
sulted from your faith. Then, in the loving kindness of our God

and the Lord Jesus Christ, will the name of Jesus, our Lord, be honored in you, and you in him.

Events that must precede the Lord's Coming

2 AS TO THE COMING OF OUR LORD JESUS CHRIST, and our being gathered to meet him, we beg you, friends, not lightly to let your minds become unsettled, or disturbed by any revelation, or by any message, or by any letter, purporting to come from us, to the effect that the day of the Lord is come. Do not let anyone deceive you, whatever he may do. For it will not come until after the Great Apostasy, and the appearing of that Incarnation of Wickedness, that the Lost soul, who so opposes himself to everyone that is spoken of as a God or as an object of worship, and so exalts himself above them, that he seats himself in the Temple of God, and displays himself as God! Don't you remember how, when I was with you, I used to speak to you of all this? And you know now what the restraining influence is which prevents his appearing before his appointed time. Wickedness, indeed, is already at work in secret; but only until he who at present restrains it is removed out of the way. Then will 'Wickedness Incarnate' appear, but the Lord Jesus will destroy him with the breath of his lips, and annihilate him by the splendor of his coming. For at the coming of the Lord there will be great activity on the part of Satan, in the form of all kinds of deceptive miracles, signs, and marvels, as well as of wicked attempts to delude — to the ruin of those who are on the path to destruction, because they have never received and loved the truth to their own salvation. That is why God places them under the influence of a delusion, to cause them to believe a lie; so that sentence may be passed on all those who refuse to believe the truth, but delight in wickedness.

13 But, friends, whom the Lord loves, it is our duty always to thank God about you, for, from the first, God chose you for salvation through the purifying influence of the Spirit, and your belief in the truth. To this you were called by the good news which we brought you, to attain to the glory of our Lord Jesus Christ. Stand firm then, friends, and hold fast to the truths that we taught you,

whether by word or by letter. And may our Lord Jesus Christ himself, and God our Father, who loved us and, in his loving kindness, gave us unfailing consolation and good ground for hope, console your hearts, and strengthen you to do and to say all that is right. 16
17

Conclusion

IN CONCLUSION, friends, pray for us — pray that the Lord’s message may spread rapidly, and be received everywhere with honor, as it was among you; and that we may be preserved from wrong-headed and wicked people — for it is not everyone who believes in Christ. But the Lord will not fail you; he will give you strength, and guard you from evil. Yes, and the confidence that our union with the Lord enables us to place in you leads us to believe that you are doing, and will do, what we direct you. May the Lord bring you to the love of God, and to the patience of the Christ. 3
2
3
4
5

We beg you, friends, in the name of the Lord Jesus Christ, to avoid any follower who is living an ill-ordered life, which is not in agreement with the teaching that you received from us. For you know well that you ought to follow our example. When we were with you, our life was not ill-ordered, nor did we eat anyone’s bread without paying for it. Night and day, laboring and toiling, we used to work at our trades, so as not to be a burden on any of you. This was not because we had not a right to receive support, but our object was to give you a pattern for you to copy. Indeed, when we were with you, the rule we laid down was — ‘Whoever does not choose to work will not get to eat.’ We hear that there are among you people who are living ill-ordered lives, and who, instead of attending to their own business, are mere busybodies. All such people we beg, and implore,, in the name of the Lord Jesus Christ, to attend quietly to their business, and earn their own living. You, friends, must not grow weary of doing what is right. If anyone disregards what we have said in this letter, take note of them and avoid their company, so that they may feel ashamed. Yet do not think of them as an enemy, but caution them as you would a brother or sister. May the Lord, from whom all peace 6
7
8
9
10
11
12
13
14
15
16

comes, himself give you his peace at all times and in all ways.
May he be with you all.

- 17 I, Paul, add this greeting in my own handwriting. It is my signa-
18 ture to every letter. This is how I write. May the blessing of our
Lord Jesus Christ be with you all.

PAUL'S FIRST LETTER TO TIMOTHY

Introduction

FROM PAUL, an apostle of Christ Jesus by the appointment of God, 1
our Savior, and Christ Jesus, our hope. To Timothy, my true child 2
in the faith: May God, the Father, and Christ Jesus, our Lord, bless
you, and be merciful to you, and give you peace.

I beg you, as I did when I was on my way into Macedonia, to re- 3
main at Ephesus; that you may instruct certain people there not to
teach new and strange doctrines, nor to devote their attention to 4
legends and interminable genealogies, which tend to give rise to
argument rather than to further that divine plan which is revealed
in the faith. The object of all instruction is to call forth that love 5
which comes from a pure heart, a clear conscience, and a sincere
faith. And it is because they have not aimed at these things that 6
the attention of certain people has been diverted to unprofitable
subjects. They want to be teachers of the law, and yet do not un- 7
derstand either the words they use, or the subjects on which they
speak so confidently. We know, of course, that the law is excellent, 8
when used legitimately, by one who recognizes that laws were 9
not made for good people, but for the lawless and disorderly, for
irreligious and wicked people, for those who are irreverent and
profane, for those who ill-treat their fathers or mothers, for mur-
derers, for the immoral, for perverts, for slave-dealers, for liars, 10
for perjurers, and for whatever else is opposed to sound Chris-
tian teaching — as is taught in the glorious good news of the 11
ever-blessed God, with which I was entrusted.

I am thankful to Christ Jesus, our Lord, who has been my 12
strength, for showing that he thought me worthy of trust by
appointing me to his ministry, though I once used to 13
blaspheme, and to persecute, and to insult. Yet mercy was
shown me, because I acted in ignorance, while still an

14 unbeliever; and the loving kindness of our Lord was boundless,
 15 and filled me with that faith and love which come from union
 16 with Christ Jesus. How true the saying is, and worthy of the
 17 fullest acceptance, that 'Christ Jesus came into the world to save
 18 sinners'! And there is no greater sinner than I! Yet mercy was
 19 shown me for the express purpose that Christ Jesus might
 20 exhibit in my case, beyond all others, his exhaustless patience, as
 an example for those who were afterwards to believe on him and
 attain eternal life. To the eternal King, ever-living, invisible, the
 one God, be ascribed honor and glory for ever and ever. Amen.

18 This, then, is the charge that I lay on you, Timothy, my child,
 in accordance with what was predicted of you — Fight the good
 19 fight in the spirit of those predictions, with faith, and with a clear
 conscience; and it is because they have thrust this aside, that, as
 20 regards the faith, some have wrecked their lives. Hymenaeus and
 Alexander are instances — the men whom I delivered over to Sa-
 tan so that they might be taught not to blaspheme.

General Directions on Church Matters

2 FIRST OF ALL, then, I ask that petitions, prayers, intercessions, and
 2 thanksgivings should be offered for everyone, especially for
 kings and all who are in high positions, in order that we may
 3 lead a quiet and peaceful life in a deeply religious and reverent
 4 spirit. This will be good and acceptable in the eyes of God, our
 5 Savior, whose will is that everyone should be saved, and attain
 6 to a full knowledge of the truth. There is but one God, and one
 mediator between God and men — the man, Christ Jesus, who
 gave himself as a ransom on behalf of all men.

This must be our testimony, as opportunities present themselves;
 7 and it was for this that I was myself appointed a herald and an
 apostle (I am telling the simple truth and no lie) — a teacher of
 the Gentiles in the faith and truth.

8 My desire, then, is that it should be the custom everywhere
 for the men to lead the prayers, with hands reverently uplifted,
 avoiding heated controversy.

9 I also desire that women should adorn themselves with appro-
 10 priate dress, worn quietly and modestly, and not with wreaths or
 gold ornaments for the hair, or pearls, or costly clothing, but —

as is proper for women who profess to be religious — with good
 actions. They must learn, listening quietly to their teachers and 11
 showing them all deference. I do not consent to them becom- 12
 ing teachers, or exercising authority over men; they ought to not
 make a fuss. Adam was formed first, not Eve. And it was not 13
 Adam who was deceived; it was the woman who was entirely de- 14
 ceived and fell into sin. But she will be saved by the birth of a 15
 child, if they never abandon faith, love, or holiness, and behave
 with modesty.

How true is this saying: ‘To aspire to be to be a presiding offi- 3
 cer in the church is to be ambitious for a noble task.’ The pre- 2
 siding officer should be of blameless character; a faithful part-
 ner; living a temperate, discreet, and well-ordered life; hospitable,
 and a skillful teacher, not addicted to drink or brawling, but of a 3
 forbearing and peaceable disposition, and not a lover of money;
 they should provide for own household well, and their children 4
 should kept under control and be well-behaved. If someone does 5
 not know how to provide for their own household, how can they
 take charge of the church of God? The presiding officer should 6
 not be a recent convert, or they might become blinded by pride
 and fall under the same condemnation as the devil. They should 7
 also be well spoken of by outsiders, so that they may not incur
 censure and so fall into the devil’s trap. So, too, assistant officers 8
 should be serious and straightforward, not given to taking much
 drink or to questionable money-making, but people who hold the 9
 deep truths of the faith and have a clear conscience. They should 10
 be tested first, and only appointed to their office if no objection
 is raised against them. It should be the same with the women in 11
 this office. They should be serious, not gossips, sober, and trust-
 worthy in all respects. Assistant officers should be faithful part- 12
 ners who manage their children and their households well. Those
 who have filled that post with honor gain for themselves an hon- 13
 orable position, as well as great confidence through the faith that
 they place in Christ Jesus.

Special Directions to Timothy

I AM WRITING THIS TO YOU, though I hope that I will come to see 14
 you before long; but in case I should be delayed, I want you to 15

know what your conduct ought to be in the Household of God, which is the church of the living God — the pillar and stay of the truth. Yes, and confessedly wonderful are the deep truths of our religion; for —

‘He was revealed in our nature,
Pronounced righteous in spirit,
Seen by angels,
Proclaimed among the Gentiles,
Believed on in the world,
Taken up into glory.’

4 But the Spirit distinctly says that in later times there will be some who will fall away from the faith, and devote their attention to misleading spirits, and to the teaching of demons, who will make use of the hypocrisy of lying teachers. These people’s consciences are seared, and they discourage marriage and enjoin abstinence from certain kinds of food; though God created these foods to be enjoyed thankfully by those who hold the faith and have attained a full knowledge of the truth. Everything created by God is good, and there in nothing that need be rejected — provided only that it is received thankfully; for it is consecrated by God’s blessing and by prayer.

6 Put all this before the followers, and you will be a good servant of Christ Jesus, sustained by the precepts of the faith and of that good teaching by which you have guided your life. As for profane legends and old wives’ tales, leave them alone. Train yourself to lead a religious life; for while the training of the body is of service in some respects, religion is of service in all, carrying with it, as it does, a promise of life both here and hereafter. How true that saying is and worthy of the fullest acceptance! With that aim we toil and struggle, for we have set our hopes on the living God, who is the Savior of all, and especially of those who hold the faith.

11 Remember these things in your teaching. Do not let anyone look down on you because you are young, but, by your conversation, your conduct, your love, your faith, and your purity, be an example to those who hold the faith. Until I come, apply yourself to public reading, preaching, and teaching. Do not neglect the divine gift within you, which was given you, amid many a

prediction, when the hands of the officers of the church were laid
on your head. Practice these things, devote yourself to them, so 15
that your progress may be plain to everyone. Look to yourself as 16
well as to your teaching. Persevere in this, for your doing so will
mean salvation for yourself as well as for your hearers.

Do not reprimand an older man, but plead with him as if he were 5
your father. Treat the young men as brothers, the older women 2
as mothers, and the younger women as sisters — with all purity.
Show consideration for widows — I mean those who are really 3
widowed. but, if a widow has children or grandchildren, let them 4
learn to show proper regard for the members of their own family
first, and to make some return to their parents; for that is pleasing
in God's sight. As for the woman who is really widowed and left 5
quite alone, her hopes are fixed on God, and she devotes herself to
prayers and supplications night and day. But the life of a widow 6
who is devoted to pleasure is a living death. Those are the points 7
you should teach, so that there may be no call for your censure.
Anyone who fails to provide for their own relations, and espe- 8
cially for those under their own roof, has disowned the faith, and
is worse than an unbeliever. A widow, when her name is added 9
to the list, should not be less than sixty years old; she should have
been a faithful wife, and be well spoken of for her kind actions. 10
She should have brought up children, have shown hospitality to
strangers, have washed the feet of her fellow Christians, have re-
lieved those who were in distress, and devoted herself to every 11
kind of good action. But you should exclude the younger wid-
ows from the list; for, when they grow restive under the yoke of 12
the Christ, they want to marry, and so they bring condemnation
on themselves for having broken their previous promise. And not 13
only that, but they learn to be idle as they go about from house to
house. Nor are they merely idle, but they also become gossips and
busybodies, and talk of what they ought not. Therefore I advise 14
young widows to marry, bear children, and attend to their homes,
and so avoid giving the enemy an opportunity for scandal. There 15
are some who have already left us, to follow Satan. Any Christian 16
woman, who has relations who are widows, ought to relieve them
and not allow them to become a burden to the church, so that the
church may relieve those widows who are really widowed.

Those officers of the church who fill their office well should 17
be held deserving of especial consideration, particularly those

18 whose work lies in preaching and teaching. The words of scripture are —

‘You should not muzzle the ox while it is treading out the grain.’

and again —

‘The worker is worth their wages.’

19 Do not receive a charge against an officer of the church, unless it
 20 is supported by two or three witnesses; but rebuke offenders
 21 publicly, so that others may take warning. I charge you solemnly, before God and Christ Jesus and the chosen angels, to carry out these directions, unswayed by prejudice, never acting
 22 with partiality. Never ordain anyone hastily, and take no part in
 23 the wrong-doing of others. Keep your life pure. Do not continue to drink water only, but take a little wine because of the
 24 weakness of your stomach, and your frequent ailments. There are some people whose sins are conspicuous and lead on to judgment, while there are others whose sins dog their steps. In
 25 the same way noble deeds become conspicuous, and those which are otherwise cannot be concealed.

6 All who are in the position of slaves should regard their masters as deserving of the greatest respect, so that the name of God,
 2 and our teaching, may not be maligned. Those who have Christian masters should not think less of them because they are also followers of Christ, but on the contrary they should serve them all the better, because those who are to benefit by their good work are dear to them as their fellow Christians.

Conclusion

3 **THOSE ARE THE THINGS TO INSIST ON IN YOUR TEACHING.** Anyone who teaches otherwise, and refuses their assent to sound instruction — the instruction of our Lord Jesus Christ — and to the teaching of religion, is puffed up with conceit, not really knowing anything, but having a morbid craving for discussions and arguments. Such things only give rise to envy, quarreling, recriminations, base suspicions, and incessant wrangling on the part of these corrupt-minded people who have lost all hold on the truth, and who think of religion only as a source of gain. And

a great source of gain religion is, when it brings contentment 6
with it! For we brought nothing into the world, because we can- 7
not even carry anything out of it. So, with food and shelter, we 8
will be content. Those who want to be rich fall into the net of 9
temptation, and become the prey of many foolish and harmful
ambitions, which plunge people into destruction and ruin. Love 10
of money is a source of all kinds of evil; and in their eagerness to
be rich some have wandered away from the faith, and have been
pierced to the heart by many a regret.

But you must, servant of God, avoid all this. Aim at righteous- 11
ness, piety, faith, love, endurance, gentleness. Run the great race 12
of the faith, and win the eternal life. It was for this that you re-
ceived the call, and, in the presence of many witnesses, made the
great profession of faith. I beg you, as in the sight of God, the 13
source of all life, and of Christ Jesus who before Pontius Pilate
made the great profession of faith — I implore you to keep his 14
command free from stain or reproach, until the appearing of our
Lord Jesus Christ. This will be brought about in his own time by 15
the one ever-blessed Potentate, the king of all kings and Lord of
all lords, who alone is possessed of immortality and dwells in 16
unapproachable light, whom no one has ever seen or ever can see
— to whom be ascribed honor and power for ever. Amen.

Teach those who are wealthy in this life not to pride them- 17
selves, or fix their hopes, on so uncertain a thing as wealth, but
on God, who gives us a wealth of enjoyment on every side. Teach 18
them to show kindness, to exhibit a wealth of good actions, to be
open-handed and generous, storing up for themselves what in 19
the future will prove to be a good foundation, so that they may
gain the only true life.

Timothy, guard what has been entrusted to you. Avoid the pro- 20
fane prattle and contradictions of what some miscall 'theology,'
for there are those who, while asserting their proficiency in it, 21
have yet, as regards the faith, gone altogether astray.

God bless you all.

PAUL'S SECOND LETTER TO TIMOTHY

Introduction

To TIMOTHY, my dear child, from Paul who, by the will of God, is 1
an apostle of Christ Jesus, charged to proclaim the life that comes
from union with Christ Jesus. May God, the Father, and Christ
Jesus, our Lord, bless you, and be merciful to you, and give you
peace.

I am thankful to God, whom I serve, as my ancestors did, with a 3
clear conscience, when I remember you, as I never fail to do, in my
prayers — night and day alike, as I think of your tears, longing to 4
see you, that my happiness may be completed, now that I have 5
been reminded of the sincere faith that you have shown. That faith
was seen first in your grandmother Lois and your mother Eunice,
and is now, I am convinced, in you also. And that is my reason for 6
reminding you to stir into flame that gift of God, which is yours
through your ordination at my hands. For the Spirit which God 7
gave us was not a spirit of cowardice, but a spirit of power, love,
and self-control. Do not, therefore, be ashamed of the testimony 8
which we have to bear to our Lord, or of me imprisoned for his
sake; but join with me in suffering for the good news, as far as God
enables you. It was God who saved us, and from him we received 9
our solemn call — not as a reward for anything that we had done,
but in fulfillment of his own loving purpose. For that love was
extended to us, through Christ Jesus, before time began, and has 10
now been made apparent through the appearing of our Savior,
Christ Jesus; who has made an end of death, and has brought
life and Immortality to light by that good news, of which I was 11
myself appointed a herald and apostle, and teacher. That is why 12
I am undergoing these sufferings; yet I feel no shame, for I know
in whom I have put my faith, and am convinced that he is able to
guard what I have entrusted to him until 'that day.' Keep before 13

you, as an example of sound teaching, all that you learnt from me
 as you listened with that faith and love which come from union
 14 with Christ Jesus. Guard by the help of the Holy Spirit, who is
 within us, the glorious trust that has been committed to you.
 15 You know, of course, that all our friends in Roman Asia turned
 their backs on me, and among them Phygellus and Hermogenes.
 16 May the Lord show mercy to the household of Onesiphorus; for
 17 he often cheered me and was not ashamed of my chains. On the
 contrary, when he arrived in Rome, he sought eagerly for me until
 18 he found me. The Lord grant that he may find mercy at the hands
 of the Lord on 'that day.' The many services that he rendered at
 Ephesus you have the best means of knowing.

Injunctions to Timothy

2 YOU MUST, then, my child, find strength in the help which comes
 2 from the union with Christ Jesus; and what you learnt from me,
 in the presence of many listeners, entrust to reliable people, who
 3 will be able in their turn to teach others. Share hardships with
 4 me, as a true soldier of Christ Jesus. A soldier on active service,
 to please his superior officer, always avoids entangling himself in
 5 the affairs of ordinary life. No athlete is ever awarded the wreath
 6 of victory unless they have kept the rules. The laborer who does
 the work should be the first to receive a share of the fruits of the
 7 earth. Reflect on what I say; the Lord will always help you to
 8 understand. Keep before your mind Jesus Christ, raised from the
 dead, a descendant of David, as told in the good news entrusted
 9 to me; in the service of which I am suffering hardships, even to
 being put in fetters as a criminal. But the message of God is not
 10 fettered; and that is why I submit to anything for the sake of God's
 people: so that they also may obtain the salvation which comes
 11 from union with Christ Jesus, and imperishable glory. How true
 this saying is — 'If we have shared his death, we will also share
 12 his life. If we continue to endure, we will also share his throne.
 13 If we should ever disown him, he, too, will disown us. If we lose
 our trust, he is still to be trusted, for he cannot be false to himself!'
 14 Remind people of all this; tell them solemnly, as in the sight of
 God, to avoid controversy, a useless thing and the ruin of those
 15 who listen to it. Do your utmost to show yourself true to God, a

worker with no reason to be ashamed, accurate in delivering the message of the truth. Avoid profane prattle. Those who indulge in it only get deeper into irreligious ways, and their teaching will spread like a cancer. Hymenaeus and Philetus are instances of this. They have gone completely astray as regards the truth; they say that a resurrection has already taken place, and so upset some people's faith. Yet God's firm foundation still stands unmoved, and it bears this inscription —

'THE LORD KNOWS THOSE WHO ARE HIS';

and this —

'LET ALL THOSE WHO USE THE NAME OF THE LORD
TURN AWAY FROM WICKEDNESS.'

Now in a large house there are not only things of gold and silver, but also others of wood and earthenware, some for better and some for common use. If, then, a person has escaped from the pollution of such errors as I have mentioned, they will be like a thing kept for better use, set apart, serviceable to its owner, ready for any good purpose. Flee from the passions of youth, but pursue righteousness, faith, love, and peace, in the company of those who, with a pure heart, invoke the Lord. Shun foolish and ignorant discussions, for you know that they only breed quarrels; and a servant of the Lord should never quarrel. They ought, on the contrary, to be courteous to everyone, skillful teachers, and forbearing. They should instruct their opponents in a gentle spirit; for, possibly, God may give those opponents a repentance that will lead to a fuller knowledge of truth, and they may yet come to a sober mind, and escape from the devil's net, when captured by the Lord's servant to do the will of God.

Be sure of this, that in the last days difficult times will come. People will be selfish, mercenary, boastful, haughty, and blasphemous; disobedient to their parents, ungrateful, impure, incapable of affection, merciless, slanderous, wanting in self-control, brutal, careless of the right, treacherous, reckless, and puffed up with pride; they will love pleasure more than they love God; and while they retain the outward form of religion, they will not allow it to influence them. Turn your back on such people as these. For

among them are to be found those who creep into homes and captivate weak women — women who, loaded with sins, and slaves
7 to all kinds of passions, are always learning, and yet never able
8 to attain to a real knowledge of the truth. Just as Jannes and Jambres opposed Moses, so do these people, in their turn, oppose the truth. Their minds are corrupted, and, as regards the faith,
9 they are utterly worthless. They will not, however, make further progress; for their wicked folly will be plain to everyone, just as the folly Jannes and Jambres was. But you, Timothy, were a close
10 observer of my teaching, my conduct, my purposes, my faith, my forbearance, my love, and my patient endurance, as well as of
11 my persecutions, and of the sufferings which I met with at Antioch, Iconium, and Lystra. You know what persecutions I underwent; and yet the Lord brought me safe out of all! Yes, and all
12 who aim at living a religious life in union with Christ Jesus will have to suffer persecution; but wicked people and impostors will
13 go from bad to worse, deceiving others and deceived themselves. You, however, must stand by what you learnt and accepted as
14 true. You know who they were from whom you learnt it; and that, from your childhood, you have known the sacred writings,
15 which can give you the wisdom that, through belief in Christ Jesus, leads to salvation. All scripture is God-breathed: helpful
16 for teaching, for refuting error, for giving guidance, and for training others in righteousness; so that God's people may be capable and
17 equipped for good work of every kind.

4 I solemnly charge you, in the sight of God and of Christ Jesus, who will one day judge the living and the dead — I charge you
2 by his appearing and by his kingdom: — Proclaim the message, be ready in season and out of season, convince, rebuke, encourage,
3 never failing to instruct with forbearance. For a time will come when people will not tolerate sound teaching. They will follow their own wishes, and, in their itching for novelty, procure
4 themselves a crowd of teachers. They will turn a deaf ear to the truth, and give their attention to legends instead. But you, Timothy, must always be temperate. Face hardships; do the work of a
5 missionary; discharge all the duties of your office.

6 As for me, my life blood is already being poured out; the time
7 of my departure is close at hand. I have run the great race; I have finished the course; I have kept the faith. And now the crown of
8 righteousness awaits me, which the Lord, the just judge, will give

Conclusion

me on 'that day' — and not only to me, but to all who have loved his appearing.

Conclusion

DO YOUR UTMOST TO COME TO ME SOON; for Demas, in his love for the world, has deserted me. He has gone to Thessalonica, Crescens to Galatia, and Titus to Dalmatia. There is no one but Luke with me. Pick up Mark on your way, and bring him with you, for he is useful to me in my work. I have sent Tychicus to Ephesus. Bring with you, when you come, the cloak which I left at Troas with Carpus, and the books, especially the parchments. Alexander, the coppersmith, showed much ill feeling towards me. 'The Lord will give him what his actions deserve.' You must also on your guard against him, for he is strongly opposed to our teaching. At my first trial no one stood by me. They all deserted me. May it never be counted against them! But the Lord came to my help and strengthened me, in order that, through me, the proclamation should be made so widely that all the Gentiles should hear it; and I was rescued 'out of the Lion's mouth.' The Lord will rescue me from all evil, and bring me safe into his Heavenly kingdom. All glory to him for ever and ever! Amen.

Give my greeting to Prisca and Aquila, and to the household of Onesiphorus. Erastus remained at Corinth, and I left Thophimus ill at Miletus. Do your utmost to come before winter. Eubulus, Pudens, Linus and Claudia send you their greetings, and so do the rest of the Lord's followers.

May the Lord be with your soul. God bless you all.

PAUL'S LETTER TO TITUS

Introduction

FROM PAUL, a servant of God, and an apostle of Jesus Christ, 1
 charged to strengthen the faith of God's chosen people, and 2
 their knowledge of that truth which makes for godliness and is 2
 based on the hope of eternal life, which God, who never lies, 3
 promised before the ages began, and has revealed at his own 3
 time in his message, with the proclamation of which I was 4
 entrusted by the command of God our Savior. To Titus, my true 4
 child in our one faith: May God, the Father, and Christ Jesus, our 4
 Savior, bless you and give you peace.

Mission of Titus in Crete

MY REASON FOR LEAVING YOU IN CRETE WAS THAT YOU MIGHT put in 5
 order what had been left unsettled, and appoint officers of the 5
 church in the various towns, as I myself directed you. They are 6
 to be of irreproachable character, faithful to their partners, 6
 whose children are Christians and have never been charged with 6
 dissolute conduct or have been unruly. For a presiding officer, 7
 as God's steward, ought to be of irreproachable character; not 7
 self-willed or quick-tempered, nor addicted to drink or to 7
 brawling or to questionable money-making. On the contrary, 8
 they should be hospitable, eager for the right, discreet, upright, 8
 people of holy life and capable of self-restraint, who hold 9
 doctrine that can be relied on as being in accordance with the 9
 accepted teaching; so that they may be able to encourage others 9
 by sound teaching, as well as to refute our opponents.
 There are, indeed, many unruly persons — great talkers who 10
 deceive themselves, principally converts from Judaism, whose 11
 mouths ought to be stopped; for they upset whole households

12 by teaching what they ought not to teach, merely to make ques-
13 tionable gains. It was a Cretan — one of their own teachers —
14 who said: ‘Cretans are always liars, base brutes, and gluttonous
15 idlers’; and his statement is true. Therefore rebuke them sharply,
16 so that they may be sound in the faith, and may pay no atten-
tion to Jewish legends, or to the directions of those who turn their
backs on the truth. Everything is pure to the pure-minded, but to
those whose minds are polluted and who are unbelievers nothing
is pure. Their minds and consciences are alike polluted. They
profess to know God, but by their actions they disown him. They
are degraded and self-willed; and, as far as anything good is con-
cerned, they are utterly worthless.

2 You should, however, speak of such subjects as properly have
2 a place in sound Christian teaching. Teach that the older men
3 should be temperate, serious, and discreet; strong in faith, love,
3 and endurance. So, too, that the older women should be reverent
4 in their demeanor, and that they should avoid scandal, and be-
4 ware of becoming slaves to drink; that they should teach what is
5 right, so as to train the younger women to love their husbands
5 and children, and to be discreet, pure-minded, domesticated,
6 good women, respecting the authority of their husbands, in order
6 that God’s message may not be maligned. And so again with the
7 younger men — impress on them the need of discretion. Above
7 all, set an example of doing good. Show sincerity in your teach-
8 ing, and a serious spirit; let the instruction that you give be sound
8 and above reproach, so that the enemy may be ashamed when he
9 fails to find anything bad to say about us. Tell slaves to respect
9 their owner’s authority in all circumstances, and to try their best
10 to please them. Teach them not to contradict or to pilfer, but to
10 show such praiseworthy fidelity in everything, as to recommend
11 the teaching about God our Savior by all that they do.
11 For the loving kindness of God has been revealed, bringing salva-
12 tion for all; leading us to renounce irreligious ways and worldly
12 ambitions, and to live discreet, upright, and religious lives here in
13 this present world, while we are awaiting our blessed hope — the
13 appearing in glory of our great God and Savior, Christ Jesus. For
14 he gave himself on our behalf, to deliver us from all wickedness,
14 and to purify for himself a people who should be peculiarly his

own and eager to do good. Speak of all this, and encourage and rebuke with all authority. Do not let anyone despise you. Remind your hearers to respect and obey the powers that be, to be ready for every kind of good work, to speak ill of no one, to avoid quarreling, to be forbearing, and under all circumstances to show a gentle spirit in dealing with others, whoever they may be. There was, you remember, a time when we ourselves were foolish, disobedient, misled, slaves to all kinds of passions and vices, living in a spirit of malice and envy, detested ourselves and hating one another. But, when the kindness of God our Savior and his love for humanity were revealed, he saved us, not as the result of any righteous actions that we had done, but in fulfillment of his merciful purposes. He saved us by that washing which was a new birth to us, and by the renewing power of the Holy Spirit, which he poured out on us abundantly through Jesus Christ our Savior; that, having been pronounced righteous through his loving kindness, we might enter on our inheritance with the hope of eternal life. How true that saying is! And it is on these subjects that I desire you to lay especial stress, so that those who have learned to trust in God may be careful to devote themselves to doing good. Such subjects are excellent in themselves, and of real use to humanity. But have nothing to do with foolish discussions, or with genealogies, or with controversy, or disputes about the law. They are useless and futile. If someone is causing divisions among you, after warning them once or twice, have nothing more to say to them. You may be sure that such a person has forsaken the truth and is in the wrong; they stand self-condemned.

Conclusion

AS SOON AS I SEND ARTEMAS OR TYCHICUS TO YOU, join me as quickly as possible at Nicopolis, for I have arranged to spend the winter there. Do your best to help Zenas, the teacher of the law, and Apollos, on their way, and see that they want for nothing. Let all our people learn to devote themselves to doing good, so as to meet the most pressing needs, and that their lives may not be unfruitful.

- 15 All who are with me here send you their greeting. Give my greeting to our friends in the faith.

God bless you all.

PAUL'S LETTER TO PHILEMON

Introduction

FROM PAUL, now a prisoner for Christ Jesus, and from Timothy, a 1
fellow follower of the Lord. To our dear friend and fellow worker 2
Philemon, to our sister Apphia, to our fellow soldier Archippus;
and to the church that meets at Philemon's house; may God, our 3
Father, and the Lord Jesus Christ bless you and give you peace.

Request regarding runaway slave

I ALWAYS MENTION YOU IN MY PRAYERS and thank God for you, be- 4
cause I hear of the love and the faith which you show, not only to 5
the Lord Jesus, but also to all his people; and I pray that your 6
participation in the faith may result in action, as you come to a fuller 7
realization of everything that is good and Christlike in us. I have
indeed found great joy and encouragement in your love, know-
ing, as I do, how the hearts of Christ's People have been cheered,
friend, by you.
And so, though my union with Christ enables me, with all confi- 8
dence, to dictate the course that you should adopt, yet the claims 9
of love make me prefer to plead with you — yes, even me, Paul,
though I am an ambassador for Christ Jesus and, now a prisoner
for him as well. I plead with you for this child of mine, Onesimus, 10
to whom, in my prison, I have become a father. Once he was of 11
little service to you, but now he has become of great service, not
only to you, but to me as well; and I am sending him back to you 12
with this letter — though it is like tearing out of my heart. For 13
my own sake I should like to keep him with me, so that, while I
am in prison for the good news, he might attend to my wants on
your behalf. But I do not wish to do anything without your con- 14
sent, because I want your generosity to be voluntary and not, as it
were, compulsory. It may be that he was separated from you for 15

16 an hour, for this reason, so that you might have him back for ever,
no longer as a slave, but as something better — a dearly loved
friend and follower of the Lord, especially dear to me, and how
much more so to you, not only as a person, but as your fellow
17 Christian! If, then, you count me your friend, receive him as you
would me. If he has caused you any loss, or owes you anything,
18 charge it to me. I, Paul, put my own hand to it — I will repay you
myself. I say nothing about your owing me your self. Yes, friend,
19 let me gain something from you because of your union with the
Lord. Cheer my heart by your Christlike spirit.
20

21 Even as I write, I have such confidence in your compliance with
my wishes, that I am sure that you will do even more than I am
22 asking. Please also get a lodging ready for me, for I hope that I
will be given back to you all in answer to your prayers.

Messages and Blessing

23 EPAPHRAS, who is my fellow prisoner for Christ Jesus, sends you
24 his greeting; and Marcus, Aristarchus, Demas, and Luke, my fel-
low workers, send theirs.

25 May the blessing of the Lord Jesus Christ rest on your souls.

THE LETTER TO THE HEBREWS

Christ the Mediator

God, who, of old, at many times and in many ways, spoke to our
ancestors, by the prophets, has in these latter days spoken to us
by the Son, whom he appointed the heir of all things, and through
whom he made the universe. For he is the radiance of the glory
of God and the expression of his being, upholding all creation by
the power of his word; and, when he had made an expiation for
the sins of humanity, he 'took his seat at the right hand' of God's
Majesty on high, having shown himself as much greater than the
angels as the name that he has inherited surpasses theirs.
For to which of the angels did God ever say —

'You are my Son; this day I have become your Father'?

or again —

'I will be to him a Father, and he will be to me a Son'?

And again, when God brought the first-born into the world, he
said —

'Let all the angels of God bow down before him.'

Speaking of the angels, he said —

'He makes the winds his angels
And the flames of fire his servants';

while of the Son he said —

'God is your throne for ever and ever;
The scepter of his kingdom is the scepter of Justice;
You love righteousness and hates iniquity;
Therefore God, your God, has anointed you with the
festal oil more abundantly than your peers.'

Again —

- ‘You, Lord, in the beginning did lay the foundation of the earth,
And the heavens are the work of your hands.
11 They will perish, but you remain;
As a garment they will all grow old;
12 As a mantle you will fold them up,
And as a garment they will be changed,
But you are the same, and your years will know no end.’
- 13 To which of the angels has God ever said —
‘Sit you at my right hand
Until I put your enemies as a stool for your feet?’
- 14 Are not all the angels spirits in the service of God, sent out to minister for the sake of those who are destined to obtain salvation?
- 2 Therefore we must give still more heed to what we were
2 taught, so we do not drift away. For, if the message which was delivered by angels had its authority confirmed, so that every offense against it, or neglect of it, met with a fitting requital, how
3 can we, of all people, expect to escape, if we disregard so great a salvation? It was the Master who at the outset spoke of this salvation, and its authority was confirmed for us by those who
4 heard him, while God himself added his testimony to it by signs, and marvels, and many different miracles, as well as by imparting the Holy Spirit as he saw fit.
- 5 God has not given to angels the control of that future world of
6 which we are speaking! No; a writer has declared somewhere —
‘What are mere mortals that you should remember them?
Or human beings that you should care for them?
7 You have made them, for a while, lower than angels;
With glory and honor you have crowned them;
You have set them over all that your hands have made;
8 You have placed all things beneath their feet.’
- This ‘placing of everything’ under humanity means that there was nothing which was not placed under them. As yet, however,
9 we do not see everything placed under humanity. What our eyes do see is Jesus, who was made for a while lower than angels,

now, because of his sufferings and death, crowned with glory and honor; so that his tasting the bitterness of death should, in God's loving kindness, be on behalf of all humanity. It was, indeed, fitting that God, for whom and through whom all things exist, should, when leading many children to glory, make the author of their salvation perfect through suffering. For he who purifies, and those whom he purifies, all spring from One; and therefore he is not ashamed to call them his brothers and sisters.' He says

—
 'I will tell of your name to my brothers and sisters,
 In the midst of the congregation I will sing your praise.'

And again —

'As for me, I will put my trust in God.'

And yet again —

'See, here am I and the children whom God gave me.'

Therefore, since human nature is the common heritage of the children, Jesus also shared it, in order that by death he might render powerless him whose power lies in death — that is, the devil — and so might deliver all those who, from fear of death, had all their lives been living in slavery. It was not, surely, to the help of the angels that Jesus came, but 'to the help of the descendants of Abraham.' And consequently it was necessary that he should in all points be made like 'his brothers and sisters,' in order that he might prove a merciful as well as a faithful high priest in humanity's relations with God, for the purpose of expiating the sins of his people. The fact that he himself suffered under temptation enables him to help those who are tempted.

Therefore, my Christian friends, you who, all alike, have received the call from heaven, fix your attention on Jesus, the apostle and high priest of our religion. See how faithful he was to the God who appointed him, as Moses was in the whole house of God. He has been deemed worthy of far higher honor than Moses, just as the founder of the house is held in greater regard than the house itself. For every house has its founder, and the founder of the universe is God. While the faithful service of Moses in the whole house of God was that of a servant, whose

6 duty was to bear testimony to a message still to come, the
 faithfulness of Christ was that of a son set over the house of
 God. And we are his house — if only we retain, unshaken to the
 end, the courage and confidence inspired by our hope.

7 Therefore, as the Holy Spirit says —

‘If today you hear God’s voice,
 8 harden not your hearts, as when Israel provoked me
 On the day when they tried my patience in the desert,
 9 Where your ancestors tried my forbearance,
 And saw my mighty deeds for forty years.
 10 Therefore I was sorely vexed with that generation,
 And I said — “Their hearts are always straying;
 They have never learned my ways”;
 11 While in my wrath I swore —
 “They will never enter upon my rest.”’

12 Be careful, friends, that there is never found in anyone of you
 a wicked and faithless heart, shown by that person separating
 13 themselves from the living God. Rather encourage one another
 daily — while there is a ‘Today’ — to prevent anyone among you
 14 from being hardened by the deceitfulness of sin. For we now all
 share in the Christ, if indeed we retain, unshaken to the end, the
 15 confidence that we had at the first. To use the words of scripture
 —

‘If today you hear God’s voice,
 Harden not your hearts, as when Israel provoked me.’

16 Who were they who heard God speak and yet provoked him?
 Were not they all those who left Egypt under the leadership of
 17 Moses? And with whom was it that God was sorely vexed for
 forty years? Was not it with those who had sinned, and who fell
 18 dead in the desert? And who were they to whom God swore that
 they should not enter upon his rest, if not those who had proved
 19 faithless? We see, then, that they failed to enter upon it because of
 4 their want of faith. We must, therefore, be very careful, though
 there is a promise still standing that we will enter upon God’s rest,
 2 that none of you even appear to have missed it. For we have had
 the good news told us just as they had. But the message which
 they heard did them no good, since they did not share the faith

of those who were attentive to it. Upon that rest we who have 3
believed are now entering. As God has said —

‘In my wrath I swore —
“They will never enter upon my rest;”’

Although God’s work was finished at the creation of the world;
for, in a passage referring to the seventh day, you will find these 4
words —

‘God rested on the seventh day after all his work.’

On the other hand, we read in that passage — 5

‘They will never enter upon my rest.’

Since, then, there is still a promise that some will enter upon this 6
rest, and since those who were first told the good news did not
enter upon it, because of their disbelief, again God fixed a day. 7
‘Today,’ he said, speaking after a long interval through the mouth
of David, in the passage already quoted —

‘If today you hear God’s voice
Harden not your hearts.’

Now if Joshua had given ‘rest’ to the people, God would not have 8
spoken of another and later day. There is, then, a Sabbath rest still 9
awaiting God’s people. For the person who enters upon God’s 10
rest do themselves rest after their work, just as God did. Let us, 11
therefore, make every effort to enter upon that rest, so that none of
us fall through such disbelief as that of which we have had an ex- 12
ample. God’s message is a living and active power, sharper than
any two-edged sword, piercing its way until it penetrates soul and 13
spirit — not the joints only but the marrow — and detecting the
inmost thoughts and purposes of the mind. There is no created 13
thing that can hide itself from the sight of God. Everything is ex-
posed and laid bare before the eyes of him to whom we have to
give account.

We have, then, in Jesus, the Son of God, a great high priest 14
who has passed into the highest heaven; let us, therefore, hold
fast to the faith which we have professed. Our high priest is not 15
one unable to sympathize with our weaknesses, but one who has
in every way been tempted, exactly as we have been, but without
sinning. Therefore, let us draw near boldly to the throne of love, 16
to find pity and love for the hour of need.

5 Every high priest, taken from among the people, is appointed
 2 as their representative in their relations with God, to offer both
 3 gifts and sacrifices in expiation of sins. And he is able to sympa-
 4 thize with the ignorant and deluded, since he is himself subject to
 5 weakness, and is therefore bound to offer sacrifices for sins, not
 only for the people, but equally so for himself. Nor does anyone
 take that high office on themselves, until they have been called to
 do so by God, as Aaron was. In the same way, even the Christ did
 not take the honor of the high priesthood on himself, but he was
 appointed by him who said to him —

‘You are my Son; this day I have become your Father’;

6 and on another occasion also —

‘You are a priest for all time of the order of Melchizedek.’

7 Jesus, in the days of his earthly life, offered prayers and suppli-
 cations, with earnest cries and with tears, to him who was able
 to save him from death; and he was heard because of his devout
 8 submission. Son though he was, he learned obedience from his
 9 sufferings; and, being made perfect, he became to all those who
 10 obey him the source of eternal salvation, while God himself pro-
 nounced him a high priest of the order of Melchizedek.

11 Now on this subject I have much to say, but it is difficult to
 explain it to you, because you have shown yourselves so slow to
 12 learn. For whereas, considering the time that has elapsed, you
 ought to be teaching others, you still need some one to teach you
 the alphabet of the divine revelation, and need again to be fed
 13 with ‘milk’ instead of with ‘solid food.’ For everyone who still
 has to take ‘milk’ knows nothing of the teaching of righteousness;
 14 they are a mere infant. But ‘solid food’ is for Christians of mature
 faith — those whose faculties have been trained by practice to dis-
 6 tinguish right from wrong. Therefore, let us leave behind the ele-
 mentary teaching about the Christ and press on to perfection, not
 always laying over again a foundation of repentance for a lifeless
 2 formality, of faith in God — teaching concerning baptisms and
 the laying on of hands, the resurrection of the dead and a final
 3 judgment. Yes and, with God’s help, we will. For if those who
 4 were once for all brought into the light, and learned to appreciate

the gift from heaven, and came to share in the Holy Spirit, and 5
 learned to appreciate the beauty of the divine message, and the 6
 new powers of the coming age — if those, I say, fell away, it would 6
 be impossible to bring them again to repentance; they would be 6
 crucifying the Son of God over again for themselves, and expos- 7
 ing him to open contempt. Ground that drinks in the showers 7
 that from time to time fall on it, and produces vegetation useful 7
 to those for whom it is tilled, receives a blessing from God; but, 8
 if it 'bears thorns and thistles,' it is regarded as worthless, it is in 8
 danger of being 'cursed,' and its end will be the fire.
 But about you, dear friends, even though we speak in this way, 9
 we are confident of better things — of things that point to your 9
 salvation. For God is not unjust; he will not forget the work that 10
 you did, and the love that you showed for his name, in sending 10
 help to your fellow Christians — as you are still doing. But our 11
 great desire is that every one of you should be equally earnest to 11
 attain to a full conviction that our hope will be fulfilled, and that 11
 you should keep that hope to the end. Then you will not show 12
 yourselves slow to learn, but you will copy those who, through 12
 faith and patience, are now entering upon the enjoyment of God's 12
 promises.

When God gave his promise to Abraham, since there was no 13
 one greater by whom he could swear, he swore by himself. His 14
 words were —

'I will assuredly bless you and increase your numbers.'

And so, after patiently waiting, Abraham obtained the fulfillment 15
 of God's promise. People, of course, swear by what is greater than 16
 themselves, and with them an oath is accepted as putting a matter 16
 beyond all dispute. And therefore God, in his desire to show, 17
 with unmistakable plainness, to those who were to enter on the 17
 enjoyment of what he had promised, the unchangeableness of his 17
 purpose, bound himself with an oath. For he intended us to find 18
 great encouragement in these two unchangeable things, which 18
 make it impossible for God to prove false — we, I mean, who fled 18
 for safety where we might lay hold on the hope set before us. This 19
 hope is an anchor for our souls, secure and strong, and it 'reaches 19
 into the sanctuary that lies behind the curtain,' where Jesus, our 20
 forerunner, has entered on our behalf, after being made for all
 time a high priest of the order of Melchizedek.

Paramount Priesthood of the Christ

- 7 IT WAS THIS MELCHIZEDEK, king of Salem and priest of the Most
 High God, who met Abraham returning from the slaughter of the
 2 kings, and gave him his blessing; and it was to him that Abraham
 allotted a tithe of all the spoil. The meaning of his name is 'king of
 righteousness,' and besides that, he was also king of Salem, which
 3 means 'king of peace.' There is no record of his father, or mother,
 or lineage, nor again of any beginning of his days, or end of his
 life. In this he resembles the Son of God, and stands before us as
 a priest whose priesthood is continuous.
- 4 Consider, then the importance of this Melchizedek, to whom
 even the patriarch Abraham himself gave a tithe of the choicest
 5 spoils. Those descendants of Levi, who are from time to time
 appointed to the priesthood, are directed to collect tithes from
 the people in accordance with the law — that is from their own
 6 kindred, although they also are descended from Abraham. But
 Melchizedek, although not of this lineage, received tithes from
 Abraham, and gave his blessing to the man who had God's
 7 promises. Now no one can dispute that it is the superior who
 8 blesses the inferior. In the one case the tithes are received by
 people who are mortal; in the other case by one about whom
 9 there is the statement that his life still continues. Moreover, in a
 sense, even Levi, who is the receiver of the tithes, has, through
 10 Abraham, paid tithes; for Levi was still in the body of his
 ancestor when Melchizedek met Abraham.
- 11 If, then, perfection had been attainable through the Levitical
 priesthood — and it was under this priesthood that the people
 received the law — why was it still necessary that a priest of a
 different order should appear, a priest of the order of Melchizedek
 12 and not of the order of Aaron? With the change of the priest-
 13 hood a change of the law became a necessity. And he of whom
 all this is said belonged to quite a different tribe, no member of
 14 which has ever served at the altar. For it is plain that our Lord
 had sprung from the tribe of Judah, though of that tribe Moses
 15 said nothing about their being priests. All this becomes even yet
 plainer when we remember that a new priest has appeared, re-
 16 sembling Melchizedek, and that he was appointed, not under a

law regulating only earthly matters, but by virtue of a life beyond the reach of death; for that is the meaning of the declaration — 17

‘You are for all time a priest of the order of Melchizedek.’

On the one hand, we have the abolition of a previous regulation as being both inefficient and useless (for the law never brought anything to perfection); and, on the other hand, we have the introduction of a better hope, which enables us to draw near to God. Then again, the appointment of this new priest was ratified by an oath, which is not so with the Levitical priests, but his appointment was ratified by an oath, when God said to him — 18 19 20 21

‘The Lord has sworn, and will not change, “You are a priest for all time.”’

And the oath shows the corresponding superiority of the covenant of which Jesus is appointed the surety. Again, new Levitical priests are continually being appointed, because death prevents their remaining in office; but Jesus remains for all time, and therefore the priesthood that he holds will never pass to another. And that is why he is able to save perfectly those who come to God through him, living for ever, as he does, to intercede of their behalf. 22 23 24 25

This was the high priest that we needed — holy, innocent, spotless, withdrawn from sinners, exalted above the highest heaven, one who has no need to offer sacrifices daily as those high priests have, first for their own sins, and then for those of the people. For this he did once and for all, when he offered himself as the sacrifice. The law appoints as high priests men who are weak, but the words of God’s oath, which was later than the law, name the Son as, for all time, the perfect priest. 26 27 28

To sum up what I have been saying: — Such is the high priest that we have, one who ‘has taken his seat at the right hand’ of the throne of God’s Majesty in heaven, where he ministers in the sanctuary, in that true tent set up by the Lord and not by man. Every high priest is appointed for the purpose of offering gifts and sacrifices to God; it follows, therefore, that this high priest must have some offering to make. If he were, however, still on earth, he would not even be a priest, since there are already priests who offer the gifts as the law directs. (These priests, it is true, are 8 2 3 4 5

engaged in a service which is only a copy and shadow of the heavenly realities, as is shown by the directions given to Moses when he was about to construct the tent. 'Look to it,' are the words, 'that you make every part in accordance with the pattern shown you
 6 on the mountain.') But Jesus, as we see, has obtained a ministry as far excelling theirs, as the covenant of which he is the intermediary, based, as it is, on better promises, excels the former covenant.
 7 If that first covenant had been faultless, there would have been
 8 no occasion for a second. But, finding fault with the people, God says —

"A time is coming," says the Lord,
 "When I will ratify a new covenant with the people of
 Israel and with the people of Judah —
 9 Not such a covenant as I made with their ancestors
 On the day when I took them by the hand to lead them
 out of the land of Egypt.
 For they did not abide by their covenant with me,
 And therefore I disregarded them," says the Lord.
 10 "This is the covenant that I will make with the people of
 Israel
 After those days," says the Lord.
 "I will impress my laws on their minds,
 And will inscribe them on their hearts;
 And I will be their God,
 And they will be my people.
 11 There will be no need for anyone to instruct their fellow
 citizen,
 Or for a person to say to their relatives 'Learn to know
 the Lord';
 For everyone will know me,
 From the lowest to the highest.
 12 For I will be merciful to their wrong-doings,
 And I will no longer remember their sins."
 13 By speaking of a 'new' covenant, God at once renders the former
 covenant obsolete; and whatever becomes obsolete and loses its
 force is virtually annulled.

The New Revelation and the Old

IT IS TRUE THAT EVEN THE FIRST COVENANT HAD ITS REGULATIONS for 9
 divine worship, and its sanctuary — though only a material one.
 For a tent was constructed, with an outer part which contained 2
 the stand for the lamps, and the table, and the consecrated bread.
 This is called the sanctuary. The part of the tent behind the second 3
 curtain is called the inner sanctuary. In it is the gold incense-al- 4
 tar, and the ark containing the covenant, completely covered with
 gold. In the ark is a gold casket containing the manna, Aaron's rod 5
 that budded, and the tablets on which the covenant was written;
 while above it, and overshadowing the cover on which atonement 6
 was made, are the cherubim of the presence. Now is not the time
 to discuss these things in detail. Such, then, was the arrangement 7
 of the tent. Into the outer part priests are constantly going, in the
 discharge of their sacred duties; but into the inner only the high 8
 priest goes, and that but once a year, and never without taking
 the blood of a victim, which he offers on his own behalf, and on 9
 behalf of the errors of the people. By this the Holy Spirit is teach-
 ing that the way into the sanctuary was hidden, as long as the 10
 outer part of the tent still remained. For that was only a type, to
 continue down to the present time; and, in keeping with it, both 11
 gifts and sacrifices are offered, though incapable of satisfying the
 conscience of the worshiper; the whole system being concerned 12
 only with food and drink and various ablutions — external cere-
 monials imposed until the coming of the new order.
 But, when Christ came, he appeared as high priest of that better 13
 system which was established; and he entered through that nob-
 ler and more perfect 'tent,' not made by human hands — that is 14
 to say, not a part of this present creation. Nor was it with the blood
 of goats and calves, but with his own blood, that he entered, once 15
 and for all, into the sanctuary, and obtained our eternal deliver-
 ance. For, if the blood of goats and bulls, and the sprinkling of
 the ashes of a heifer, purify those who have been defiled (as far as
 ceremonial purification goes), how much more will the blood of
 the Christ, who, through his eternal Spirit, offered himself up to
 God, as a victim without blemish, purify our consciences from a
 lifeless formality, and fit us for the service of the living God! And
 that is why he is the intermediary of a new covenant; in order that,
 as a death has taken place to effect a deliverance from the offenses

committed under the first covenant, those who have received the call may obtain the eternal inheritance promised to them. Whenever such a covenant as a will is in question, the death of the testator must of necessity be alleged. For such a covenant takes effect only on death, it does not come into force as long as the testator is alive. This explains why even the first covenant was not ratified without the shedding of blood. For, when every command had been announced to all the people by Moses in accordance with the law, he took the blood of the calves and of the goats, with water, scarlet wool, and a bunch of hyssop, and sprinkled even the book of the law, as well as all the people, saying, as he did so — “This is the blood that renders valid the covenant which God has commanded to be made with you.” And in the same way he also sprinkled with the blood the tent and all the things that were used in public worship. Indeed, under the law, almost everything is purified with blood; and, unless blood is shed, no forgiveness is to be obtained.

While, then, it was necessary for the copies of the heavenly realities to be purified by such means as these, the heavenly realities themselves required better sacrifices. For it was not into a sanctuary made by human hands, which merely foreshadowed the true one, that Christ entered, but into heaven itself, so that he might now appear in the presence of God on our behalf. Nor yet was it to offer himself many times, as year after year the high priest entered the sanctuary with an offering of blood — but not his own blood; for then Christ would have had to undergo death many times since the creation of the world. But now, once and for all, at the close of the age, he has appeared, in order to abolish sin by the sacrifice of himself. And, as it is ordained for people to die but once (death being followed by judgment), so it is with the Christ. He was offered up once and for all, to ‘bear away the sins of many’; and the second time he will appear — but without any burden of sin — to those who are waiting for him, to bring salvation.

10 The law, though able to foreshadow the better system which was coming, never had its actual substance. Its priests, with those sacrifices which they offer continuously year after year, can never make those who come to worship perfect. Otherwise, would not

the offering of these sacrifices have been abandoned, as the wor-
 shippers, having been once purified, would have had their consciences
 clear from sins? But, on the contrary, these sacrifices 3
 recall their sins to mind year after year. For the blood of bulls 4
 and goats is powerless to remove sins. That is why, when he was 5
 coming into the world, the Christ declared —

‘Sacrifice and offering you do not desire, but you provide
 for me a body;
 You take no pleasure in burnt offerings and sacrifices 6
 for sin.
 So I said, “See, I have come’ (as is written of me in the 7
 pages of the book),
 “To do your will, God.”

First come the words — ‘You do not desire, nor do you take plea- 8
 sure in, sacrifices, offerings, burnt offerings, and sacrifices for sin’
 (offerings regularly made under the law), and then there is added 9
 — ‘See, I have come to do your will.’ The former sacrifices are set
 aside to be replaced by the latter. And it is in the fulfillment of 10
 the will of God that we have been purified by the sacrifice, once
 and for all, of the body of Jesus Christ. Every other priest stands 11
 day after day at his ministrations, and offers the same sacrifices
 over and over again — sacrifices that can never take sins away.
 But, this priest, after he had offered one sacrifice for sins, which 12
 should serve for all time, ‘took his seat at the right hand of God,’
 and has since then been waiting ‘for his enemies to be put as a 13
 stool for his feet.’ By a single offering he has made perfect for all 14
 time those who are being purified. We have also the testimony of 15
 the Holy Spirit. For, after saying —

“‘This is the covenant that I will make with them 16
 After those days,” says the Lord;
 “I will impress my laws on their hearts,
 And will inscribe them on their minds,”

then we have — 17

‘And their sins and their iniquities I will no longer remem-
 ber.’

And, when these are forgiven, there is no further need of an offer- 18
 ing for sin.

Encouragement and Warning

19 THEREFORE, friends, since we may enter the sanctuary with confi-
 20 dence, in virtue of the blood of Jesus, by the way which he inau-
 21 gurated for us — a new and living way, a way through the sanc-
 22 tuary curtain (that is, his human nature); and, since we have in
 23 him ‘a great priest set over the house of God,’ let us draw near to
 24 God in all sincerity of heart and in perfect faith, with our hearts
 25 purified by the sprinkled blood from all consciousness of wrong,
 26 and with our bodies washed with pure water. Let us maintain
 27 the confession of our hope unshaken, for he who has given us his
 28 promise will not fail us. Let us vie with one another in a rivalry of
 29 love and noble actions. And let us not, as some do, cease to meet
 30 together; but, on the contrary, let us encourage one another, and
 all the more, now that you see the day drawing near. Remember,
 if we sin willfully after we have gained a full knowledge of the
 truth, there can be no further sacrifice for sin; there is only a fear-
 ful anticipation of judgment, and a burning indignation which
 will destroy all opponents. When someone disregarded the law
 of Moses, they were, on the evidence of two or three witnesses,
 put to death without pity. How much worse then, think you, will
 be the punishment deserved by those who have trampled under-
 foot the Son of God, who have treated the blood that rendered the
 covenant valid — the blood by which they were purified — as if
 it were not holy, and who have outraged the Spirit of love? We
 know who it was that said —

‘It is for me to avenge, I will requite’;

and again —

‘The Lord will judge his people.’

31 It is a fearful thing to fall into the hands of the living God.
 32 Call to mind those early days in which, after you had received
 33 the light, you patiently underwent a long and painful conflict.
 34 Sometimes, in consequence of the taunts and injuries heaped on
 you, you became a public spectacle; and sometimes you suffered
 through having shown yourselves to be the friends of people who
 were in the same position in which you had been. For you not
 only sympathised with those who were in prison, but you even
 took the confiscation of your possessions joyfully, knowing, as
 you did, that you had in yourselves a greater possession and a

lasting one. Do not, therefore, abandon the confidence that you 35
 have gained, for it has a great reward awaiting it. You still have 36
 need of patient endurance, in order that, when you have done
 God's will, you may obtain the fulfillment of his promise.

For there is indeed but a very little while 37
 Ere He who is coming will have come, without delay;
 And through faith the righteous will find life, 38
 But, if anyone draws back, my heart can find no plea-
 sure in them.'

But we do not belong to those who draw back, to their ruin, but 39
 to those who have faith, to the saving of their souls.

Heroes of Faith

FAITH IS THE REALIZATION OF THINGS HOPED FOR — THE PROOF OF 11
 things not seen. And it was for faith that the people of old were 2
 renowned. Faith enables us to perceive that the universe was 3
 created at the bidding of God — so that we know that what we
 see was not made out of visible things. Faith made the sacrifice 4
 which Abel offered to God a better sacrifice than Cain's, and
 won him renown as a righteous man, God himself establishing
 his renown by accepting his gifts; and it is by the example of his
 faith that Abel, though dead, still speaks. Faith led to Enoch's 5
 removal from earth, so that he might not experience death. 'He
 could not be found because God had removed him.' For, before 6
 his removal, he was renowned as having pleased God; but 6
 without faith it is impossible to please him, for he who comes to
 God must believe that God exists, and that he rewards those
 who seek for him.

It was faith that enabled Noah, after he had received the divine 7
 warning about what could not then be foreseen, to build, in rever-
 ent obedience, an ark in which to save his family. By his faith he
 condemned the world, and became possessed of that righteous-
 ness which follows on faith.

It was faith that enabled Abraham to obey the call that he re- 8
 ceived, and to set out for the place which he was afterwards to
 obtain as his own; and he set out not knowing where he was go-
 ing. It was faith that made him go to live as an emigrant in the 9
 promised land — as in a strange country — living there in tents

10 with Isaac and Jacob, who shared the promise with him. For he was looking for the city with the sure foundations, whose architect and builder is God.

11 Again, it was faith that enabled Sarah to conceive (though she was past the age for child-bearing), because she felt sure that he who had given her the promise would not fail her. And so from one man — and that when his powers were dead — there sprang a people as numerous ‘as the stars in the heavens or the countless grains of sand on the shore.’

13 All these died sustained by faith. They did not obtain the promised blessings, but they saw them from a distance and welcomed the sight, and they acknowledged themselves to be only aliens and strangers on the earth. Those who speak like this show plainly that they are seeking their homeland. If they had been thinking of the land that they had left, they could have found opportunities to return. But no, they were longing for a better, a heavenly, land! And therefore God was not ashamed to be called their God; indeed he had already prepared them a city.

17 It was faith that enabled Abraham, when put to the test, to offer Isaac as a sacrifice — he who had received the promises offering up his only son, of whom it had been said —

‘It is through Isaac that there will be descendants to bear your name.’

19 For he argued that God was even able to raise a man from the dead — and indeed, figuratively speaking, Abraham did receive Isaac back from the dead. It was faith that enabled Isaac to bless Jacob and Esau, even with regard to the future. Faith enabled Jacob, when dying, to give his blessing to each of the sons of Joseph, and ‘to bow himself in worship as he leant on the top of his staff.’

22 Faith caused Joseph, when his end was near, to speak of the future migration of the Israelites, and to give instructions with regard to his bones. Faith caused the parents of Moses to hide the child for three months after his birth, for they saw that he was a beautiful child; and they would not respect the king’s order. It was faith that caused Moses, when he was grown up, to refuse the title of ‘son of a daughter of Pharaoh.’ He preferred sharing the hardships of God’s people to enjoying the short-lived pleasures of sin. For he counted ‘the reproaches that are heaped on the Christ’ of greater value than the treasures of Egypt, looking

forward, as he did, to the reward awaiting him. Faith caused him 27
 to leave Egypt, though undaunted by the king's anger, for he was
 strengthened in his endurance by the vision of the invisible God.
 Faith led him to institute the Passover and the sprinkling of the 28
 blood, so that the Destroyer might not touch the eldest children of
 the Israelites. Faith enabled the people to cross the Red Sea, as if it 29
 had been dry land, while the Egyptians, when they attempted to
 do so, were drowned. Faith caused the walls of Jericho to fall after 30
 being encircled for seven days. Faith saved Rahab, the prostitute, 31
 from perishing with the unbelievers, after she had entertained the
 spies with friendliness.

Need I add anything more? Time would fail me if I attempted 32
 to relate the stories of Gideon, Barak, Samson, and Jephthah, and
 those of David, Samuel, and the prophets. By their faith they 33
 subdued kingdoms, ruled righteously, gained the fulfillment of
 God's promises, 'shut the mouths of lions,' quelled the fury of 34
 the flames, escaped the edge of the sword, found strength in the
 hour of weakness, displayed their prowess in war, and routed 35
 hostile armies. Women received back their dead raised to life.
 Some were tortured on the wheel, and refused release in order 36
 that they might rise to a better life. Others had to face taunts and
 blows, and even chains and imprisonment. They were stoned to 37
 death, they were tortured, they were swan asunder, they were put
 to the sword; they wandered about clothed in the skins of sheep 38
 or goats, destitute, persecuted, ill-used — people of whom the
 world was not worthy — roaming in lonely places, and on the 39
 mountains, and in caves and holes in the ground. Yet, though
 they all won renown by their faith, they did not obtain the final 40
 fulfillment of God's promise; since God had in view some bet-
 ter thing for us, so that they would only reach perfection together
 with us.

Seeing, therefore, that there is on every side of us such a throng 12
 of witnesses, let us also lay aside everything that hinders us, and
 the sin that clings about us, and run with patient endurance the
 race that lies before us, our eyes fixed on Jesus, the leader and 2
 perfect example of our faith, who, for the joy that lay before him,
 endured the cross, heedless of its shame, and now 'has taken his

3 seat at the right hand' of the throne of God. Weigh well the exam-
 4 ple of him who had to endure such opposition from 'people who
 5 were sinning against themselves,' so that you should not grow
 6 weary or faint-hearted. You have not yet, in your struggle with
 7 sin, resisted to the death; and you have forgotten the encouraging
 8 words which are addressed to you as God's children —

'My child, think not lightly of the Lord's discipline,

Do not despond when he rebukes you;

6 For it is him whom he loves that he disciplines,

And he chastises every child whom he acknowledges.'

7 It is for your discipline that you have to endure all this. God is
 8 dealing with you as his children. For where is there a child whom
 9 his father does not discipline? If you are left without that dis-
 10 cipline, in which all children share, it shows that you are bas-
 11 tards, and not true children. Further, when our earthly fathers
 12 disciplined us, we respected them. Should we not, then, much
 13 rather yield submission to the Father of souls, and live? Our fa-
 14 thers disciplined us for only a short time and as seemed best to
 15 them; but God disciplines us for our true good, to enable us to
 16 share his holiness. No discipline is pleasant at the time; on the
 17 contrary, it is painful. But afterwards its fruit is seen in the peace-
 18 fulness of a righteous life which is the lot of those who have been
 19 trained under it. Therefore 'lift again the down-dropped hands
 20 and straighten the weakened knees; make straight paths for your
 21 feet,' so that the lame limb may not be put out of joint, but rather
 22 be cured.

Conclusion

14 TRY EARNESTLY TO LIVE AT PEACE WITH EVERYONE, and to attain to
 15 that purity without which no one will see the Lord. Take care
 16 that no one fails to use the loving help of God, 'that no bitterness
 17 is allowed to take root and spring up, and cause trouble,' and so
 18 poison the whole community. Take care that no one becomes im-
 19 moral, or irreligious like Esau, who sold his birthright for a sin-
 20 gle meal. For you know that even afterwards, when he wished to
 21 claim his father's blessing, he was rejected — for he never found
 22 an opportunity to repair his error — though he begged for the
 23 blessing with tears.

It is not to tangible 'flaming fire' that you have drawn near, nor 18
to 'gloom, and darkness, and storm, and the blast of a trumpet, 19
and an audible voice.' Those who heard that voice entreated that 20
they might hear no more, for they could not bear to think of 21
the command — 'If even an animal touches the mountain, it is 22
to be stoned to death;' and so fearful was the sight that Moses 23
said — 'I tremble with fear.' No, but it is to Mount Zion that 24
you have drawn near, the city of the living God, the heavenly 25
Jerusalem, to countless hosts of angels, to the festal gathering 26
and assemblage of God's firstborn whose names are enrolled in
heaven, to God the judge of all people, to the spirits of the right-
eous who have attained perfection, to Jesus, the intermediary of a
new covenant, and to the sprinkled blood that tells of better things
than the blood of Abel. Beware how you refuse to hear him who
is speaking. For, if the Israelites did not escape punishment, when
they refused to listen to him who taught them on earth the divine
will, far worse will it be for us, if we turn away from him who is
teaching us from heaven. Then his voice shook the earth, but now
his declaration is —

'Still once more I will cause not only the earth to tremble,
but also the heavens.'

And those words 'still once more' indicate the passing away of 27
all that is shaken — that is, of all created things — in order that 28
only what is unshaken may remain. Therefore, let us, who have
received a kingdom that cannot be shaken, be thankful, and so
offer acceptable worship to God, with awe and the deepest re-
spect. For our God is 'a consuming fire.' 29

Let your love for the Lord's followers continue. Do not neglect 13
to show hospitality; for, through being hospitable, people have 2
all unawares entertained angels. Remember the prisoners, as if 3
you were their fellow prisoners, and the oppressed, not forgetting 4
that you also are still in the body. Let marriage be honored by all 5
and the married life be pure; for God will judge those who are
immoral and those who commit adultery. Do not let your conduct 6
be ruled by the love of money. Be content with what you have, for
God himself has said —

'I will never forsake you, nor will I ever abandon you.'

Therefore we may say with confidence — 6

‘The Lord is my helper, I will not be afraid.
What can mere people do to me?’

- 7 Do not forget your leaders, who told you God’s message. Recall the close of their lives, and imitate their faith.
- 8 Jesus Christ is the same yesterday and today — yes, and for ever! Do not let yourselves be carried away by the various novel forms of teaching. It is better to rely for spiritual strength on the divine help, than on regulations regarding food; for those whose lives are guided by such regulations have not found them of service. We are not without an altar; but it is one at which those who still worship in the tent have no right to eat. The bodies of those animals whose blood is brought by the high priest into the sanctuary, as an offering for sin, are burnt outside the camp. And so Jesus, also, to purify the people by his own blood, suffered outside the gate. Therefore let us go out to him ‘outside the camp,’ bearing the same reproaches as he; for here we have no permanent city, but are looking for the city that is to be. Through him let us offer, as our sacrifice, continual praise to God — an offering from lips that glorify his name. Never forget to do kindly acts and to share what you have with others, for such sacrifices are acceptable to God. Obey your leaders, and submit to their control, for they are watching over your souls, since they will have to render an account, so that they may do it with joy, and not in sorrow. That would not be to your advantage.
- 18 Pray for us, for we are sure that our consciences are clear, since our wish is to be occupied with what is good. And I the more earnestly ask for your prayers, so that I may be restored to you the sooner.
- 20 May God, the source of all peace, who brought back from the dead him who, ‘by virtue of the blood that rendered valid the unchangeable covenant, is the great shepherd of God’s Sheep,’ Jesus, our Lord — may God make you perfect in everything that is good, so that you may be able to do his will. May he bring out in us all that is pleasing in his sight, through Jesus Christ, to whom be all glory for ever and ever. Amen.
- 22 I beg you, friends, to bear with these words of advice. For I have written only very briefly to you.

You will be glad to hear that our friend, Timothy, has been set free. If he comes here soon, we will visit you together. 23

Give our greeting to all your leaders, and to all Christ's people. Our friends from Italy send their greetings to you. 24

May God bless you all. 25

THE LETTER FROM JAMES

Greeting

JAMES, a servant of God and of the Lord Jesus Christ, greets the 1
twelve tribes that are living abroad.

Advice on Various Subjects

MY FRIENDS, whatever may be the temptations that beset you from 2
time to time, always regard them as a reason for rejoicing, know- 3
ing, as you do, that the testing of your faith develops endurance. 4
And let endurance do its work perfectly, so that you may be alto- 5
gether perfect, and in no respect deficient.

If one of you is deficient in wisdom, let them ask wisdom from 6
the God who gives freely to everyone without reproaches, and it 7
will be given to them. But let them ask with confidence, never 8
doubting; for the person who doubts is like a wave of the sea dri- 9
ven here and there at the mercy of the wind — Such a person 10
must not expect that they will receive anything from the Lord, 11
vacillating as they are, irresolute at every turn. 12

Let a follower in humble circumstances be proud of their ex- 13
alted position, but a rich follower of their humiliation; for the rich 14
will pass away 'like the flower of the grass.' As the sun rises, and 15
the hot wind blows, 'the grass withers, its flower fades,' and all its
beauty is gone. So is it with the rich. In the midst of their pursuits
they will come to an untimely end.

Blessed is the person who remains firm under temptation, for, 12
when they have stood the test, they will receive the crown of life,
which the Lord has promised to those who love him. Let no one 13
say, when they are tempted, "It is God who is tempting me!" For
God, who cannot be tempted to do wrong, does not himself tempt 14
anyone. A person is in every case tempted by their own passions 15
— allured and enticed by them. Then passion conceives and gives

16 birth to sin, and sin, on reaching maturity, brings forth death. Do
 17 not be deceived, my dear friends. Every good thing given us,
 18 and every perfect gift, is from above, and comes down to us from
 the Maker of the lights in the heavens, who is himself never sub-
 ject to change or to eclipse. Because he so willed, he gave us life,
 through the message of the truth, so that we should be, as it were,
 an earnest of still further creations.

19 Mark this, my dear friends — Let everyone be quick to lis-
 20 ten, slow to speak, and slow to get angry; for human anger does
 21 not forward the righteous purpose of God. Therefore, have done
 with all filthiness and whatever wickedness still remains, and in
 a humble spirit receive that message which has been planted in
 22 your hearts and is able to save your souls. Put that message into
 practice, and do not merely listen to it — deceiving yourselves.
 23 For, when anyone listens to it and does not practice it, they like a
 24 person looking at their own face in a mirror. They look at them-
 25 selves, then go on their way, but the person who looks carefully
 into the perfect law, the law of freedom, and continues to do so,
 not listening to it and then forgetting it, but putting it into practice
 26 — that person will be blessed in what they do. When a person ap-
 pears to be religious, yet does not bridle their tongue, but imposes
 on their own conscience, that person's religious observances are
 27 valueless. That religious observance which is pure and spotless
 in the eyes of God our Father is this — to visit orphans and wid-
 ows in their trouble, and to keep oneself uncontaminated by the
 world.

Warning on Various Subjects

2 MY FRIENDS, are you really trying to combine faith in Jesus Christ,
 2 our glorified Lord, with the worship of rank? Suppose a visi-
 tor should enter your synagogue, with gold rings and in grand
 clothes, and suppose a poor man should come in also, in shabby
 3 clothes, and you are deferential to the visitor who is wearing
 grand clothes, and say — "There is a good seat for you here,"
 but to the poor man — "You must stand; or sit down there by my
 4 footstool," Is not that to make distinctions among yourselves, and
 5 show yourselves prejudiced judges? Listen, my dear friends. Has

not God chosen those who are poor in the things of this world to be rich through their faith, and to possess the kingdom which he has promised to those who love him? But you — you insult the poor man! Is not it the rich who oppress you? Is not it they who drag you into law courts? Is not it they who malign that honorable name which has been bestowed on you? Yet, if you keep the royal law which runs — ‘You must love your neighbor as you love yourself,’ you are doing right; but, if you worship rank, you commit a sin, and stand convicted by that same law of being offenders against it. For a person who has laid the law, as a whole, to heart, but has failed in one particular, is accountable for breaking all its provisions. He who said ‘You must not commit adultery’ also said ‘You must not murder.’ If, then, you commit murder but not adultery, you are still an offender against the law. Therefore, speak and act as people who are to be judged by the ‘law of freedom.’ For there will be justice without mercy for the person who has not acted mercifully. Mercy triumphs over Justice. My friends, what is the good of a person’s saying that they have faith, if they do not prove it by actions? Can such faith save them? Suppose some brother or sister should be in need of clothes and of daily bread, and one of you were to say to them — “Go, and peace be with you; find warmth and food for yourselves,” and yet you were not to give them the necessaries of life, what good would it be to them? In just the same way faith, if not followed by actions, is, by itself, a lifeless thing. Some one, indeed, may say — “You are a man of faith, and I am a man of action.”

“Then show me your faith,” I reply, “apart from any actions, and I will show you my faith by my actions.” It is a part of your faith, is it not, that there is one God? Good; yet even the demons have that faith, and tremble at the thought. Now do you really want to understand, fool, how it is that faith without actions leads to nothing? Look at our ancestor, Abraham. Was not it the result of his actions that he was pronounced righteous after he had offered his son, Isaac, on the altar? You see how, in his case, faith and actions went together; that his faith was perfected as the result of his actions; and that in this way the words of scripture came true — “Abraham believed God, and that was regarded by God as righteousness,” and “He was called the friend of God.” You see, then, that it is as the result of their actions that a person is pronounced righteous, and not of their faith only. Was not

it the same with the prostitute, Rahab? Was not it as the result of her actions that she was pronounced righteous, after she had welcomed the messengers and helped them escape by? Exactly as a body is dead without a spirit, so faith is dead without actions.

3 I do not want many of you, my friends, to become teachers, knowing, as you do, that we who teach will be judged by a more severe standard than others. We often make mistakes, every one of us. Anyone who does not make mistakes when speaking is indeed a perfect person, able to bridle their whole body as well. 4 When we put bits into horses' mouths, to make them obey us, we control the rest of their bodies so. Again, think of ships. Large as they are, and even when driven by fierce winds, they are controlled by a very small rudder and steered in whatever direction 5 the man at the helm may determine. So is it with the tongue. Small as it is, it is a great boaster. Think how tiny a spark may set the largest forest ablaze! And the tongue is like a spark. Among 6 the members of our body it proves itself a world of mischief; it contaminates the whole body; it sets the wheels of life on fire, 7 and is itself set on fire by the flames of Gehenna. For while all sorts of beasts and birds, and of reptiles and creatures in the sea, 8 are tameable, and actually have been tamed by man, no human being can tame the tongue. It is a restless plague! It is charged 9 with deadly poison! With it we bless our Lord and Father, and with it we curse people who are made 'in God's likeness.' From 10 the very same mouth come blessings and curses! My friends, it 11 is not right that this should be so. Does a spring give both good and bad water from the same source? Can a fig tree, my friends, 12 bear olives? Or a vine bear figs? No, nor can a brackish well give good water.

13 Who among you claims to be wise and intelligent? Let them show that their actions are the outcome of a good life lived in the humility of true wisdom. But, while you harbor envy and bitterness and a spirit of rivalry in your hearts, do not boast or lie to the detriment of the truth. That is not the wisdom which comes from 15 above; no, it is earthly, animal, devilish. For, where envy and rivalry exist, there you will also find disorder and all kinds of base 16 actions. But the wisdom from above is, before every thing else, pure; then peace-loving, gentle, open to conviction, rich in compassion and good deeds, and free from partiality and insincerity.

And righteousness, its fruit, is sown in peace by those who work 18
for peace.

What is the cause of the fighting and quarreling that goes on 4
among you? Is not it to be found in the desires which are always
at war within you? You crave, yet do not obtain. You murder 2
and rage, yet cannot gain your end. You quarrel and fight. You
do not obtain, because you do not ask. You ask, yet do not re- 3
ceive, because you ask for a wrong purpose — to spend what you
get on your pleasures. Unfaithful people! Don't you know that 4
to be friends with the world means to be at enmity with God?
Therefore whoever chooses to be friends with the world makes
himself an enemy to God. Do you suppose there is no meaning 5
in the passage of scripture which asks — 'Is envy to result from
the longings of the Spirit which God has implanted within you?'
No; the gift that God gives is for a nobler end; and that is why it is 6
said — 'God is opposed to the haughty, but gives help to the hum-
ble.' Therefore submit to God; but resist the devil, and he will flee 7
from you. Draw near to God, and he will draw near to you. Make 8
your hands clean, you sinners; and your hearts pure, you vacil-
lator! Grieve, mourn, and lament! Let your laughter be turned 9
to mourning, and your happiness to gloom! Humble yourselves 10
before the Lord, and he will exalt you. Do not disparage one an- 11
other, friends. The person who disparages others, or passes judg-
ment on them, disparages the law and passes judgment on the
law. But, if you pass judgment on the law, you are not obeying it,
but judging it. There is only one lawgiver and judge — he who 12
has the power both to save and to destroy. But who are you that
pass judgment on your neighbor?

Listen to me, you who say 'Today or tomorrow we will go to such 13
and such a town, spend a year there, and trade, and make money,'
And yet you do not know what your life will be like tomorrow! 14
For you are but a mist appearing for a little while and then dis-
appearing. You ought, rather, to say 'If the Lord wills, we will 15
live and do this or that.' But, as it is, you are constantly boasting 16
presumptuously! All such boasting is wicked. The person, then, 17
who knows what is right but fails to do it — that is sin in them.

5 Listen to me, you rich people, weep and wail for the miseries
2 that are coming upon you! Your riches have wasted away, and
3 your clothes have become moth-eaten. Your gold and silver are
rusted; and the rust on them will be evidence against you, and
will eat into your flesh. It was fire, so to speak, that you stored
4 up for yourselves in these last days. I tell you, the wages of the
laborers who mowed your fields, which you have been fraudu-
lently keeping back, are crying out against you, and the outcries
5 of your reapers have reached the ears of the Lord of Hosts! You
have lived on earth a life of extravagance and luxury; you have in-
6 dulgued your fancies in a time of bloodshed. You have condemned,
you have murdered, the righteous one! Must not God be opposed
to you?

Concluding Appeal

7 BE PATIENT, then, friends, until the coming of the Lord. Even the
farmer has to wait for the precious fruit of the earth, watching
over it patiently, until it has had the spring and summer rains.
8 And you must be patient also, and not be discouraged; for the
9 Lord's coming is near. Do not make complaints against one an-
other, friends, or judgment will be passed on you. The judge is
10 already standing at the door! Friends, as an example of the pa-
tient endurance of suffering, take the prophets who spoke in the
11 name of the Lord. We count those who displayed such endurance
blessed! You have heard, too, of Job's endurance, and have seen
what the Lord's purpose was, for 'the Lord is full of pity and com-
passion.'
12 Above all things, my friends, never take an oath, either by heaven,
or by earth, or by anything else. With you let 'Yes' suffice for yes,
and 'No' for no, so that you may escape condemnation.
13 If any of you is in trouble, let them pray; if anyone is happy, let
14 them sing hymns. If anyone of you is ill, let him send for the offi-
cers of the church, and let them pray over them, after anointing
15 them with oil in the name of the Lord. The prayer offered in faith
will save the person who is sick, and the Lord will raise them from
their bed; and if they have committed sins, they will be forgiven.

Therefore, confess your sins to one another and pray for one another, so that you may be cured. Great is the power of a good person's fervent prayer. Elijah was only human like ourselves, but, when he prayed fervently that it might not rain, no rain fell on the land for three years and a half. And, when he prayed again, the clouds brought rain, and the land bore crops. My friends, should one of you be led astray from the truth, and someone bring them back again, be sure that the person who brings a sinner back from their mistaken ways will save that person's soul from death, and throw a veil over countless sins.

PETER'S FIRST LETTER

Introduction

TO THE PEOPLE OF GOD WHO ARE LIVING ABROAD, dispersed through- 1
 out Pontus, Galatia, Cappadocia, Roman Asia, and Bithynia, and 2
 who were chosen in accordance with the foreknowledge of God
 the Father, through the consecration of the Spirit, to learn obedi-
 ence, and to be purified by the sprinkling of the blood of Jesus
 Christ, from Peter, an apostle of Jesus Christ. May blessing and
 peace be yours in ever increasing measure.

The Christian's Hope of Salvation

BLESSED IS THE GOD and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, who has, 3
 in his great mercy, through the resurrection of Jesus Christ from
 the dead, given us the new life of undying hope, that promises 4
 an inheritance, imperishable, stainless, unfading, which has been
 reserved for you in heaven — for you who, through faith, are 5
 being guarded by the power of God, awaiting a salvation that is
 ready to be revealed in the last days. At the thought of this you 6
 are full of exultation, though (if it has been necessary) you have
 suffered for the moment somewhat from various trials; that the 7
 genuineness of your faith — a thing far more precious than gold,
 which is perishable, yet has to be tested by fire — may win praise 8
 and glory and honor at the appearing of Jesus Christ. Though you
 have never seen him, yet you love him; though you do not even
 now see him, yet you believe in him, and exalt with a triumphant
 happiness too great for words, as you receive the reward of your 9
 faith in the salvation of your souls! It was this salvation that the 10
 prophets, who spoke long ago of the blessing intended for you,
 sought, and strove to comprehend; as they strove to discern what 11
 that time could be, to which the Spirit of Christ within them was
 pointing, when foretelling the sufferings that Christ would have
 to endure, and the glories that would follow. And it was revealed 12
 to them that it was not for themselves, but for you, that they were
 acting as Ministers of the truths which have now been told to you,

by those who, with the help of the Holy Spirit sent from heaven, have brought you the good news — truths into which even angels long to look.

The Christian's Character

13 THEREFORE CONCENTRATE YOUR MINDS, with the strictest self-control, and fix your hopes on the blessing that is coming for you at
14 the appearing of Jesus Christ. Be like obedient children; do not let your lives be shaped by the passions which once swayed you
15 in the days of your ignorance, but in your whole life show yourselves to be holy, after the pattern of the Holy One from whom
16 you received your call. For scripture says —

‘You will be holy, because I am holy.’

17 And since you call on him as ‘Father,’ who judges everyone impartially by what he has done, let respectful awe be the spirit
18 of your lives during the time of your stay on earth. For you know that it was not by perishable things, such as silver and gold, that you were ransomed from the aimless way of living
19 which was handed down to you from your ancestors, but by precious blood, as it were of a lamb, unblemished and spotless, the blood of Christ. Destined for this before the beginning of the world, he has been revealed in these last days for your sakes,
20 who, through him, are faithful to God who raised him from the dead and gave him honor, so that your faith and hope are now in God.

22 Now that, by your obedience to the truth, you have purified your lives, so that there is growing up among you a genuine affection, love one another earnestly with all your hearts; since your new life has come, not from perishable, but imperishable, seed,
23 through the message of the Everliving God. For —

‘All earthly life is but as grass,
and all its splendor as the flower of grass.

The grass fades,
its flower falls,

25 but the teaching of the Lord remains for ever.’

And that is the teaching of the good news which has been told to
2 you. Now that you have done with all malice, all deceitfulness,

insincerity, jealous feelings, and all backbiting, like newly born 2
infants, crave pure spiritual milk, so that you may be enabled by
it to grow until you attain salvation — since ‘you have found by 3
experience that the Lord is kind.’ Come to him, then, as to a liv- 4
ing stone, rejected, indeed, by men, but in God’s eyes choice and
precious; and, as living stones, form yourselves into a spiritual 5
house, to be a consecrated priesthood, for the offering of spiritual
sacrifices that will be acceptable to God through Jesus Christ. For
there is a passage of scripture that runs — 6

‘See, I am placing in Zion a choice and precious
corner-stone;

And those who believe in him will have no cause for
shame.’

It is to you, then, who believe in him that he is precious, but to 7
those who do not believe he is ‘a stone which, though rejected
by the builders, has now itself become the corner-stone,’ and ‘a 8
stumbling-block, and a rock which will prove a hindrance.’ They
stumble because they do not accept the message. This was the
fate destined for them. But you are ‘a chosen race, a royal priest- 9
hood, a consecrated nation, God’s own people,’ entrusted with
the proclamation of the goodness of him who called you out of
darkness into his wonderful light. Once you were ‘not a people,’ 10
but now you are ‘God’s people’; once you ‘had not found mercy,’
but now you ‘have found mercy.’

Practical Appeals in view of the Dangers of the Times.

DEAR FRIENDS, I beg you, as pilgrims and strangers on earth, to re- 11
frain from indulging the cravings of your earthly nature, for they
make war on the soul. Let your daily life among the Gentiles be 12
so upright, that, whenever they malign you as evil-doers, they
may learn, as they watch, from the uprightness of your conduct,
to praise God ‘at the time when he will visit them.’

Submit to all human institutions for the Lord’s sake, alike to the 13
emperor as the supreme authority, and to governors as sent by 14
him to punish evil-doers and to commend those who do right.
For God’s will is this — that you should silence the ignorance of 15
foolish people by doing what is right. Act as free people, yet not 16

17 using your freedom as those do who make it a cloak for wicked-
ness, but as Servants of God. Show honor to everyone, love the
Lord's followers, 'revere God, honor the emperor.'

18 Those of you who are domestic servants should always be sub-
missive and respectful to their masters, not only to those who are
19 good and considerate, but also to those who are arbitrary. For this
wins God's approval when, because conscious of God's presence,
a person who is suffering unjustly bears their troubles patiently.
20 What credit can you claim when, after doing wrong, you take
your punishment for it patiently? But, on the other hand, if, af-
ter doing right, you take your sufferings patiently, that does win
21 the approval of God. For it was to this that you were called! For
Christ, too, suffered — on your behalf — and left you an exam-
22 ple, that you should follow in his steps. He 'never sinned, nor
23 was anything deceitful ever heard from his lips.' He was abused,
but he did not answer with abuse; he suffered, but he did not
threaten; he entrusted himself to him whose judgments are just.
24 And he 'himself carried our sins' in his own body to the cross,
so that we might die to our sins, and live for righteousness. 'His
25 bruising was your healing.' Once you were straying like sheep,
but now you have returned to the shepherd and guardian of your
souls.

3 Again, you married women should submit to your husbands,
so that if any of them reject the message, they may, apart from
2 the message, be won over, by the conduct of their wives, as they
3 watch your submissive and blameless conduct. Yours should be,
not the external adornment of the arrangement of the hair, the
4 wearing of jewelery, or the putting on of dresses, but the inner
life with the imperishable beauty of a quiet and gentle spirit; for
5 this is very precious in God's sight. It was by this that the holy
women of old, who rested their hopes on God, adorned them-
6 selves; submitting to their husbands, as Sarah did, who obeyed
Abraham, and called him master. And you are her true children,
as long as you live good lives, and let nothing terrify you.

7 Again, those of you who are married men should live consid-
erately with their wives, showing due regard to their sex, as phys-
ically weaker than their own, and not forgetting that they share
with you in the gift of life. Then you will be able to pray without
hindrance.

Lastly, you should all be united, sympathetic, full of love for each other, kind-hearted, humble-minded; never returning evil for evil, or abuse for abuse, but, on the contrary, blessing. It was to this that you were called — to obtain a blessing!

'The person who wants to enjoy life
And see happy days —
Let them keep their tongue from evil
And their lips from deceitful words,
let them turn from evil and do good,
Let them seek for peace and follow after it;
For the eyes of the Lord are on the righteous,
And his ears are attentive to their prayers,
But the face of the Lord is set against those who do
wrong.'

Who, indeed, is there to harm you, if you prove yourselves to be eager for what is good? Even if you should suffer for righteousness, count yourselves blessed! 'Do not let people terrify you, or allow yourselves to be dismayed.' Revere the Christ as Lord in your hearts; always ready to give an answer to anyone who asks your reason for the hope that you cherish, but giving it with courtesy and respect, and keeping your consciences clear, so that, whenever you are maligned, those who vilify your good and Christian conduct may be put to shame. It is better that you should suffer, if that should be God's will, for doing right, than for doing wrong. For Christ himself died to atone for sins once for all — the good on behalf of the bad — that he might bring you to God; his body being put to death, but his spirit entering on new life. And it was then that he went and preached to the imprisoned spirits, who once were disobedient, at the time when God patiently waited, in the days of Noah, while the ark was being prepared; in which some few lives, eight in all, were saved by means of water. And baptism, which this foreshadowed, now saves you — not the mere cleansing of the body, but the search of a clear conscience after God — through the resurrection of Jesus Christ, who has gone into heaven, and is at God's right hand, where angels and archangels and the powers of heaven now yield submission to him.

4 Since, then, Christ suffered in body, arm yourselves with the
same resolve as he; for he who has suffered in body has ceased
2 to sin, and so will live the rest of his earthly life guided, not by
3 human passions, but by the will of God. Surely in the past you
have spent time enough living as the Gentiles delight to live. For
your path has lain among scenes of debauchery, licentiousness,
drunkenness, revelry, hard-drinking, and profane idolatry. And,
4 because you do not run to the same extremes of profligacy as
5 others, they are astonished, and malign you. But they will have
to answer for their conduct to him who is ready to judge both the
6 living and the dead. For that was why the good news was told to
the dead also — that, after they have been judged in the body, as
people are judged, they might live in the spirit, as God lives.

7 But the end of all things is near. Therefore exercise self-restraint
8 and be calm, so that you may be able to pray. Above all things, let
your love for one another be earnest, for 'love throws a veil over
9 countless sins.' Never grudge hospitality to one another. What-
10 ever the gift that each has received, use it in the service of oth-
11 ers, as good stewards of the varied bounty of God. When any-
one speaks, let them speak as one who is delivering the oracles of
God. When anyone is endeavoring to serve others, let them do so
in reliance on the strength which God supplies; so that in every-
thing God may be honored through Jesus Christ — to whom be
ascribed all honor and might for ever and ever. Amen.

12 Dear friends, do not be astonished at the trial of fire that you
are passing through, to test you, as though something strange
13 were happening to you. No, the more you share the sufferings of
the Christ, the more may you rejoice, that, when the time comes
14 for the manifestation of his glory, you may rejoice and exult. If
you are insulted for bearing the name of Christ, count yourselves
blessed; because the divine glory and the Spirit of God are rest-
15 ing on you. I need hardly say that no one among you must suffer
as a murderer, or a thief, or a criminal, or for interfering in mat-
16 ters which do not concern Christians. But, if someone suffers as a
Christian, do not let them be ashamed of it; let them bring honor
17 to God even though they bear that name. For the time has come

for judgment to begin with the house of God; and, if it begins with us, what will be the end of those who reject God's good news? If 'a good person is saved only with difficulty, what will become of the godless and the sinful?' Therefore, I say, let those who suffer, because God wills it so, commit their lives into the hands of a faithful Creator, and persevere in doing right.

Conclusion

AS FOR THE OLDER ONES AMONG YOU, who bear office in the church, I, their fellow officer, and a witness to the sufferings of the Christ, who will also share in the glory that is to be revealed — I beg you to be true shepherds of the flock of God among you, not because you are compelled, but of your own free will; not from a base love of gain, but with a ready spirit; not as lords of your charges, but as examples to your flock. Then, when the chief shepherd appears, you will win the crown of glory that never fades. Again, you younger ones should show deference to the older. And all of you should put on the badge of humility in mutual service, for 'God is opposed to the proud, but gives his help to the humble.'

Humble yourselves, therefore, under the mighty hand of God, so that he may exalt you in his good time, laying all your anxieties on him, for he makes you his care. Exercise self-control, be watchful. Your adversary, the devil, like a roaring lion, is prowling about, eager to devour you. Stand firm against him, strong in your faith; knowing, as you do, that the sufferings which you are undergoing are being endured to the full by the Lord's followers throughout the world. God, from whom all help comes, and who called you, by your union with Christ, into his eternal glory, will, when you have suffered for a little while, himself perfect, establish, strengthen you. To him be ascribed dominion for ever. Amen.

I have been writing to you briefly by the hand of Silas, our true-hearted friend (for so I regard him), to encourage you, and to bear my testimony that in what I have written is to be found the true love of God. On that take your stand. Your sister church

in 'Babylon' sends you greeting, and so does Mark, who is as a
14 son to me. Greet one another with the kiss of love.

May God give his peace to you all in your union with Christ.

PETER'S SECOND LETTER

Introduction

TO THOSE TO WHOM, through the justice of our God and Savior Jesus Christ, there has been granted faith equally privileged with our own, from Simon Peter, a servant and an apostle of Jesus Christ. 1

May blessing and peace be yours in ever increasing measure, as you advance in the knowledge of God and of Jesus, our Lord. For his divine power has given us everything that is needful for a life of piety, as we advance in the knowledge of him who called us by a glorious manifestation of his goodness. For it was through this that he gave us what we prize as the greatest of his promises, that through them you might participate in the divine nature, now that you have fled from the corruption in the world, resulting from human passions. Yes, and for this reason do your best to supplement your faith by goodness, goodness by knowledge, knowledge by self-control, self-control by endurance, endurance by piety, piety by mutual affection, and mutual affection by love. For, when these virtues are yours, in increasing measure, they prevent your being indifferent to, or destitute of, a fuller knowledge of our Lord Jesus Christ. Surely the person who has not these virtues is shortsighted even to blindness, and has chosen to forget that they have been purified from their sins of the past! Therefore, friends, do your best to put God's call and selection of you beyond all doubt; for, if you do this, you will never fall. For in this way you will be given a triumphant admission into the eternal kingdom of our Lord and Savior, Jesus Christ. 2
3
4
5
6
7
8
9
10
11

The Transfiguration and the 'Second Coming' of the Christ

I WILL, therefore, always be ready to remind you of all this, even though you know it and are firmly established in the truth that you now hold. But I think it my duty, as long as I live in this 'tent,' 12
13

14 to rouse you by awakening memories of the past; for I know that
the time for this 'tent' of mine to be put away is soon coming, as
15 our Lord Jesus Christ himself assured me. So I will do my best to
enable you, at any time after my departure, to call these truths to
16 mind. For we were not following cleverly devised stories when
we told you of the coming in power of our Lord Jesus Christ, but
17 we had been eye-witnesses of his majesty. For he received honor
and glory from God the Father, when from the glory of the Divine
Majesty there were borne to his ears words such as these — 'This
18 is my dearly loved son, who brings me great joy.' These were the
words that we heard, borne to our ears from heaven, when we
19 were with him on that sacred mountain. And still stronger is the
assurance that we have in the teaching of the prophets; to which
you will do well to pay attention (as if it were a lamp shining in a
gloomy place), until the day dawns and the morning star rises in
20 your hearts. But first be assured of this: — There is no prophetic
teaching found in scripture that can be interpreted by a person's
21 unaided reason; for no prophetic teaching ever came in the old
days at the mere wish of people, but people, moved by the Holy
Spirit, spoke direct from God.

Warning against separating Christianity from a Holy Life

2 BUT THERE WERE FALSE PROPHETS ALSO IN THE NATION, just as there
will be false teachers among you, people who will secretly intro-
duce ruinous divisions, disowning even the Lord who bought
2 them, and bringing speedy ruin on themselves. There will be
many, too, who will follow their licentious courses, and cause the
3 way of the truth to be maligned. In their covetousness they will
try to make you a source of profit by their fabrications; but for a
long time past their sentence has not been standing idle, nor their
4 ruin slumbering. Remember, God did not spare angels when they
sinned, but sent them down to Tartarus, and consigned them to
caverns of darkness, to be kept under guard for judgment. Nor
5 did he spare the world of old; though he preserved Noah, the
preacher of righteousness, and seven others, when he brought a
6 flood on the godless world. He condemned the cities of Sodom
and Gomorrah and reduced them to ashes, holding them up as
7 a warning to the godless of what was in store for them; but he

rescued righteous Lot, whose heart was vexed by the wanton licentiousness of his neighbors; for, seeing and hearing what he did, as he lived his righteous life among them, day after day, Lot's righteous soul was tortured by their wicked doings. The Lord, therefore, knows how to deliver the pious from temptation, and to keep the wicked, who are even now suffering punishment, in readiness for 'the day of judgment' — especially those who, following the promptings of their lower nature, indulge their polluting passions and despise all control. Audacious and self-willed, they feel no awe of the celestial beings, maligning them, even where angels, though excelling them in strength and power, do not bring against them a malignant charge before the Lord. These people, however, like animals without reason, intended by nature to be caught and killed — these people, I say, malign those of whom they know nothing, and will assuredly perish through their own corruption, suffering themselves, as the penalty for the suffering that they have inflicted. They think that pleasure consists in the self-indulgence of the moment. They are a stain and a disgrace, indulging, as they do, in their wanton revelry, even while joining you at your feasts. They have eyes only for adulteresses, eyes never tired of sin; they entice weak souls; their minds are trained to covet; they live under a curse. Leaving the straight road, they have gone astray and followed in the steps of Balaam, the son of Beor, who set his heart on the reward for wrong-doing, but was rebuked for his offense. A dumb animal spoke with a human voice, and checked the prophet's madness. These people are like springs without water, or mists driven before a gale; and for them the blackest darkness has been reserved. With boastful and foolish talk, they appeal to the passions of people's lower nature, and, by their profligacy, entice those who are just escaping from the people who live such misguided lives. They promise them freedom, while they themselves are slaves to corrupt habits; for a person is the slave of anything to which they give way. If, after having escaped the polluting influences of the world, through knowing our Lord and Savior, Jesus Christ, people are again entangled in them, and give way to them, their last state has become worse than their first. It would, indeed, have been better for them not to have known the way of righteousness, than, after knowing it, to turn away from the holy command delivered to them. In their case is seen the truth of the proverb — 'A dog returns to what

it has vomited' and 'A sow after washing to her wallowing-place in the mud.'

A Reassertion of the 'Second Coming' of the Christ

- 3 THIS, dear friends, is my second letter to you. In both of them I
 2 have tried, by appealing to your remembrance, to arouse your
 2 better feelings. I want you to recall what was foretold by the holy
 3 prophets, as well as the command of our Lord and Savior given
 3 to you through your apostles. First be assured of this, that, as
 4 the age draws to an end, scoffers, led by their own passions, will
 4 come and ask scoffingly — 'Where is his promised coming? Ever
 5 since our ancestors passed to their rest, everything remains just
 5 as it was when the world was first created!' For they willfully
 6 shut their eyes to the fact that long ago the heavens existed; and
 6 the earth, also — formed out of water and by the action of water,
 7 by the fiat of God; and that by the same means the world which
 7 then existed was destroyed in a deluge of water. But the present
 heavens and earth, by the same fiat, have been reserved for fire,
 and are being kept for the day of the judgment and destruction of
 the godless.
- 8 But you, dear friends, must never shut your eyes to the fact that,
 to the Lord, one day is the same as a thousand years, and a thou-
 9 sand years as one day. The Lord is not slow to fulfill his promise,
 as some count slowness; but he is forbearing with you, as it is
 not his will that any of you should perish, but that all should be
 10 brought to repentance. The day of the Lord will come like a thief;
 and on that day the heavens will pass away with a crash, the ele-
 11 ments will be burnt up and dissolved, and the earth and all that
 is in it will be disclosed. Now, since all these things are in the
 process of dissolution, think what you yourselves ought to be —
 12 what holy and pious lives you ought to lead, while you wait for
 the coming of the day of God and strive to make it come soon³.
 At its coming the heavens will be dissolved in fire, and the ele-
 13 ments melted by heat, but we look for 'new heavens and a new
 earth,' where righteousness will have its home, in fulfillment of
 the promise of God.

³ Or "and desire its coming"

Therefore, dear friends, in expectation of these things, make 14
every effort to be found by him spotless, blameless, and at peace.
Regard our Lord's forbearance as your one hope of salvation. This 15
is what our dear friend Paul wrote to you, with the wisdom that
God gave him. It is the same in all his letters, when he speaks in 16
them about these subjects. There are some things in them diffi-
cult to understand, which untaught and weak people distort, just
as they do all other writings, to their own ruin. You must, there- 17
fore, dear friends, now that you know this beforehand, be on your
guard against being led away by the errors of reckless people, and
so lapsing from your present steadfastness; and advance in the 18
love and knowledge of our Lord and Savior, Jesus Christ. All glory
be to him now and for ever.

JOHN'S FIRST LETTER

The Immortal Love

IT IS OF WHAT HAS BEEN IN EXISTENCE FROM THE BEGINNING, of what 1
we have heard, of what we have seen with our eyes, of what we
watched reverently and touched with our hands — it is about the 2
Word who is the life that we are now writing. That life was made
visible, and we have seen it, and now bear our testimony to it,
and tell you of that eternal life, which was with the Father and 3
was made visible to us. It is of what we have seen and heard that
we now tell you, so that you may have communion with us. And
our communion is with the Father and with his Son, Jesus Christ.
And we are writing all this to you that our joy may be complete. 4

These, then, are the tidings that we have heard from him and now 5
tell you — ‘God is light, and darkness has no place at all in him.’
If we say that we have communion with him, and yet continue 6
to live in the darkness, we lie, and are not living the truth. But,
if our lives are lived in the light, as God himself is in the light, 7
we have communion with one another, and the blood of Jesus,
his Son, purifies us from all sin. If we say that there is no sin in 8
us, we are deceiving ourselves, and the truth has no place in us.
If we confess our sins, God may be trusted, in his righteousness, 9
to forgive us our sins and purify us from all wickedness. If we
say that we have not sinned, we are making God a liar, and his 10
message has no place in us.

My children, I am writing to you to keep you from sinning; but 2
if anyone should sin, we have one who can plead for us with the
Father — Jesus Christ, the righteous — and he is the atoning 2
sacrifice for our sins, and not for ours only, but for those of the
whole world besides. And by this we know that we have learned 3
to know him — by our laying his commands to heart. The per- 4
son who says ‘I know Jesus,’ but does not lay his commands to
heart, is a liar, and the truth has no place in them; but, whenever 5
a person lays his message to heart, in that person the love of God
has indeed reached its perfection. By this we know that we are

6 in union with God — He who professes to maintain union with God is himself bound to live as Christ lived.

7 Dear friends, it is no new command that I am writing to you, but an old command, which you have had from the first. That old
8 command is the message to which you listened. Yet, in a way, it is a new command that I am writing to you — manifest in Christ's life and in your own — for the darkness is passing away and the
9 true light is already shining. The person who says that they are in the light, and yet hates others, is in the darkness even now.
10 The person who loves others is always in the light, and there is nothing within them to cause them to stumble; while the person
11 who hates others is in the darkness, and is living in the darkness, and does not know where they are going, because the darkness prevents them seeing.
12 I am writing, God's children, to you, because your sins have been forgiven you for Christ's sake. I am writing, adults in the faith, to you, because you have learned to know him who has been from the beginning. I am writing, young ones in the faith, to you, because you have conquered the evil one. I write, children, to you,
14 because you have learned to know the Father. I write, adults in the faith, to you, because you have learned to know him who has been from the beginning. I write, young ones in the faith, to you, because you are strong, and God's message is always in your hearts,
15 and you have conquered the evil one. Do not love the world or what the world can offer. When anyone loves the world, there is no love for the Father in them; for all that the world can offer — the gratification of the earthly nature, the gratification of the eye, the pretentious life — belongs, not to the Father, but to the world.
16 And the world, and all that it gratifies, is passing away, but they who do God's will remains for ever.

Warnings against Antichrist

18 MY CHILDREN, these are the last days. You were told that an antichrist was coming; and many antichrists have already arisen. By
19 that we know that these are the last days. From us, it is true, they went out, but they had never belonged to us; for, if they had belonged to us, they would have remained among us. They left us

that it might be made clear that they do not, any of them, belong to us. You, however, have received consecration from the Holy One. You all know — But I am not writing to you because you do not know the truth, but because you do know it, and because nothing false can come from the truth.

Who is a liar, if not the person who rejects the truth that Jesus is the Christ? That person is the antichrist — the person who rejects the Father and the Son. No one who rejects the Son has found the Father; the person who acknowledges the Son has found the Father also. As for you, let what you were told at the first be always in your thoughts. If, then, what you were told at the first is always in your thoughts, you yourselves will maintain your union both with the Son and with the Father. And this is what he himself promised us — eternal life!

In writing this to you, I have in mind those who are trying to mislead you. But you — you still retain in your hearts that consecration which you received from the Christ, and are not in need of anyone to teach you; but, since his consecration of you teaches you about everything, and since it is a real consecration, and no lie, then, as it has taught you, maintain your union with him. Yes, my children, maintain your union with Christ, so that, whenever he appears, our confidence may not fail us, and we may not be ashamed to meet him at his coming. Knowing him to be righteous, you realize that everyone who lives righteously has received the new life from him.

The Privileges and Duties of God's Children

THINK WHAT LOVE THE FATHER HAS SHOWN US IN ALLOWING US to be called 'children of God'; as indeed we are. The reason why the world does not know us is that it has not learned to know him. Dear friends, we are God's children now; what we will be has not yet been revealed. What we do know is that, when it is revealed, we will be like Christ; because we will see him as he is. And everyone who has this hope with regard to Christ tries to make themselves pure — as Christ is pure.

Everyone who lives sinfully is living in violation of law. Sin is violation of law. And you know that Christ appeared to take away our sins; and in him sin has no place. No one who maintains

7 union with him lives in sin; no one who lives in sin has ever really
seen him or learned to know him. My children, do not let anyone
mislead you. The person who lives righteously is righteous — as
8 Christ is righteous. The person who lives sinfully belongs to the
devil, for the devil has sinned from the first. It was for this that
the Son of God appeared, that he might undo the devil's work.

9 No one who has received the new life from God lives sinfully,
because the nature of God dwells within them; and they cannot
live in sin, because they have received the new life from God. By
10 this the children of God are distinguished from the children of
the devil — No one who lives unrighteously comes from God,
11 and especially the person who does not love others. For these are
the tidings that we heard from the first — that we are to love one
12 another. We must not be like Cain, who belonged to the evil one
and killed his brother. And why did he kill him? It was because
his life was bad while his brother's was good.

13 Do not wonder, friends, if the world hates you. We know that
14 we have passed out of death into life, because we love each other.
15 The person who does not love remains in a state of death. The
person who hates another is a murderer; and you know that no
murderer has eternal life within them.

16 We have learned to know what love is from this — that Christ laid
down his life on our behalf. Therefore we also ought to lay down
17 our lives for each other. But, if anyone has worldly possessions,
and yet looks on while one of our own is in need, and steels their
heart against that person, how can it be said that the love of God
18 is within them? My children, do not let our love be mere words,
or end in talk; let it be true and show itself in acts.

19 By that we will know that we are on the side of the truth; and
20 we will satisfy ourselves in God's sight, that if our conscience
condemns us, yet God is greater than our conscience and knows
21 everything. Dear friends, if our conscience does not condemn us,
22 then we approach God with confidence, and we receive from
him whatever we ask, because we are laying his commands to
23 heart, and are doing what is pleasing in his sight. His command
is this — that we should put our trust in the name of his Son,
Jesus Christ, and love one another, in accordance with the com-
24 mand that he gave us. And the person who lays his commands

to heart maintains union with Christ, and Christ with them. And by this we know that Christ maintains union with us — by our possession of the Spirit which he gave us.

True and False Inspiration

DEAR FRIENDS, do not trust every inspiration, but test each inspiration, to see whether it proceeds from God; because many false prophets have gone out into the world. 4

This is the way by which to know the inspiration of God — All inspiration that acknowledges Jesus Christ as come in our human nature is from God; while all inspiration that does not acknowledge Jesus is not inspiration from God. It is the inspiration of the Antichrist; you have heard that it was to come, and it is now already in the world. 2 3

You, my children, come from God, and you have successfully resisted such people as these, because he who is in you is greater than the one who is in the world. Those people belong to the world; and therefore they speak as the world speaks, and the world listens to them. We come from God. He who knows God listens to us; the person who does not come from God does not listen to us. By that we may know the true inspiration from the false. 4 5 6

Love of God and Love of People

DEAR FRIENDS, let us love one another, because love comes from God; and everyone who loves has received the new life from God and knows God. The person who does not love has not learned to know God; for God is love. The love of God was revealed to us by his sending his only Son into the world, so that we might find life through him. His love is seen in this — not in our having loved God, but in his loving us and sending his Son to be an atoning sacrifice for our sins. 7 8 9 10

Dear friends, since God loved us in this way, we, surely, ought to love one another. No human eyes have ever seen God, yet, if we love one another, God remains in union with us, and his love attains its perfection in us. We know that we remain in union with him, and he with us, by this — by his having given us some 11 12 13

14 measure of his Spirit. Moreover, our eyes have seen — and we
 15 are testifying to the fact — that the Father has sent the Son to be
 the Savior of the world. Whoever acknowledges that Jesus Christ
 is the Son of God — God remains in union with that man, and
 16 he with God. And, moreover, we have learned to know, and have
 accepted as a fact, the love which God has for us.

God is love; and whoever lives in love lives in God, and God
 17 in them. It is through this that love has attained its perfection
 in us, so that we may have confidence on the day of judgment,
 18 because what Christ is that we also are in this world. There is
 no fear in love. No! Love, when perfect, drives out fear, because
 fear implies punishment, and the person who feels fear has not
 19 attained to perfect love. We love, because God first loved us. If
 20 someone says 'I love God,' and yet hates another person, they are
 a liar; for the person who does not love their fellow, whom they
 21 have seen, cannot love God, whom they have not seen. Indeed,
 we have this command from God — 'Those who love God must
 also love each other.'

A Christian's Faith and Confidence

5 EVERYONE WHO BELIEVES THAT JESUS IS THE CHRIST HAS received the
 new life from God; and everyone who loves him who gave that life
 2 loves him who has received it. By this we know that we love God's
 children — when we love God and carry out his commands. For
 3 to love God is to lay his commands to heart; and his commands
 4 are not burdensome, because all that has received the new life
 from God conquers the world. And this is the power that has
 5 conquered the world — our faith! Who is the person that con-
 quers the world but the person who believes that Jesus is the Son
 6 of God? He it is whose coming was by water and blood — Jesus
 Christ himself; not by water only, but by water and by blood. And
 there is the Spirit also to bear testimony, and the Spirit is truth it-
 7 self. It is a threefold testimony — that of the Spirit, the water, and
 8 the blood — and these three are at one. We accept the testimony
 of people, but God's testimony is still stronger; and there is the
 9 testimony of God — the fact that he has already borne testimony
 10 about his Son. The person who believes in the Son of God has that
 testimony within them. The person who does not believe God has

made God a liar, by refusing to believe in that testimony which he has borne about his Son. And that testimony is that God gave us eternal life, and that this life is in his Son. The person who finds the Son finds life; the person who does not find the Son of God does not find life.

I write this to you so that you may realize that you have found eternal life — you who believe in the name of the Son of God. And this is the confidence with which we approach him, that whenever we ask anything that is in accordance with his will, he listens to us. And if we realize that he listens to us — whatever we ask — we realize that we have what we have asked from him. If anyone sees one of our people committing some sin that is not a deadly sin, they will ask, and so be the means of giving life to them — to any whose sin is not deadly. There is such a thing as deadly sin; about that I do not say that a person should pray. Every wrong action is sin, and there is sin that is not deadly.

We know that no one who has received the new life from God lives in sin. No, the person who has received the new life from God keeps the thought of God in their heart, and then the evil one does not touch them. We realize that we come from God, while all the world is under the influence of the evil one. We realize, too, that the Son of God has come among us, and has given us the discernment to know the true God; and we are in union with the true God by our union with his Son, Jesus Christ. He is the true God and he is eternal life. My children, guard yourselves against false ideas of God.

JOHN'S SECOND LETTER

To an eminent Christian Lady, and to her children, from the officer of the church. I sincerely love you all, and not I only, but also all those who have learned to know the truth. We love you for the sake of that truth which is always in our hearts; yes, and it will be ours for ever.

Blessing, mercy, and peace will be ours — the gift of God, the Father, and of Jesus Christ, the Father's Son — in a life of truth and love.

It was a great joy to me to find the lives of some of your children guided by the truth, in obedience to the command that we received from the Father. And now, I pray you, Lady — not as though I were writing a new command for you; no, it is the command which we had from the first — Let us love one another. And this is love — to live in obedience to the Father's commands. This is the command as you learned from the first, to live in a spirit of love. I say this because many impostors have left us to go into the world — people who do not acknowledge Jesus as Christ come in our human nature. It is that which marks someone as an impostor and an antichrist. Take care that you do not lose the fruit of all our work; rather, reap the benefit of it in full. Everyone who goes beyond the limits of the teaching of the Christ has failed to find God; the person who keeps to that teaching — they have found both the Father and the Son. If anyone comes to you and does not bring this teaching, do not receive them into your house or welcome them; for the person who welcomes them is sharing with them in his wicked work.

Though I have a great deal to say to you, I would rather not trust it to paper and ink, but I am hoping to come and see you, and to speak with you face to face, so that your joy may be complete. The children of your eminent sister send you their greetings.

JOHN'S THIRD LETTER

To his dear friend Gaius, whom he sincerely loves, From the 1
officer of the church.

Dear friend, I pray that all may be well with you and that you may 2
have good health — I know that all is well with your soul. For it 3
was a great joy to me, when some followers of the Lord came and
testified to your fidelity to the truth — I know that your own life 4
is guided by the truth. Nothing gives me greater pleasure than
to hear from time to time that the lives of my children are guided
by the truth.

Dear friend, whatever you do for other followers is done in 5
a Christian spirit — even when they are strangers to you. They 6
themselves have testified before the church to your love; and you
will do well to help them on their way in a manner worthy of the 7
service of God. For it was on behalf of the name that they left
their homes, and refused to take anything from the Gentiles. We, 8
therefore, ought to give such people a hearty welcome, and so
take our share in their work for the truth.

I wrote a few lines to the church; but Diotrephes, who loves to 9
be first among them, declines to recognize us. Therefore, when I 10
come, I will not forget his conduct in ridiculing us with his wicked
tongue. Not content with that, he not only declines to recognize
our friends who are followers himself, but actually prevents those
who would, and expels them from the church.

Dear friend, take what is good for your example, not what is bad. 11
The person who does what is good is from God; the person who
does what is bad has never seen God. Everyone has always had 12
a good word for Demetrius, and the truth itself speaks for him.
Yes, and we also add our good word, and you know that what we
say about him is true.

I have a great deal to say to you, but I do not care to trust it to 13
pen and ink in a letter. I hope, however, it will not be long before 14
I see you, and then we will speak face to face. Peace be with you.

Our friends here send you their greetings. Greet each one of our friends.

THE LETTER FROM JUDE

Introduction

TO THOSE WHO, having received the call, have been loved by God 1
the Father and protected by Jesus Christ, From Jude, a servant of
Jesus Christ, and the brother of James. May mercy, peace, and 2
love be yours in ever increasing measure.

Warnings against moral corruption

DEAR FRIENDS, while I was making every effort to write to you 3
about our common salvation, I felt that I must write to you at once
to encourage you to fight in defense of the faith that has once for
all been entrusted to the keeping of Christ's people. For there 4
have crept in among you certain godless people, whose sentence
has long since been pronounced, and who make the mercy of God
an excuse for profligacy, and disown our only lord and master, Je-
sus Christ.

Now I want to remind you — but you already know it all — that, 5
though the Lord delivered the people from Egypt, yet he after-
wards destroyed those who refused to believe in him; and that 6
even those angels, who did not keep to their appointed spheres,
but left their proper homes, have been kept by him for the judg-
ment of the great day in everlasting chains and black darkness.
Like Sodom and Gomorrah and the towns near them, which gave 7
themselves up to fornication, and fell into unnatural vice, these
angels now stand out as a warning, undergoing, as they are, pun-
ishment in eternal fire.

Yet in the same way these people, too, cherishing vain dreams, 8
pollute our human nature, reject control, and malign the celest-
stial beings. Yet even Michael, the archangel, when, in his dispute 9
with the devil, he was arguing about the body of Moses, did not
venture to charge him with maligning, but said merely 'The Lord

10 rebuke you!’ But these people malign whatever they do not understand; while they use such things as they know by instinct (like
11 the animals that have no reason) for their own corruption. Alas for them! They walk in the steps of Cain; led astray by Balaam’s love of gain, they plunge into sin, and meet their ruin through
12 rebellion like Korah. These are the people who are blots on your ‘love-feasts,’ when they feast together and provide without scruple for themselves alone. They are clouds without rain, driven before the winds; they are leafless trees without a vestige of fruit,
13 dead through and through, torn up by the roots; they are wild sea waves, foaming with their own shame; they are ‘wandering stars,’ for which the blackest darkness has been reserved for ever.

14 To these people, as to others, Enoch, the seventh in descent from Adam, declared — ‘See! The Lord has come with his hosts
15 of holy ones around him, to execute judgment on all people, and to convict all godless people of all their godless acts, which in their ungodliness they have committed, and of all the harsh words which they have spoken against him, godless sinners that they are!’

16 These people are always murmuring, and complaining of their lot; they follow where their passions lead them; they have arrogant words on their lips; and they flatter others for the sake of what they can get from them.

17 But you should, dear friends, recall what was foretold by the
18 apostles of our Lord Jesus Christ; how they used to say to you — ‘As time draws to an end, there will be scoffers, who will be led
19 by their godless passions.’ These are the people — animal and unspiritual — who cause divisions. But you must, dear friends,
20 build up your characters on the foundation of your most holy faith, pray under the guidance of the Holy Spirit, and keep within
21 the love of God, while waiting for the mercy of our Lord Jesus Christ, to bring you to eternal life. To some show pity, because
22 they are in doubt. ‘Drag them out of the fire,’ and save them. To
23 others show pity, but with caution, hating the clothing polluted by their touch.

Ascription

Ascription

TO HIM WHO IS ABLE TO GUARD YOU FROM FALLING, and to bring you 24
into his glorious presence, blameless and rejoicing — to the one 25
God, our Savior, be ascribed, through Jesus Christ, our Lord,
glory, majesty, power, and dominion, as it was before time
began, is now, and will be for all time to come. Amen.

THE REVELATION TO JOHN

The Revelation of Jesus Christ, which God gave to him to 1
make known to his servants, concerning what must shortly take
place, and which he sent and revealed by his angel to his servant
John, who testified to the message of God and to the testimony to 2
Jesus Christ, omitting nothing of what he had seen. Blessed is the 3
one who reads, and blessed are they who listen to, the words of
this prophecy, and lay to heart what is here written; for the time
is near.

Messages to the Seven Churches

FROM JOHN, to the seven churches which are in Roman Asia. Bless- 4
ing and peace be yours from him who is, and who was, and who
will be, and from the seven spirits that are before his throne, and
from Jesus Christ, 'the faithful witness, the first-born from the 5
dead, and the Ruler of all the kings of the earth.' To him who
loves us and freed us from our sins by his own blood — and he 6
made us 'a kingdom of priests in the service of God,' his Father!
— to Him be ascribed glory and dominion for ever. Amen. 'He 7
is coming among the clouds!' Every eye will see him, even those
who pierced him; 'and all the nations of the earth will mourn over
him.' So will it be. Amen.

'I am the Alpha and the Omega,' says the Lord, the God who is, 8
and who was, and who will be, the Almighty.

I, John, who am your brother, and who share with you in the 9
suffering and kingship and endurance of Jesus, found myself on
the island called Patmos, for the sake of the message of God and
the testimony to Jesus. I fell into a trance on the Lord's day, and I 10
heard behind me a loud voice, like the blast of a trumpet. It said — 11
'Write what you see in a book and send it to the seven churches, to
Ephesus, Smyrna, Pergamus, Thyatira, Sardis, Philadelphia, and
Laodicaea.' I turned to see what voice it was that spoke to me; 12
and when I turned, I saw seven golden lamps, and in the midst 13
of the lamps one 'like a man, in a robe reaching to his feet,' and

14 with a golden sash across his breast. 'The hair of his head was as
 15 white as wool, as white as snow; his eyes were like flaming fire;
 16 and his feet were like brass' as when molten in a furnace; 'his
 17 voice was like the sound of many streams,' in his right hand he
 held seven stars, from his mouth came a sharp two-edged sword,
 18 and his face was like 'the sun in the fulness of its power.' And,
 when I saw him, I fell at his feet like one dead. He laid his hand on
 19 me and said — 'Do not be afraid. I am the First and the Last, the
 Everliving. I died, and I am alive for ever and ever. And I hold the
 20 keys of the Grave and of the place of the dead. Therefore write of
 what you have seen and of what is happening now and of what is
 about to take place — the mystic meaning of the seven stars which
 you saw in my right hand, and the seven golden lamps. The seven
 stars are the angels of the seven churches, and the seven lamps are
 the seven churches.

2 To the angel of the church in Ephesus write: —

"These are the words of him who holds the seven stars in his
 2 right hand, and walks among the seven golden lamps: — I know
 your life, your toil and endurance, and I know that you cannot
 tolerate evil-doers. I know, too, how you tested those who declare
 that they are apostles, though they are not, and how you proved
 3 them false. You possess endurance, and have borne much for my
 4 name, and have never grown weary. But this I have against you
 5 — You have abandoned your first love. Therefore remember from
 what you have fallen, and repent, and live the life that you lived
 before; or else, I will come and remove your Lamp from its place,
 6 unless you repent. But this is in your favor — You hate the life
 7 lived by the Nikolaitans, and I also hate it. Let him who has ears
 hear what the Spirit is saying to the churches. To him who con-
 quers — to him I will give the right 'to eat the fruit of the Tree of
 life, which stands in the Paradise of God.' "

8 To the angel of the church in Smyrna write: —

"These are the words of him who is the First and the Last, who
 9 died, but is restored to life: — I know your persecution and your
 poverty — yet you are rich! I know, too, the slander that comes

from those who declare that they are God's people⁴, though they are not, but are a Congregation of Satan. Do not be afraid of what you are about to suffer. The devil is about to throw some of you into prison so that you may be tempted, and may undergo persecution for ten days. Be faithful even to death, and I will give you the Crown of life. Let those who have ears hear what the Spirit is saying to the churches. Those who conquer will suffer no hurt from the Second Death." 10
11

To the angel of the church in Pergamus write: — 12

"These are the words of him who holds the sharp two-edged sword: — I know where you live, where the throne of Satan stands. And yet you hold to my name, and you did not disown my faith even in the days of Antipas, my faithful witness, who was put to death among you where Satan dwells. Yet I have a few things against you — You have among you those who hold to the teaching of Balaam, who taught Balak to put temptations in the way of the Israelites, so that they should eat idol-offerings and commit licentious acts. Again you have among you those who hold in the same way to the teaching of the Nikolaitans. Therefore repent, or else, I will come quickly and contend with such people with words that will cut like a sword. Let those who have ears hear what the Spirit is saying to the churches. To those who conquer — to them I will give a share of the mystic manna, and I will give them a white stone; and on the stone will be inscribed a new name, which no one knows except the person who receives it." 13
14
15
16
17

To the angel of the church in Thyatira write: — 18

"These are the words of the Son of God, 'whose eyes are like flaming fire, and whose feet are like brass': — I know your life, your love, faith, service, and endurance; and I know that your life of late has been better than it was at first. Yet I have this against you — You tolerate the woman Jezebel, who declares that she is a 19
20

⁴ God's people: Literally 'Jews.' These people claimed to be God's people because they were Jews.

21 Prophetess, and misleads my servants by her teaching, until they
 22 commit licentious acts and eat idol-offerings. I gave her time to
 23 repent, but she is determined not to turn from her licentiousness.
 24 Therefore I am laying her on a bed of sickness, and bringing great
 25 suffering on those who are unfaithful with her, unless they repent
 26 and turn from a life like hers. I will also put her children to death;
 27 and all the churches will learn that I am he who 'looks into peo-
 28 ple's hearts and souls'; and I will give to each one of you what
 29 their life deserves. But I say to the rest of you at Thyatira — all
 who do not accept such teaching, whose who did not learn 'the
 secrets of Satan,' as people call them — I am not laying on you
 any further burden; only hold fast to what you have received,
 until I come. To those who conquer and are careful to live my life
 to the end — to them I will give authority over the nations, and
 'they will rule them with an iron rod, as when earthen vessels are
 broken in pieces' (as I myself have received from my Father) and
 I will give them the morning star. Let those who have ears hear
 what the Spirit is saying to the churches."

3 To the angel of the church in Sardis write: —

"These are the words of him who has the seven spirits of God
 and the seven stars; — I know your life, and that people say of you
 2 that you are living, though you are dead. Be on the watch, and
 3 strengthen what still survives, though once it was all but dead; for
 4 I have not found your life perfect in the eyes of my God. Therefore
 5 remember what you have received and heard, and lay it to heart
 6 and repent. Unless you are on the watch, I will come like a thief,
 and you will not know at what hour I am coming to you. Yet there
 are some few among you at Sardis who did not soil their robes;
 they will walk with me, robed in white, for they are worthy. Those
 5 who conquer will be clothed in these white robes, and I will not
 'strike their name out of the book of life'; but I will own them
 6 before my Father, and before his angels. Let those who have ears
 hear what the Spirit is saying to the churches."

7 To the angel of the church in Philadelphia write: —

“These are the words of him who is holy and true, who holds
 ‘the Key of David, who opens and no one will shut, and shuts and
 no one opens’: — I know your life (see, I have set a door open be- 8
 fore you which no one is able to shut), I know that, though you
 have but little strength, you kept my teaching in mind, and did not
 disown my name. Listen, I give some of the Congregation of Sa- 9
 tan, the people who declare that they are God’s people⁵, though
 they are not, but are lying — I will make them ‘come and bow
 down at your feet,’ and they will learn that I loved you. Because 10
 you kept in mind the story of my endurance, I will keep you in the
 hour of trial that is about to come on the whole world, the hour
 that will test all who are living on earth. I will come quickly. Hold 11
 to what you have received so that no one may take your crown.
 Those who conquer — I will make them a pillar in the Temple 12
 of my God; and never more will they leave it; and I will write on
 them the name of my God and the name of the city of my God,
 the New Jerusalem, which is coming down out of heaven from
 my God, and I will write on them my new name. Let those who 13
 have ears hear what the Spirit is saying to the churches.”

To the angel of the church in Laodicea write: — 14

“These are the words of the Unchanging One, ‘the witness
 faithful and true, the beginning of the Creation of God’: — I 15
 know your life; I know that you are neither cold nor hot. If only
 you were either cold or hot! But now, because you are 16
 lukewarm, neither hot nor cold, I am about to spit you out of my
 mouth. You say ‘I am rich and have grown rich, and I want for 17
 nothing,’ and you do not know that you are wretched,
 miserable, poor, blind, naked! Therefore I counsel you to buy 18
 from me gold which has been refined by fire so that you may
 grow rich; and white robes, so that you may be clothed and your
 shameful nakedness be hidden; and ointment to anoint your
 eyes, so that you may see. ‘All whom I love I rebuke and 19
 discipline.’ Therefore be in earnest and repent. I am standing at 20
 the door and knocking! If anyone hears my voice and opens the

⁵ God’s people: Literally ‘Jews.’ These people claimed to be God’s people because they were Jews.

21 door, I will go in, and will feast with them, and they will feast
 22 with me. To those who conquer — to them I will give the right
 to sit beside me on my throne, as I, when I conquered, took my
 seat beside my Father on his throne. Let those who have ears
 hear what the Spirit is saying to the churches.”

The Vision of the Seven Seals

4 AFTER THIS, in my vision, I saw an open door in the heavens, and
 the first voice that I heard was like the blast of a trumpet speaking
 to me. It said — ‘Come up here and I will show you what must
 2 take place.’ Immediately after this I fell into a trance. There stood
 3 a throne in heaven, and on the throne was One seated. He who
 was seated on it was in appearance like a jasper and a sardius;
 and ‘around the throne there was a rainbow’ of the color of an
 4 emerald. And around the throne were twenty-four other thrones,
 and on these I saw twenty-four councillors sitting clothed in white
 5 robes; and on their heads they had crowns of gold. Out from
 the throne ‘come flashes of lightning, cries, and peals of thunder’!
 There are seven torches burning in front of the throne, which are
 6 the seven spirits of God; and in front of the throne is what seemed
 to be a sea of glass, ‘resembling crystal, while within the space
 before the throne and around the throne are four Creatures full
 7 of eyes’ in front and behind. The first Creature is like a lion, the
 second Creature like a calf, the third Creature has a face like a
 man’s, and the fourth Creature is like an eagle on the wing. These
 8 four Creatures have each of them six wings, and all around, and
 within, they are full of eyes; and day and night they never cease
 to say —

‘Holy, holy, holy is the Lord, our God, the Almighty, who
 was, and who is, and who will be.’

9 And, whenever these Creatures give praise and honor and thanks
 to him who is ‘seated on the throne, to him who lives for ever
 10 and ever,’ the twenty-four councillors prostrate themselves be-
 fore him who is seated on the throne, and worship him who lives
 for ever and ever, and throw down their crowns before the throne,
 saying —

‘Worthy are you, our Lord and God, to receive all praise, 11
and honor, and power, for you did create all things, and at
your bidding they came into being and were created.’

Then I saw at the right hand of him who was ‘seated on the 5
throne a book, with writing inside and out, and sealed’ with seven
seals; and I saw a mighty angel who was proclaiming in a loud 2
voice — ‘Who is worthy to open the book and break its seals?’ But
no one either in heaven or on earth or under the earth was able 3
to open the book or look within it. At this I wept long, because 4
no one could be found who was worthy to open the book or look
within it. But one of the councillors said to me — ‘Do not weep. 5
The Lion conquered — the Lion of the tribe of Judah, the Scion of
David — and can therefore open the book with its seven seals.’

Then, within the space between the throne and the four Crea- 6
tures, and in the midst of the councillors, I saw, standing, a Lamb,
which seemed to have been sacrificed. It had seven horns and
seven eyes. (These eyes are the seven spirits of God, and they
are sent into all the world.) The Lamb came forward; and he has 7
taken the book from the right hand of him who was seated on
the throne. And, when he had taken the book, the four Creatures 8
and the twenty-four councillors prostrated themselves before the
Lamb, each of them holding a harp and golden bowls full of in-
cense. (These are the prayers of Christ’s people.) And they are 9
singing a new song —

‘You are worthy to take the book and break its seals, for
you were sacrificed, and with your blood you did buy for
God people of every tribe, and language, and people, and
nation, and did make them a kingdom of priests in the 10
service of our God, and they are reigning on the earth.’

Then, in my vision, I heard the voices of many angels around the 11
throne, and of the Creatures, and of the councillors. In number
they were ‘ten thousand times ten thousand and thousands of
thousands,’ and they cried in a loud voice — 12

‘Worthy is the Lamb that was sacrificed to receive all
power, and wealth, and wisdom, and might, and honor,
and praise, and blessing.’

And I heard every created thing in the air, and on the earth, and 13
under the earth, and on the sea, and all that is in them crying —

'To him who is seated on the throne and to the Lamb be ascribed all blessing, and honor, and praise, and dominion for ever and ever.'

14 And the four Creatures said 'Amen,' and the councillors prostrated themselves and worshiped.

6 Then I saw the Lamb break one of the seven seals, and I heard one of the four Creatures crying with a voice like thunder — 'Come.' And in my vision I saw 'a white horse.' Its rider held a bow, and he was given a crown, and he went out conquering and to conquer.

3 When the Lamb broke the second seal, I heard the second Creature crying — 'Come.' Then there went out another horse, 'a red horse,' and to its rider was given the power to deprive the earth of peace, so that people should kill one another; and he was given a great sword.

5 When the Lamb broke the third seal, I heard the third Creature crying — 'Come.' And in my vision I saw 'a black horse.' Its rider held scales in his hand. And I heard what seemed to be a voice, coming from among the four Creatures, crying — 'A quart of wheat for a silver coin, and three quarts of barley for a silver coin! But do not harm the oil and the wine.'

7 When the Lamb broke the fourth seal, I heard the voice of the fourth Creature crying — 'Come.' And in my vision I saw a grey horse. His rider's name was Death, and the Lord of the place of Death rode behind him; and power was given them over the fourth part of the earth, so that they might 'destroy with sword and famine and death, and by means of the wild beasts of the earth.'

9 When the Lamb opened the fifth seal, I saw under the altar the souls of those who had been killed for the sake of God's message and for the testimony which they had borne. They cried in a loud voice — 'How long, Sovereign Lord, holy and true, before you will give judgment and avenge our blood on all who are living on the earth?' Then to each of them was given a white robe, and they were told to rest yet a little longer, until the number of their fellow servants and of their friends in Christ's service who were about to be put to death, as they had been, should be complete.

And I saw the Lamb break the sixth seal, and then there was a great earthquake. The sun became black, like sackcloth, and the moon, which was at its full, like blood. 'The stars of the heavens fell' to the earth, as when a fig-tree, shaken by a strong wind, drops its unripe fruit. The heavens disappeared like a scroll when it is rolled up, and every mountain and island was moved from its place. Then all the kings of the earth, and the princes, and the generals, and the rich, and the powerful, and every slave and free person, 'hid themselves in the caves and under the rocks' of the mountains; and they are crying to the mountains and the rocks — 'Fall on us, and hide us from the eyes of him who is seated on the throne, and from the wrath of the Lamb, for the great day of their wrath is come, and who can stand to meet it?'

After this, I saw four angels standing 'on the four corners of the earth,' restraining the four winds of the earth, so that no wind should blow over the earth, or over the sea, or against any tree. And, in the east, I saw another angel, ascending, holding the seal of the living God; and he cried in a loud voice to the four angels, to whom there had been given power to harm the earth and the sea — 'Do not harm the earth, or the sea, or the trees, until we have sealed the servants of our God on their foreheads.' I heard, too, the number of those who had been sealed. It was one hundred and forty-four thousand; and they were from every tribe of the Israelites.

From the tribe of Judah twelve thousand were sealed,
 from the tribe of Reuben twelve thousand,
 from the tribe of Gad twelve thousand,
 from the tribe of Asher twelve thousand,
 from the tribe of Napthali twelve thousand,
 from the tribe of Manasseh twelve thousand,
 from the tribe of Simeon twelve thousand,
 from the tribe of Levi twelve thousand,
 from the tribe of Issachar twelve thousand,
 from the tribe of Zebulon twelve thousand,
 from the tribe of Joseph twelve thousand,
 from the tribe of Benjamin twelve thousand were sealed.

After this, in my vision, I saw a vast throng which no one could number, of people from every nation and of all tribes, and peoples, and languages. They stood in front of the throne and in

front of the Lamb, robed in white, holding palm branches in
 10 their hands. And they are crying in a loud voice —

‘salvation be ascribed to our God who is seated on his
 throne and to the Lamb.’

11 And all the angels were standing around the throne and the coun-
 cillors and the four Creatures, and they prostrated themselves on
 12 their faces in front of the throne and worshiped God, saying —

‘Amen. Blessing and praise, and wisdom, and thanksgiv-
 ing, and honor, and power, and might be ascribed to our
 God for ever and ever. Amen.’

13 Then one of the councillors turned to me and said ‘Who are
 these who are robed in white? And where did they come from?’

14 ‘My Lord,’ I answered, ‘it is you who know.’

‘These,’ he said, ‘are they who come through the Great Perse-
 cution; they washed their robes white in the blood of the Lamb.

15 And therefore it is that they are before the throne of God, and are
 serving him day and night in his Temple; and he who is seated
 16 on the throne will shelter them. Never again will they be hungry,
 never again will they be thirsty, nor will the sun smite them, nor
 17 any scorching heat; for the Lamb that stands in the space before
 the throne will be their shepherd, and will lead them to life-giv-
 ing springs of water; and God will wipe away all tears from their
 eyes.’

8 As soon as the Lamb had broken the seventh seal, there was
 silence in heaven for, it might be, half an hour.

Vision of Seven Trumpet-Blasts

2 THEN I SAW THE SEVEN ANGELS WHO STAND before God, and seven
 trumpets were given to them.

3 Next, another angel came and stood at the altar with a golden
 censer in his hand; and a great quantity of incense was given to
 him, to mingle with the prayers of all Christ’s people on the
 4 golden altar before the throne. The smoke of the incense
 ascended, with the prayers of Christ’s people, from the hand of
 5 the angel before God. Then the angel took the censer, and filled
 it with fire from the altar, and threw it down on the earth; and

there followed 'peals of thunder, cries, flashes of lightning,' and an earthquake. Then the seven angels holding the seven trumpets prepared to blow their blasts. 6

The first blew; and there came hail and fire mixed with blood, and it fell on the earth. A third part of the earth was burnt up, and a third of the trees, and every blade of grass. 7
Then the second angel blew; and what appeared to be a great mountain, burning, was hurled into the sea. A third of the sea became blood, and a third part of all created things that are in the sea — that is, of all living things — died, and a third of the ships was destroyed. 8 9

Then the third angel blew; and there fell from the heavens a great star, burning like a torch. It fell on a third of the rivers and on the springs. (The star is called 'Wormwood.') A third of the water became bitter as wormwood, and so bitter was the water that many died from drinking it. 10 11

Then the fourth angel blew; and a third of the sun and a third of the moon and a third of the stars were blasted, so that a third of them was eclipsed, and for a third part of the day there was no light, and at night it was the same. 12

And, in my vision, I heard an eagle flying in mid-heaven and crying in a loud voice — 'Woe, woe, woe for all who live on the earth, at the other trumpet-blasts of the three angels who have yet to blow.' 13

Then the fifth angel blew; and I saw a star that had fallen on the earth from the heavens, and to him was given the key of the bottomless pit. He opened the bottomless pit, and from the pit rose a smoke like the smoke of a great furnace. The sun and the air grew dark because of the smoke from the pit. Out of the smoke locusts descended on the earth, and they received the same power as that possessed by scorpions. They were told not to harm the grass, or any plant, or any tree, but only those who have not 'the seal of God on their foreheads.' Yet they were not allowed to kill them, but it was ordered that those men should be tortured for five months. Their torture was like the torture caused by a scorpion when it stings a person. In those days people 'will seek Death and will not find it'; They will long to die, but Death flees from them. In appearance the locusts were like horses equipped for battle. On 7

their heads there were what appeared to be crowns that shone like
8 gold, their faces resembled human faces, and they had hair like
9 the hair of a woman, their teeth were like lions' teeth, and they
had what seemed to be iron breastplates, while the noise of their
10 wings was like the noise of chariots drawn by many horses, gal-
loping into battle. They have tails like scorpions, and stings, and
in their tails lies their power to harm people for five months. They
11 have as their king the angel of the bottomless pit, whose name,
in Hebrew, is 'Abaddon,' while, in Greek, his name is 'Apollyon'
(the Destroyer).
12 The first Woe has passed; and still there are two Woes to follow!

13 Then the sixth angel blew; and I heard a voice proceeding
14 from the corners of the golden altar that stood before God. It
spoke to the sixth angel — the angel with the trumpet — and
said 'Let loose the four angels that are in chains at the great river
15 Euphrates.' Then the four angels, that were held in readiness for
that hour and day and month and year, were let loose, to destroy
16 a third of mankind. The number of the hosts of cavalry was ten
thousand times ten thousand, twice told; I heard their number.
17 And this is what the horses and their riders appeared to be like
in my vision: — They had breastplates of fire, blood-red and
sulphurous, and the heads of the horses were like lions' heads,
while out of their mouths issue fire, and smoke, and sulphur.
18 Through these three curses a third of humanity perished —
because of the fire, and the smoke, and the sulphur that issued
19 from their mouths; for the power of the horses lies in their
mouths and in their tails. For their tails are like snakes, with
20 heads, and it is with them that they do harm. But those who
were left of humanity, who had not perished through these
curses, did not repent and turn away from what their own hands
had made; they would not abandon the worship of 'demons,
and of idols made of gold or silver or brass or stone or wood,
21 which can neither see, nor hear, nor walk'; and they did not
repent of their murders, or their sorceries, or their
licentiousness, or their thefts.
10 Then I saw another mighty angel, descending from heaven. His
robe was a cloud; over his head was the rainbow; his face was
2 like the sun, and his feet like pillars of fire; in his hand he held

a little book open. He set his right foot on the sea, and his left on the land; and he cried in a loud voice like the roaring of a lion. 3
 At his cry the seven peals of thunder spoke, each with its own voice. And, when they spoke, I was about to write; but I heard 4
 a voice from heaven say — ‘Keep secret what the seven peals of thunder said, and do not write it down.’ Then the angel, whom 5
 I had seen standing on the sea and on the land, ‘raised his right hand to the heavens, and swore by him who lives for ever and 6
 ever, who created the heavens and all that is in them, and the earth and all that is in it, and the sea and all that is in it,’ that time should cease to be. Moreover at the time when the seventh angel 7
 will speak, when he is ready to blow his blast, then the hidden purposes of God, of which he told the good news to his servants, the prophets, are at once fulfilled. Then came the voice which I 8
 had heard from heaven. It spoke to me again, and said — ‘Go and take the book that is open in the hand of the angel who stands on the sea and on the land.’ So I went to the angel and asked him 9
 to give me the little book. And he said ‘Take it, and eat it. It will be bitter to your stomach, but in your mouth it will be as sweet as honey.’ I took the little book out of the angel’s hand ‘and ate 10
 it, and, while in my mouth, it was like the sweetest honey’; but, when I had eaten it, it was bitter to my stomach. And I was told 11
 — ‘You must prophesy again about men of many peoples, and nations, and languages, and about many kings.’

Then I was given a measure like a rod, and a voice said to me 11
 — ‘Go and measure the Temple of God and the altar, and count the worshiper there. But omit the court outside the Temple, and 2
 do not measure that, for it has been given up to the nations; and the holy City will be under their heel for forty-two months. Then 3
 I will give permission to my Two Witnesses, and for those twelve hundred and sixty days they will continue teaching, clothed in 4
 sackcloth.’ These men are represented by ‘the two olive trees and the two lamps that stand before the Lord of the earth.’ When 5
 anyone wishes to harm them, ‘fire comes from their mouths and consumes their enemies’; and whoever wishes to harm them will, 6
 in this way, inevitably perish. These men have the power to close the heavens, so that ‘no rain may fall’ during the time that they are 7
 teaching; and they have power ‘to turn the streams into blood, and to smite the land with any curse,’ whenever they will. As soon as 7
 they have completed their testimony, ‘the wild Beast that ascends

8 from the bottomless pit will make war on them and conquer' and
9 kill them. Their dead bodies will lie in the streets of the great
10 city, which is mystically spoken of as 'Sodom' and 'Egypt,' where
11 their Master was crucified. People of all nations, and tribes, and
12 languages, and races look at their dead bodies for three days and
13 a half, and do not allow them to be laid in a grave. Those who
14 live on the earth rejoice over them and are merry, and they will
15 send presents to one another, because these two prophets brought
16 torments on those who live on the earth. After three days and a
17 half 'the life-giving breath of God entered these men, and they
18 stood up on their feet,' and a great terror took possession of those
19 who were watching them. The two men heard a loud voice from
20 heaven which said to them — 'Come up here,' and they went up
21 to heaven in the cloud, while their enemies watched them. At
22 that very time a great earthquake occurred. A tenth part of the
23 city fell, and seven thousand people perished in the earthquake.
24 Those who escaped were much terrified, and praised the God of
25 heaven.

14 The second Woe has passed; and there is a third Woe soon to
follow!

15 Then the seventh angel blew; and loud voices were heard in
heaven saying —

'The kingdom of the world has become the kingdom of our
Lord and of his Christ, and he will reign for ever and ever.'

16 At this the twenty-four councillors, who were seated on their
17 thrones before God, prostrated themselves on their faces and wor-
18 shipped Him, saying —

'We thank you, Lord, our God, the Almighty, who is and
18 who was, that you have assumed your great power and
19 reigned. The nations were enraged, and your wrath fell
20 on them; the time came for the dead to be judged, and for
21 you to give the reward to your servants the prophets, and
22 to the people of Christ, and to those who honor your name
23 — the high and the low alike — and to destroy those who
24 are destroying the earth.'

19 Then the Temple of God in heaven was opened, and the ark con-
taining his covenant was seen in his Temple; and there followed

‘flashes of lightning, cries, peals of thunder,’ an earthquake, and ‘a great storm of hail.’

Vision of Seven Figures

THEN A GREAT PORTENT WAS SEEN IN THE HEAVENS — A WOMAN WHOSE 12
 robe was the sun, and who had the moon under her feet, and on
 her head a crown of twelve stars. She was pregnant; and ‘she is 2
 crying out in the pain and agony of childbirth.’ Another portent 3
 also was seen in the heavens There was a great red Dragon, with
 seven heads and ten horns, and on his heads were seven diadems.
 His tail draws after it a third of the stars in the heavens, and it 4
 hurled them down on the earth. The Dragon is standing in front
 of the woman who is about to give birth to the child, so that he
 may devour it as soon as it is born. The woman gave birth to a son, 5
 a male child, who is destined to rule all the nations with an iron
 rod; and her child was at once caught up to God on his throne.
 But the woman fled into the wilderness, where there is a place 6
 prepared for her by God, to be tended there for twelve hundred
 and sixty days.

Then a battle took place in the heavens. Michael and his angels 7
 fought with the Dragon. But though the Dragon, with his
 angels, fought, he did not prevail; and there was no place left 8
 for them any longer in the heavens. Then the great Dragon, the 9
 primeval snake, known as the ‘devil’ and ‘Satan,’ who deceives
 all the world, was hurled down to the earth, and his angels were
 hurled down with him. And I heard a loud voice in heaven 10
 which said —

‘Now has begun the day of the salvation, and Power, and 11
 Dominion of our God, and the Rule of his Christ; for the
 Accuser of our people has been hurled down, he who has
 been accusing them before our God day and night. Their 11
 victory was due to the blood of the Lamb, and to the mes-
 sage to which they bore their testimony. In their love of life
 they shrank not from death. Therefore, be glad, heaven, 12
 and all who live in heaven! Alas for the earth and for the
 sea, for the devil has gone down to you in great fury, know-
 ing that he has but little time.’

- 13 when the Dragon saw that he was hurled down to the earth, he pursued the woman who had given birth to the male child. But
14 to the woman were given the two wings of the great eagle, so that she might fly to her place in the wilderness, where she is being tended for 'one year, and for two years, and for half a year'
15 in safety from the snake. Then the snake poured water from its mouth after the woman, like a river, so that it might sweep her
16 away. But Earth came to her help, and opened her mouth and drank up the river which the Dragon had poured out of its mouth.
17 The Dragon was enraged at the woman, and went to fight with the rest of her offspring — those who lay to heart the commands of God and bear their testimony to Jesus; and he took his stand on the sea-shore.
- 13 Then I saw, 'rising out of the sea, a wild Beast with ten horns' and seven heads. On its horns were ten diadems, and on its
2 heads were blasphemous names. The Beast that I saw was like a leopard; but its feet were like a bear's, and its mouth like the mouth of a lion. The Dragon gave it his power and his throne,
3 and wide dominion. One of its heads seemed to me to have been mortally wounded, but its deadly wound had been healed.
4 The whole earth followed the Beast, wondering; and men worshiped the Dragon, because he had given his dominion to the Beast; while, as they worshiped the Beast, they said — 'Who
5 can compare with the Beast? And who can fight with it?' The Beast was given 'a mouth that spoke proudly' and blasphemously, and it was empowered to work its will for
6 forty-two months. It opened its mouth only to blaspheme God, to blaspheme his name and his tent — those who live in his tent
7 in heaven. It had been permitted to fight with Christ's people and to conquer them, and it had received power over men of
8 every tribe, and people, and language, and nation. All who are living on earth will worship it — all whose names have not been written in the Lamb's book of life, the Lamb that has been
9 sacrificed from the foundation of the world. Let those who have ears hear. 'Whoever is destined for captivity goes into captivity.' Whoever will kill with the sword must inevitably be killed with the sword. (Here there is need for endurance and faith on the part of Christ's people.)
10
- 11 Then I saw, rising out of the earth, another wild Beast. It had two horns like those of a lamb, and its voice was like a dragon's.

It exercises all the authority of the first Beast under its eyes; and it makes the earth and all who are living on it worship that first Beast, whose mortal wound was healed. It performs great marvels, even causing fire to fall from the heavens to the earth, before people's eyes; and in consequence of the marvels which it was allowed to perform under the eyes of the Beast, it is able to deceive all who are living on the earth. It tells those who live on the earth to make a statue in honor of the Beast, who, despite the wound from the sword, yet lived. It was permitted to breathe life into the image of the Beast, so that the image of the Beast might speak; and it was also permitted to cause all who refused to worship the image of the Beast to be put to death. High and low, rich and poor, free and enslaved — it causes a brand to be put on the right hand or on the forehead of every one of them, so that no one is able to buy or sell, except those that bear this brand — either the name of the Beast or the number indicated by the letters of his name. (Here there is need for discernment.) Let him who has the ability compute the number of the Beast; for the number indicates a person's name. Its number is six hundred and sixty-six.

Then, in my vision, I saw the Lamb standing on Mount Zion. With him were a hundred and forty-four thousand, with his name and the name of his Father written on their foreheads. And I heard a sound from heaven, 'like the sound of many waters,' and like the sound of a loud peal of thunder; the sound that I heard was like the music of harpers playing on their harps. They are singing what seems to be a new song, before the throne, and before the four Creatures and the councillors; and no one was able to learn that song except the hundred and forty-four thousand who had been redeemed from earth. These are the men who never defiled themselves in their intercourse with women; they are as pure as virgins. These are the men who follow the Lamb wherever he goes. They were redeemed as the first-fruits of mankind for God and for the Lamb. 'No lie was ever heard on their lips.' They are beyond reach of blame.

Then I saw another angel, flying in mid-heaven. He had the good news, decreed from eternity, to announce to those who live on the

7 earth — to men of every nation, and tribe, and language, and people; and he cried in a loud voice — ‘Reverence God, and give him praise (for the hour of his judgment has come) and worship him who made the heaven and the earth and the sea and all springs of water.’

8 Then a second angel followed, crying — ‘She has fallen! She has fallen — Babylon the Great, who has made all the nations drink the maddening wine of her licentiousness!’

9 Then a third angel followed them, crying in a loud voice — ‘Whoever worships the Beast and its image, and receives its brand on his forehead or on his hand, that person will drink the maddening wine of God that has been poured unmixed into the cup of his wrath, and they will be tortured with fire and sulphur before the eyes of the holy angels and before the eyes of the Lamb. 10 The smoke from their torture rises for ever and ever, and they have no rest day nor night — those who worship the Beast and 11 its image, and all who are branded with its name.’ (Here there is need for endurance on the part of Christ’s people — those who 12 lay to heart the commands of God and the faith of Jesus.) Then I 13 heard a voice from heaven saying ‘Write — “Blessed are the dead who from this hour die in union with the Lord.”

“Yes,” answers the Spirit, “that they may rest from their toil. Their good deeds go with them.””

14 Then, in my vision, I saw a white cloud, and on the cloud there was sitting one ‘like a man.’ On his head he had a crown of gold, and in his hand a sharp sickle.

15 Then another angel came out from the Temple, crying in a loud voice to him who was sitting on the cloud — ‘Take your sickle and reap, for the time to reap has come; the Harvest of Earth is ready.’ 16 He who was sitting on the cloud brought his sickle down on the earth, and the Harvest of Earth was reaped.

17 Then another angel came out of the Temple in heaven; he, also, had a sharp sickle.

18 Then another angel came out of the altar; he had power over fire, and he called in a loud voice to the angel that had the sharp sickle — ‘Take your sharp sickle, and gather the bunches from the 19 Vine of Earth, for its grapes are ripe.’ The angel brought his sickle down on the earth and gathered the fruit of the Vine of Earth, and

threw it into the great winepress of the wrath of God. The 'grapes 20
 were trodden in the press' outside the city; and blood came out of
 the press, rising as high as the bridles of the horses for a distance
 of two hundred miles.

Vision of Seven Curses

THEN I SAW ANOTHER PORTENT IN THE HEAVENS — A GREAT and mar- 15
 velous portent — seven angels with the seven last curses; because
 with them the wrath of God is ended.

Then I saw what appeared to be a sea of glass mixed with fire; 2
 and, standing by this sea of glass, holding the harps of God, I saw
 those who had come victorious out of the conflict with the Beast
 and its image and the number that formed its name. They are 3
 singing the song of Moses, the servant of God, and the song of
 the Lamb —

'Great and marvelous are your deeds, Lord, our God, the
 Almighty. Righteous and true are your ways, eternal King.
 Who will not honor and praise your name, Lord? You 4
 alone are holy! All nations will come and worship before
 you, for your judgments have become manifest.'

After this I saw that the inmost shrine of the tent of testimony in 5
 heaven was opened, and out of it came the seven angels with the
 seven curses. They were adorned with precious stones, pure and 6
 bright, and had golden girdles around their breasts. One of the
 four Creatures gave the seven angels seven golden bowls, filled 7
 with the wrath of God who lives for ever and ever. 'The Temple 8
 was filled with smoke from the glory' and Majesty of God; and
 no one could enter the Temple, until the seven curses inflicted
 by the seven angels were at an end. Then I heard a loud voice, 16
 which came from the Temple, saying to the seven angels — 'Go
 and empty the seven bowls of the wrath of God on the earth.'

The first angel went and emptied his bowl on the earth; and it 2
 turned to loathsome and painful sores on all who bore the brand
 of the Beast and who worshiped its image.

Then the second angel emptied his bowl on the sea; and it 3
 turned to blood like the blood of a corpse, and every living thing
 died — everything in the sea.

4 Then the third angel emptied his bowl on the rivers and springs
5 of water; and it turned to blood. And I heard the angel of the
Waters saying — ‘Righteous are you, you who is and who is, the
6 Holy One, in inflicting this judgment; for men shed the blood
of Christ’s people and of the prophets, and you have given them
7 blood to drink. It is what they deserve.’ And I heard the response
from the altar — ‘Yes, Lord, our God, the Almighty, true and
righteous are they judgments.’

8 Then the fourth angel emptied his bowl on the sun; and he was
9 permitted to scorch men with fire; and men were scorched by the
intense heat. They blasphemed the name of God who controlled
these curses, yet they did not repent and give him praise.

10 Then the fifth angel emptied his bowl on the throne of the
Beast; and darkness fell on its kingdom. Men gnawed their
11 tongues for pain, and blasphemed the God of heaven, because
of their pains and because of their sores; yet they did not repent
of what they had done.

12 Then the sixth angel emptied his bowl on the great river Eu-
phrates; and the water in the river was dried up, so that the road
13 for the kings of the East might be made ready. And I saw three
foul spirits, like frogs, come from the mouth of the Dragon and
from the mouth of the Beast and from the mouth of the false
14 prophet. They are the spirits of demons, and perform marvels;
they go to kings all over the world, to collect them for the battle
15 on the great day of Almighty God. (‘I am coming like a thief!
Happy will he be who is on the watch, and keeps his clothing at
hand, so that he will not have to walk about unclothed and let
16 men see his nakedness.’) And the spirits collected the kings at
the place called in Hebrew ‘Har-Magedon.’

17 Then the seventh angel emptied his bowl on the air. (A loud
voice came from the throne in the Temple; it said ‘All is over.’)
18 There followed ‘flashes of lightning, cries, and peals of thunder’;
and there was a great earthquake, such as had not occurred since
19 man began to be on the earth — none so great; and the great city
was torn in three, and the cities of the nation fell, and God remem-
bered Babylon the Great, and gave her the maddening wine-cup
20 of his wrath; and every island vanished, and the mountains dis-
21 appeared. Great hailstones, a pound in weight, are falling on men
from the heavens. And men blasphemed God because of the curse
of the hail, for it was a very terrible curse.

Doom of the Enemies of Christ

THEN ONE OF THE SEVEN ANGELS WHO HELD THE SEVEN BOWLS came 17
 and spoke to me. 'Come here,' he said, 'and I will show you the
 sentence passed on that Great Harlot who is seated at the meet-
 ing of many waters, and with whom all the kings of the earth 2
 have had licentious intercourse; while all who live on the earth
 have been made drunk by the wine of her licentiousness.' And 3
 he bore me away in a trance to a lonely place, and I saw a woman
 seated on a scarlet Beast, which was covered with blasphemous
 names; it had seven heads and ten horns. The woman was clothed 4
 in purple and scarlet, and glittering with gold ornaments, pre-
 cious stones, and pearls. In her hand she held a gold cup, full of
 idolatrous abominations, and the unclean fruits of her licentious-
 ness; while on her forehead there was written this mystic name 5
 — 'BABYLON THE GREAT, THE MOTHER OF HARLOTS AND
 OF ALL IDOLATROUS ABOMINATIONS ON EARTH.' And I 6
 saw the woman drunk with the blood of Christ's people and with
 the blood of the martyrs for Jesus. When I saw her, I was amazed
 beyond measure; but the angel said to me — 'Why were you 7
 amazed? I will tell you the mystic meaning of the vision of this
 woman, and of the Beast, with the seven heads and ten horns,
 that carries her. The Beast that you saw was, but is not, and is 8
 about to rise out of the bottomless pit, and is on its way to de-
 struction. Those who are living on earth will be amazed — those
 whose names have not been written in the book of life from the
 foundation of the world — when they see that the Beast was,
 but is not, and yet will come.' (Here there is need for the dis- 9
 cerning mind.) The seven heads are seven mountains on which
 the woman is seated. They are also seven kings; of whom five 10
 have fallen and one remains, while one is not yet come. When he
 comes, he must stay for a little while. So must the Beast that was, 11
 but is not. He counts as an eighth king, although he is one of the
 seven, and is on his way to destruction. The ten horns that you 12
 saw are ten kings, who have not yet received their kingdoms, but
 for an hour they receive the authority of kings, together with the 13
 Beast. These kings are of one mind in surrendering their power
 and authority to the Beast. They will fight with the Lamb, but 14

the Lamb will conquer them, for he is Lord of lords and King of kings; so, too, will those with him who have received the call and are chosen and faithful. And the angel said to me — ‘The waters that you saw, where the Harlot is seated, are throngs of people and men of all nations and languages. The ten horns that you saw, and the Beast — they will hate the Harlot, and cause her to become deserted and strip her bare; they will eat her flesh and utterly consume her with fire. For God has put it into their minds to carry out his purpose, in carrying out their common purpose and surrendering their kingdoms to the Beast, until God’s decrees will be executed. As for the woman whom you saw, she is the great city that holds sway over all the kings of the earth.’

18 After this I saw another angel, descending from heaven, invested with great authority; and the earth was illuminated by his splendor. With a mighty voice he cried — ‘She has fallen! She has fallen — Babylon the Great! She has become an abode of demons, a stronghold of every wicked spirit, a stronghold of every foul and hateful bird. For, after drinking the maddening wine of her licentiousness, all the nations have fallen; while all the kings of the earth have had licentious intercourse with her, and the merchants of the earth have grown rich through the excess of her luxury.’ Then I heard another voice from heaven saying — ‘Come out of her, my people, so that you may not participate in her sins, and that you may not suffer from the curses inflicted on her. For her sins are heaped up to the heavens, and God has not forgotten her misdeeds. Pay her back the treatment with which she has treated you; yes, repay twice over what her actions deserve; in the cup which she mixed for you, mix for her as much again; for her self-glorification and her luxury, give her now an equal measure of torture and misery. In her heart she says ‘I sit here a queen; no widow am I; I will never know misery.’ Therefore in one day will these curses strike her — death, misery, and famine, and she will be utterly consumed by fire; for mighty is the Lord God who condemned her. All the kings of the earth who had licentious intercourse with her and shared her luxury will weep and lament over her, when they see the smoke from the burning city, while they stand at a distance, horrified at her torture, and cry — ‘Alas! Alas! Great city! Mighty city of Babylon! In a single hour your judgment fell. And the merchants of the earth weep and wail over her, because no longer does anyone buy their

cargoes — their cargoes of gold, or silver, or precious stones, or pearls, or fine linen, or purple robes, or silk, or scarlet cloth; nor their many scented woods; nor their many articles of ivory; nor their many articles of choicest wood, or brass, or iron, or marble; nor their cinnamon, or spice, or incense, or perfumes, or frankincense, or wine, or oil, or fine flour, or wheat, or cattle, or sheep; nor their horses, or chariots, or slaves; nor the bodies and souls of people. The fruit that your soul craved is no longer within your reach, and all dainties and luxuries are lost to you, never to be found again.' The merchants who sold these things, and grew rich by her, will stand at a distance weeping and wailing, horrified at her torture, and crying — 'Alas! Alas! Great city! City clothed in fine linen, and purple, and scarlet cloth! City adorned with gold ornaments, and precious stones, and pearls! In a single hour your vast wealth vanished.' Every ship's captain and all who sail to any port, and sailors, and all who get their living from the sea, stood at a distance, and seeing the smoke from the burning city, cried — 'What city can compare with the Great city?' They threw dust on their heads, and, as they wept and wailed, they cried — 'Alas! Alas! Great city! All who have ships on the sea grew rich through her magnificence. In a single hour it has vanished.' Rejoice over her, heaven, and people of Christ, and apostles, and prophets, for God has avenged you on her! Then a mighty angel took up a stone like a great millstone, and threw it into the sea, crying — 'So will Babylon, the great city, be violently overthrown, never more to be seen. No more will the music of harpers, or minstrels, or flute players, or trumpeters be heard in you, no more will any worker, skilled in any art, be found in you; no more will the sound of a mill be heard in you; no more will the light of a lamp shine in you; no more will the voices of groom and bride be heard in you. Your merchants were the great men of the earth, for all the nations were deceived by your magical charms. Yes, and in her was to be found the blood of the prophets and of Christ's people, and of all who have been put to death on the earth.'

After this, I heard what seemed to be a great shout from a vast throng in heaven, crying —

'Hallelujah! To our God belong salvation, and glory, and Power, for true and righteous are his judgments. For he

has passed judgment on the Great Harlot who was corrupting the earth by her licentiousness, and he has taken vengeance on her for the blood of his servants.'

3 Again they cried — 'Hallelujah!' And the smoke from her ruins
4 rises for ever and ever. Then the twenty-four councillors and the
5 Four Creatures prostrated themselves and worshiped God who
6 was seated on the throne, crying — 'Amen, Hallelujah!'; and from
7 the throne there came a voice which said —

'Praise our God all you who serve him, You who worship
him, both high and low.'

8 Then I heard 'what seemed to be the shout of a vast throng, like
9 the sound of many waters,' and like the sound of loud peals of
10 thunder, crying —

'Hallelujah! For the Lord is king, our God, the Almighty.
11 Let us rejoice and exalt; and we will pay him honor, for the
12 hour for the Marriage of the Lamb has come, and his Bride
13 has made herself ready. And to her it has been granted to
14 robe herself in fine linen, white and pure, for that linen is
15 the good deeds of the people of Christ.'

16 Then a voice said to me 'Write — "Blessed are those who have
17 been summoned to the marriage feast of the Lamb."' And the
18 voice said — 'These words of God are true.' I prostrated my-
19 self at the feet of him who spoke to worship him, but he said
20 to me — 'No! I am your fellow servant, and the fellow servant
21 of your brothers and sisters who bear their testimony to Jesus.
22 Worship God. For to bear testimony to Jesus needs the inspira-
23 tion of the prophets.' Then I saw that heaven lay open. There ap-
24 pears a white horse; its rider is called 'Faithful' and 'True'; right-
25 eously does he judge and make war. His eyes are flaming fires; on
his head there are many diadems, and he bears a name, written,
which no one knows but himself; he has been clothed in a gar-
ment sprinkled with blood; and the name by which he is called is
'The Word of God.' The armies of heaven followed him, mounted
on white horses and clothed in fine linen, white and pure. From
his mouth comes a sharp sword, with which 'to smite the nations;
and he will rule them with an iron rod.' He 'treads the grapes in
the press' of the maddening wine of the wrath of Almighty God;

and on his robe and on his thigh he has this name written — 16
'KING OF KINGS AND LORD OF LORDS.'

Then I saw an angel standing on the sun. He cried in a loud 17
voice to all the birds that fly in mid-heaven — 'Gather and come
to the great feast of God, to eat the flesh of kings, and the flesh of 18
commanders, and the flesh of mighty men, and the flesh of horses
and their riders, and the flesh of all free and enslaved, and of high
and low.' Then I saw the Beast and the kings of the earth and their 19
armies, gathered together to fight with him who sat on the horse
and with his army. The Beast was captured, and with him was 20
taken the false prophet, who performed the marvels before the
eyes of the Beast, with which he deceived those who had received
the brand of the Beast and those who worshiped his image. Alive,
they were thrown, both of them, into the lake of fire - of burning
sulphur. The rest were killed by the sword which came out of the 21
mouth of him who rode on the horse; and all the birds fed on their
flesh.

Then I saw an angel coming down from heaven, with the key of 20
the bottomless pit and a great chain in his hand. He seized the
Dragon, the primeval snake (who is the 'devil' or 'Satan'), and 2
bound him in chains for a thousand years. He flung him into the
bottomless pit and locked it, and set his seal on it; that he should 3
not deceive the nations any more, until the thousand years were
ended. After that he must be let loose for a while.
Then I saw thrones, and to those who took their seats on them 4
authority was given to act as judges. And I saw the souls of those
who had been beheaded because of the testimony to Jesus and
because of the message of God, for they had refused to worship
the Beast or its image, and had not received the brand on their
foreheads and on their hands. They were restored to life, and they
reigned with the Christ for a thousand years. (The rest of the dead 5
were not restored to life until the thousand years were ended.)
This is the first resurrection. Blessed and holy will he be who 6
shares in that first resurrection. The second Death has no power
over them; but they will be priests of God, and the Christ, and
they will reign with him for the thousand years.

7 When the thousand years are ended, Satan will be let loose
8 from his prison, and he will come out to deceive the nations that
live in 'the four corners of the earth — Gog and Magog.' He will
come to gather them together for battle; and their number will
9 be as great as the sand on the sea-shore. They went up over the
breadth of the whole earth, and surrounded the camp of Christ's
people and the city that he loves. Then fire fell from the heavens
10 and consumed them; and the devil, their deceiver, was hurled
into the lake of fire and sulphur, where the Beast and the false
prophet already were, and they will be tortured day and night
for ever and ever.

11 Then I saw a great white throne, and him who was seated on
it. 'The earth and the heavens fled from his presence; no place
12 was left for them.' And I saw the dead, high and low, standing
before the throne; and books were opened. Then another book
was opened, the book of life; and the dead were judged, according
13 to their actions, by what was written in the books. The sea gave
up its dead, and Death and the Lord of the place of Death gave up
their dead; and they were judged, one by one, each according to
14 his actions. Then Death and the Lord of the place of Death were
hurled into the lake of fire. This is the Second Death — the lake
15 of fire; and all whose names 'were not found written in the book
of life' were hurled into the lake of fire.

The New Creation

21 THEN I SAW NEW HEAVENS and a new earth. The former heavens
and the former earth had passed away; and the sea has ceased
2 to be. And I saw the Holy City, Jerusalem, descending new out
of heaven from God, like a bride adorned in readiness for her
3 husband. And I heard a loud voice from the throne, which said
— 'See! The tent of God is set up among people. God will live
among them, and they will be his Peoples, and God himself will
4 be among them, and he will wipe away all tears from their eyes.
There will be no more death, nor will there be any more grief or
5 crying or pain. The old order has passed away.' And he who was
seated on the throne said — 'See, I make all things new!' And he
said — 'Write this, for these words may be trusted and are true.'

And he said to me — ‘They are fulfilled. I am the Alpha and the 6
Omega, the beginning and the End. To those who thirst I will give 7
of the spring of the water of life, freely. Those who conquer will 7
enter into possession of these things, and I will be their God, and 8
they will be my children. But as for cowards, unbelievers, the de- 8
graded, murderers, the impure, sorcerers, idolaters, and all liars
— their place will be in the burning lake of fire and sulphur. That
is the Second Death.’

Then one of the seven angels who had the seven bowls, and were 9
laden with the seven last curses, came and spoke to me. ‘Come 9
here,’ he said, ‘and I will show you the Bride, the Wife of the 10
Lamb.’ He carried me away in a trance to a great high moun- 10
tain, and showed me Jerusalem, the Holy City, descending out of
heaven from God, filled with the glory of God. Its brilliance was 11
like a precious stone, like a jasper, transparent as crystal. It had 12
a great high wall, in which were twelve gates; and at these gates
there were twelve angels, and there were names inscribed on the 13
gates, the names of the twelve tribes of the Israelites. ‘There were 13
three gates on the east, three gates on the north, three gates on the 14
south, and three gates on the west.’ The wall of the city had twelve 14
foundation stones, on which were the twelve names of the twelve 15
apostles of the Lamb. And the angel who was speaking to me had 15
as a measure a gold rod, with which to measure the city and its 16
gates and its wall. The city is square; the length and the breadth 16
are the same. The angel measured with his rod; it was twelve hun- 17
dred miles; its length, and breadth, and height are equal. Then 17
he measured the wall; it was two hundred and eighty-eight feet,
as people measure, that is as the angel measured. The material 18
of the wall of the city was jasper, and the city was built of pure 18
gold, which shone like clear glass. The foundations of the wall 19
of the city were ornamented with every kind of precious stone. 19
The first foundation stone was a jasper; the second a sapphire;
the third a chalcedony; the fourth an emerald; the fifth a sar- 20
donyx; the sixth a carnelian; the seventh a chrysolite; the eighth 20
a beryl; the ninth a topaz; the tenth a chrysoprase; the eleventh 21
a hyacinth; and the twelfth an amethyst. The twelve gates were 21
made of twelve pearls, each gate of one pearl. The street of the
city was of pure gold, transparent as glass. And I saw no Temple 22

23 there, for the Lord, our God, the Almighty, and the Lamb are its
 Temple. The city has no need of 'the sun or the moon to shine
 on it, for the glory of God illuminated it,' and its Lamp was the
 24 Lamb. 'The nations walk by the light of it; and the kings of the
 25 earth bring their glory into it. Its gates will never be shut by day,'
 26 and there will be no night there. And people will bring the glory
 27 and honor of the nations into it. 'Never will any unhallowed thing
 enter it,' nor they whose life is shameful and false, but only 'those
 whose names have been written in the Lamb's book of life.' And
 22 the angel showed me 'a river of the water of life,' as clear as
 2 crystal, issuing from the throne of God and of the Lamb, in the
 middle of the street of the city. On each side of the river was a
 Tree of life which bore twelve kinds of fruit, yielding its fruit each
 month; and the leaves of the tree were for the healing of the na-
 3 tions. 'Every thing that is accursed will cease to be.' The throne
 of God and of the Lamb will be within it, and his servants will
 4 worship him; they will see his face, and his name will be on their
 5 foreheads. Night will cease to be. They have no need of the light
 of a lamp, nor have they the light of the sun; for the 'Lord God
 will be their light, and they will reign for ever and ever.'

Conclusion

6 THEN THE ANGEL SAID TO ME — 'THESE WORDS MAY BE TRUSTED and are
 true. The Lord, the God that inspires the prophets, sent his angel
 7 to show his servants what must quickly take place; and they said
 "I will come quickly." Blessed will he be who lays to heart the
 words of the prophecy contained in this book.'
 8 It was I, John, who heard and saw these things; and, when I heard
 and saw them, I prostrated myself in worship at the feet of the
 9 angel that showed them to me. But he said to me — 'Forbear;
 I am your fellow servant, and the fellow servant of your fellow
 prophets, and of all who lay to heart the words in this book. Wor-
 ship God.'
 10 Then the angel said to me — 'Do not keep secret the words
 of the prophecy contained in this book; for the time is near. Let
 11 the wrong-doer continue to do wrong; the filthy-minded con-
 tinue to be filthy; the righteous continue to act righteously; and
 12 the holy-minded continue to be holy.' ('I will come quickly. I bring

my rewards with me, to give to each what their actions deserve. I
am the Alpha and the Omega, the First and the Last, the begin- 13
ning and the End.) Blessed will they be who wash their robes, 14
that they may have the right to approach the Tree of life, and may
enter the city by the gates. Outside will be the filthy, the sorcer- 15
ers, the impure, the murderers, the idolaters, and all who love the
false and live it.'

'I, Jesus, sent my angel to bear testimony to you about these 16
things before the churches. I am the Scion and the Offspring of
David, the bright star of the Morning.'

'Come,' say the Spirit and the Bride; and let him who hears say 17
'Come.' Let him who thirsts come; let him who will take the water
of life freely.

I declare to all who hear the words of the prophecy contained in 18
this book — 'If anyone adds to it, God will add to his troubles the
curses described in this book; and if anyone takes away any of 19
the words in the book containing this prophecy, God will take away
his share in the Tree of life, and in the Holy City — as described
in this book.'

He whose testimony this is says — 'Assuredly I will come 20
quickly.' 'Amen, come, Lord Jesus.'

May the blessing of the Lord Jesus Christ, be with his people. 21

